№ 4430.162

PUBLIC LIBRARY
OMNIVM
LVX
CIVIVM
OF THE CITY OF
BOSTON
1852 · 1878

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2016

https://archive.org/details/genealogyofnewen00scot

T

H430.162

B

Genealogy of the New England family of Dike.,

with

the allied branches including the families of Valentine, Davison, Jenks, Gooch, Hobby, Lynde, Newgate, Oliver, Wendell, Phillips, Bowdoin, Erving, Winthrop, Jackson, Pickman and others.

By

Thomas Scott.

PUBLIC LIBRARY
OF THE
CITY OF BOSTON

3593

New York.

1920.

2

GILMORE-BOSTON
OF THE
MUSIC LIBRARY

My dear Mr Reynolds,

Since writing the Dirk Genealogy I have found errors of several kinds which I have rectified as well as possible - You were aware so I have left them in Sister Frances Care where they became submerged as it were among her many cards - Yesterday what are the various records which I have inspired, and found the enclosed (bits) of record recording 6 pages enclosed. which I beg of you to place in your and your Sisters genealogy recording to the pages, taking out the false duplicated by these replacements from with the enclosed pages, and destroying these you take out, for these are not Correct and are worse than useless and should be destroyed on that

account. The Parsons genealogy enabled me to discover three errors in regard to Parsons. The Valentine genealogy enabled me to discover the success in that line complete there were about one hundred pages of my Valentine and allied families of that line. Say from 300 to 400 which page 400 to 400 do not know if you ever had that Valentine addition, I find one extra copy of parsons, at Brother Francis - of that line - then should be two if you did not get it. Do I am uncertain ask you to look over your genealogy and then if you did get the Valentine line of mine, it was most interesting line that united so many important and historical families in Boston - and carrying

the Valentine family back to "Eccles" a hamlet two or three miles out of Manchester England when the Estate eventually came to the American family who sold the Manor, However the Valentine genealogy in full may be found at the Lenox Library when I have now lodged also the Pike genealogy with all its allied lines you will find it at the Lenox Library. I have placed them as well the own lines for Sister Jeannie being the Thomas-Stanton and allied lines under title of "Ancestors of Jeannie Scott Pike" mother genealogy "Mann-Hazen" genealogy complete, My title to genealogy all there are in the Lenox Library (to be later The New York Public Library 42nd St and 5th Ave.)

The return of Sister Hannah from Virginia where she has been with Mariam will enable me to place the Long Diary and the memory of Hannah both Diaries in the Historical Society of Danbury. I have hitherto delayed it in finishing them by the time required in making an Index for each which I have recently completed. I leave with this the two copies of Index of the Diaries and your Sisters, and I have thought that perhaps you would spare one of the copies for some public library of any part where which I have not been able to supply with the span copies, for these will place two for the State Library of Conn. at Hartford Conn

I might suggest the propriety of some one at home & library of reference in Boston, where the name of Captain Anthony Pike might be properly remembered he having been master of the first vessel built there viz The famous "Blessing of the Bay" in which he served as Commander in the Pequot war as shown in the genealogy also the Volentine family either line was all Boston families of the most prominent station then.

I don't know if you enjoy genealogy or historical study of the early period but a line or two from me somewhat out of joint with present conditions may not be uninteresting. Enjoying the differences between then and now, the times of, we [illegible]

I have put it in this
way - "Can all the benefits of
so-called "Modernism"
make up for the spiritual loss
I take it that for the first
two centuries of Western and
the inhabitants were intensely
religious - so "spiritual"
The last half century of
wonderful advance in
material conditions
have singularly resulted -
in the spiritual ruin
of Protestantism in
Christian at least
One may say of the basis
religious life false then
the definition is a benefit
even that may be a
false statement -
as Hawthorne - worship
on the altar of Western Christianity
so I am inclined to the former
view Very truly Thomas Scott
11, 333 W, 55 St, N.Y.

Owing to a mistake in the history of [illegible], Massachusetts, which made the wife of Zaccheus Collier, Elizabeth Clapp, and error which led me into a wrong line of ancestry, for the wife of Zaccheus Collier was not Elizabeth Clapp, but [illegible], daughter of Thomas Valentine, of Dorchester, [illegible] went to Framingham, twenty-five miles southwest from Boston.

This Valentine genealogy becomes important from the fact that [illegible] Elizabeth Clapp was of no historical importance, while the ancestry of Elizabeth Valentine carries the relationship to many of the most important men of colonial time, and period of history in Massachusetts between the restoration of the ancient charter, the first period known as the Colonial, and the latter period known as the Provincial Period, with the officials appointed by the Crown, and not elected by the people.

In the later period your ancestors and their kin were prominent under the names of Valentine, Gooch, Hobby, Lynde, Newgate, and their kinsmen under the historical names of Olivers, Wendells, Phillips, Bowdoins, Irvings, Winthrops, Jacksons, Pickmans, as will be seen in the following account, and may be extended by reading any history of the times, and particularly in the Memorial History of Boston, or by a study of the New England Genealogical Register--the Oliver Genealogy in that record--which is full of your ancestral records too numerous to mention.

Dr. Daniel Dyke a puritan devine died about 1614 was son of a divine who preached at Hempstead in Essex was there silenced for non-conformity. His son Daniel graduated at Cambridge 1595 became Minister at Cogges Hall in Essex, was Chaplain to the first Lod Harrington, tutor to the Princess Elizabeth. One of his sermons which has been preserved was preached before the Princess after the failure of the "Gun powder Plot" entitled "Comfortable Sermons upon the CXII Psalme. Being thankeful remembrances for God's wonderful deliverance of us from the Gun powder treason."

Another sermon the mystery of selfe - deceiving or a discourse of the deceitfulnesse of men's hearts" Written by Daniel Dyke and published since his death by his brother Jeremiah Dyke 1642. In the Lennox Library may be seen an original copy of four sermons bound together in one volume. These sermons were translated into the Dutch and German Language, and many were brought to New England and are often mentioned in early wills. The Rev. Jeremiah Dyke was a prominent putitan Minister like his brother and died about 1620 His son Daniel Dyke became more celebrated even than any of that family of divines. He was however, a Baptist, but obtained favor under Oliver Cromwell when Lord Protecter, was appointed family chaplain to him, and was celebrated for his eloquence at the Restoration he was turned out of his putpit but preached privately until his death 1688. In the Conant Genealogy, as mentioned in page 25 of this, the neam Daniel Dyke Junior is mentioned as a witness to a will 1685. It seems probable that that Daniel was the son of the divine mentioned and may be a clue to the identity of the

James Reynolds Dyke
Cambridge

Mr. Daniel Dyke a puritan during the time of King Jame
was son of a divine
the Princess Elizabeth. One
preserved was preached before the Princess after the f
of the "Gun powder Plot" entitled "Comfortable Sermons up
wonderful deliverance of us from the Gun powder treason."

Another sermon the mystery of self - deceiving or a discourse of the deceitfulness of man's heart" Written by Daniel Dyke and published since his death by his brother Jeremiah Dyke 1642. In the Bennox Library may be seen an original copy of four sermons bound together in one volume. These sermons were translated into the Dutch and German Language, and many were brought to New England and are often mentioned in early wills. The Rev. Jeremiah Dyke was a prominent puritan Minister like his brother and died about 1620 His son Daniel Dyke became more celebrated even than any of that family of divines. He was however, a deputat, but obtained favor under Oliver Cromwell when lord Protector, was appointed family chaplain to him, and was celebrated for his eloquence at the Restoration he was turned out of his parish but preached privately until his death 1688. In the Convent Generalogy, as mentioned in page 29 of this, the name Daniel Dyke junior is mentioned as a witness to a will 1685. It seems probable that that Daniel was the son of the divine mentioned and may be a clue to the identity of

'amily of Anthony Dyke who came to Plymouth in 1623 and of ohn Dyke who was the Treasurer of the Duke of Buckingham Lord High Admiral of England at the time of his death. There were also two of the name connected with the settlement of Jamestown Virginia as stockholders in that company. The name of Dyke appears butvonce during the history of the Philip War and that is a service payment to Daniel Dyke in the year 1676 - 77 and appears to be for a service to the Eastward or where the State of Maine is now located and would indicate that he was in the service on the Easterly Coast, and he may have been a son of Anthony Dike but there is no other record of him. The "National History of Biography of England gives a full sketch of the three divines mentioned in these pages and that record is the only one of the family name spelled in any way.

To obtain any knowledge of the facts would require the wills of these divines in which case the names of their children or their kinsmen could be fully discovered.

of him. The "National History of Biograp

and that record is the only one of the family

children or their kinsmen could be fully discovered.

A FEW FAMILIES IN ENGLAND MENTIONED

AS ENTITLED TO COAT ARMOUR.

- o -

The Dykes, or Dikes of Cumberland.

Three Cinque foils Sa.

Crest a lobster vert.

. . . . .

These Dykes of Cumberland are of Dovenby Hall.

This family said to have been here at Dykesfield, County of Cumberland, before the Norman Conquest..

Quarterly, first and fourth, or,

Three Cinque foils, Sa, for Dykes.

Second and third, arg, on a cross az. a sword ppr. pomelled and hilted or, for Ballantine.

Crest, a lobster or crab fish, vert, second a demi-griffin. ma, wings ermines holding in dexter claw, a sword ppr. pomel and hilt, or,

Motto, Prius frangitur, quam flectitur, Plate 18-2 Fairbanks Crests of Great Britain.

Dykes of Horsham Co., Sussex Baronets, or, three cinque foils. Crest, a cubit, arm in armour, ppr, garnished, or holding a cinque foil, slipped as in arms.

These two families have the same arms, doubtless from same source of antiquity. The writer saw many grave stones of the name of Dyke in Stratford on Aven, and Conant Genealogy speaks of them at Sarum.

As regards these coats of arms of the family in England it is needless to say that it is merely in a line of some possible future discovery of the connection between the line of Dike in America and that name in England. At this writing there is no trace which makes any absolute relationship. The writer will show by Conant Genealogy some possibilities of a trace, but nothing sure.

The name of John Dike, treasurer of the Duke of Buckingham, Lord High Admiral, and a man much interested in collonial affairs of an early date might be a clue; he might have been a kinsman. The writer saw so much of him in the British Museum in the great volumes of records there of the Admiralty of James I time, that he was struck with the possibility of kinship, but no real evidence. Again, coats of arms are of no worth only to show that the owners were gentlemen, or noblemen, or their descendants.

In Babsons History of Gloucester, Mass., appears a Richard Dike who married Aug. 7, 1657, Rebecca a daughter of Samuel Dolliver, and a granddaughter of that Rev. John Wigginson, whose letter complimenting Anthony Dike, 1637, is given elsewhere and other mention of this eminent divine is given. Richard Dike appears to have been born perhaps in Marblehead and came an infant to Gloucester. It appears he was a grandson of Walter Tybbot or Tibbett, now spelt Tibbetts. This Walter Tybbot was born 1604 and came with the Rev. Mr. Blynman, or Blinman, who came from Chepstow,

in County of Dorchester, separated from Gloucester and by the River Pyo. [illegible] arrived at Cape Ann the same and remained in honor of those who came with him. He was a very noted character in New England, living at New London. Walter Tybbot mentions grandson Richard Dike in his will. His mother was named one as a widow Dike, married Samuel Clark. She had a daughter Elizabeth and perhaps two other daughters, viz: Elinor Lawson and Helena Trill. Her sister Mary married 1645 William Haskell and there are many descendants of that family in Tibbetts, Clark and Haskell names.

But of Dike not any of record, for Richard Dike, by wife Rebecca Dolliver had Rebecca, born 1668, Samuel, 1670, Sarah, 1673, Mary 1675, Joseph 1678, Job 1680, Elizabeth 1683, John 1686, Hannah 1688, and James 1692. Richard died 1729 aged 89 his wife died 1726, age 86. Son Job died 1705; nothing known of his history or of any but one of his children, viz James, who died 1778, age 90. He may have been a brother ofAnthony, who came to New England and married and had children, viz this Richard and perhaps another, Abraham, who appears at Dorchester before 1656, when he sold property to Thomas Wiswall. Savage [illegible] only Richard and Abraham Dike, which embraces all of the name he mentions, and each line disappears entirely. Savage undertook only the name of Anthony under the head of Dix, mentions him as Anthony Dix of Plymouth, one of the first comers,1623, in the Ann.

of Plymouth', one of the first comers,1633', in the Ant
Anthony under the head of Dix, mentions him as Anthony Dix
mation embraces all of the name he mentions, and each time
Genealogical Dictionary has only Richard and Abraham Dike,
1800', when no mold property to
land and married and two children,
he may have been a
one of his children,
ich died 1700; mentio
1700. age 60.
to 1722.
by wife Rebecca Dolliver had Rebecca, b.in 1686; Samuel,
1690, Sarah, 1692, Mary 1696. Job 1700, Mehi-
descendants of that family in Gibbons, Chase and Bennett
Esther Tybbot mentions grandson Nicholas Dike in his will
ted October in New England, living as Mer

He left and joined Conant, etc., so all previous genealogies of the Dike family never reached this Anthony, who, Savage, for a wonder, placed incorrectly. So as Richard's descendants disappear, it seems probable that all who have that name in America are from Anthony, through his son Anthony 2. It is proper to give this here so as to show that there was another family, perhaps kinsmen to Anthony and his descendants, and that this family affiliated with West of England people, as for instance with Rev. [illegible] Blinman's colony, which afterward went to New London.

Captain Anthony Dike:

Came in the Ann, 1623 to Plymouth, Mass. Probably followed Roger Conant, who probably came with his brother Christopher Conant, and with Anthony Dike, John Oldham and others, named as "particulars", or own who came to Plymouth on the "Ann" and "Little James", 1623 and paid their own passage and were not members of the corporation of Plymouth, hence future troubles. Roger Conant may have been one of the ten Oldham men who had grant of land 1625. Anthony Dike had such a grant in his own name; at the time of the expulsion of the Oldham Company, and John Lyford, the episcopal minister. It is then that Conant and Dike are supposed to have followed Oldham and Lyford to Nantucket 1624, removing when Rev. John White and John Humfrey, the treasurer, engaged them with Roger Conant as Governor to go to Cape Ann, 1625. On the break up of that company 1626, 100 men returned to England, but 40, with Roger Conant, Dike

Captain Anthony Dike:

Came in the Ann, 1630 to Plymouth, Mass. Probably followed Roger Conant, who probably came with his brother others, marked as "particulars", or men who came to Plymouth on the "Ann" and "Little Anne", 1630 and paid their own passage and were not members of the corporation of Plymouth, hence future troubles. Roger Conant may have been one of the ten Oldtown men who had grant of land 1630. Anthony Dike had such a grant in his own name; at the time of the

posed to have followed Oldham and Lyford to Nantucket 1634,

mer, engaged them with Roger Conant as Governor to go to Cape Anne 1626. On the break up of that company 1629, 120

and others removed to Naumkeak (Salem) 1628 to 1626. At that date John Endicott arrived as Governor and Conant and the others held out until they, as "Old Planters" were admitted to full participation in the Company 1630, a partnership between Roger Conant, Anthony Dike, Peter Palfrey, and Francis Johnson whom they had probably all of "the Old Planters" and now invited as partners. On this basis it is ascertained that Conant and Dike had been continuously together, from 1626/4 at Plymouth, 1624/5 at Nantasket, 1625/6 at Cape Ann (Gloucester), 1626/28 Naumkeak (Salem.)

Anthony Dike at some date unknown had married Tibitha, whose family name is unknown, and had a son, Anthony, perhaps his only child, unless the Ralph Dix and the widow Dix, of Ipswich, 1638 to 1648 were his widow and son.

Of this contention there is no certainty, however, from that Ralph Dix descended John A. Dix, late Major General, Secretary of War and United States Senator, etc., of New York, with his son, Rev. Morgan Dix, D. D., rector of Old Trinity, who have claimed Anthony Dike as an ancestor. Leaving that open, we have then at the death of Anthony I, at Cape Cod, 1638 a widow Tabitha and certainly a son, Anthony Dike No. 2, who married at a date unknown, a wife [illegible], of a family name unknown. After his death, 167-, she married secondly, John Porter, as shown by deeds of land to her father in law, Nathaniel Pickman, who had married Tabitha Dike, widow of the First Anthony Dike and was so her step father in law.

Anthony Dike at some date unknown had married
widow Dix, of Leeward, 1.1.6 so 1843 were
Of this connection there is no certainty,
Secretary of War and United States Senator," etc., of New
Trinity," who have claimed Anthony Dike as an ancestor,
leaving them open, we have clear at the death of Anthony I,
at Cape Cod, 1800 a widow Tebbins and certainly a son,
land to her father in law, Archibald Pidgeon, who had mar-
ried Tabitha Dike, widow of the first Christopher and was so her step father in law.

By Anthony Dike No. 2 and Margery, his wife, were seven children born in Salem, as shown by records there and an inventory of her estate in Salem probate records.

Nathaniel Pickman came to New York from Bristol. Savage for a wonder in his record here makes a blunder, for he mentions 1654, and that his wife, Tabitha, came with him, and that his children were born in England.

The Court record here given of Salem 1654/5, names Tabitha as wife of Pickman, and widow of Anthony Dike, clearly a blunder of memory. Tabitha must have married him very soon after Anthony Dike's death, for the five sons and three daughters, all of them by Pickman, begin to marry by 1660. To be sure in those days marriages were made early, but although eight children of Tabitha and Nathaniel Pickman marry and have children, and their descendants are numerous at this day and of much credit in and about Boston, Savage says that Tabitha died 13th September, 1665 and she is probably buried in the ancient burying ground of Salem. When the first-comers were buried, few if any of that generation had any headstones. The writer searched for them and found none.

The Conant family were from EastBudley, County of Dover, the same birth-place as that of Sir Walter Raleigh and Sir Francis Drake, and in Roger Conant a like spirit of adventure led him to America. He may have come in the Anne, 1623, with his brother Christopher. Roger was born 9th of April, 1592, youngest son of eight children. His

father was a leading man there, as his brothers were educated men. We know that he was much employed by a surveyor in New England. In 1619/20, he and his brother Christopher were in London, [illegible] and he married in London 1619, and probably emigrated from London. He was in London probably fourteen years, and he said in 1671 that he had been a planter forty-eight years, which would make him a passenger on the Anne, 1623, with Anthony Dike and with John Oldham company of "particulars". It may be then that all these ten of Oldham's Company, and Dike, were London men, and paid their own way, as "particulars" meant and did not come at the charge of the Company of Plymouth.

Conant did not long remain at Plymouth, owing to a difference of religious belief between the Oldham Company and the Plymouth people, who were separatists.

In the ship Charity, which arrived in March, 1624, came the Rev. John Lyford, a Puritan Episcopalian minister, sent by the company of London. It is now known that Oldham and Lyford, [illegible] designedly, and at the instigation of some of the company, began to intrigue to destroy the colony of Plymouth, or to change the management, both religious and secular. Bradford suspected them and by a ruse got their letters addressed to London, which showed him [illegible] and designs of his adversaries, and as it became a matter of success or failure at Plymouth, the company of "particulars" was expelled, and we may assume that Conant and Dike, as well as Capt. John Oldham, with Lyford, all

went to Nantasket (Hull) and Conant and Dike, with Lyford, [illegible] were planted in the settlement at Cape Anne (Gloucester) 1623. At the instigation of a company raised up by Rev. John White, of Dorchester, England, who got together Sir [illegible] and other stockholders, who appointed John Humphrey treasurer, son-in-law of the Earl of Lincoln by marriage to Lady Susan Clinton Fynes, or Fiennes, one of the great families of England. Both as "Earl of Lincoln" and "Lords Say and Sele", both these families of Fiennes play a great part in New England plantation, and in the great Civil War. More of this hereafter. Three thousand pounds was raised in this stock company and John Humfrey, at the advice of Rev. John White, invited Roger Conant to be the Governor and to move from Nantasket to Cape Anne, with the consent of the New Plymouth people, Lyford to go as the minister and Oldham also. But Oldham declines and remains at Nantasket. Some 200 people in all are fathered at Cape Ann, some from Dorchester, old England, others from the debris of small settlements in New England, such as Robert George's at Weymouth, 1623/4--a failure, and some of Weston's men. By 1626 the establishment at Cape Anne had become a failure. The money was gone, but at the instigation of Rev. John White, Conant removed with some forty people to Naumkeak (or Salem). With him we may be sure, was Dike, and it might be mentioned that John Tilley was master of the fish curing works at Cape Anne. Was he a son of one John Tilley of the Mayflower? No one can

answer, but as was captured near the fort at Saybrook by the Pequot Indians, May, 1637, just prior to the war and at the very time Anthony Dike was engaged at that Fort placing the ordnance. So Anthony Dike had an incentive to vengeance for the tortured John Tilley. For the Indians beleaguring the Fort mimicked the cries of Tilley when undergoing their torture. People who are now somewhat sympathetic over the Indians must remember that life and civilization were at stake then, and when this tribe of Pequots were exterminated, as will be seen later, it was a question of whether the English should live or whether the savage should have future sway in New England. Pardon this interjection of matter which relates to what Anthony Dike performed later on. But the name of Tilley at Cape Anne, who was in 1637 so done to death on the Conn. River causes this rather premature matter here, on account of the Tilley family of the Mayflower..

From Chronicles of the First Planters, by Alexander Young, D. D., 1846. Dedicated to the Honorable Lemuel Shaw, L. L. D., Chief Justice of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, this volume is respectfully inscribed by his friend and pastor.

This Lemuel Shaw will appear a distant kinsman through marriage of Dillaway Dike to Col. Eleazer Lawrence, at Providence. The Eleazer who was a Colonel in the war of the Revolution 1776 to 1785, explained later. Also this is a description by Rev. John White of the speculative

attempt at first. But final success in the settlement of the Massachusetts Bay Colony, in which you may rely that Anthony Dike with Roger Conant was a participant from the very inception.

This is called the "Planter's Plea", London, 1630, by Rev. John White, of Dorchester, England and is very important to you:-

"About ten years ago, a company of English, part out of the Low Counties, and some out of London and other parts, associating themselves into one body, with an intention to plant in Virginia, in their passage thither, being taken short by the wind in the debth of winter, the whole ground being under snow, were forced with their provisions to land themselves in New England, upon a small bay beyond Massachusetts, in the place which they now inhabit and called by the name of New Plymouth.

"The ground being covered a foot deep with snow, and they being without shelter, and having among them divers women and children, no marvel if they lost some of their company--it may be wondered how they saved the rest. But notwithstanding this sharp encounter at the first, and some miscarriages afterward, yet conceiving God's providence had directed them into that place, and finding great charge and difficulty in removing, they resolved to fix themselves there. And, being assisted by some of their friends in London, having passed over most of their greatest difficulties that usually encounter new planters, they began to

subsist at length in a reasonably comfortable manner. Being notwithstanding men of but mean and weak estates themselves, and after a year's experience or two of the soil and inhabitants, sent home tidings of both and of their well being there, which occasioned other men to take knowledge of the place and to take it into consideration.

"About the year 1623, some western merchants who had continued a trade of fishing for cod and bartering for furs in these parts for divers years before, conceiving that a colony planted on the coast might further their employments, bethought themselves how they might bring that project to effect, and communicated their purpose to others, alleging the convenience of compassing their project with a small charge by the opportunity of their fishing trade, in which they were accustomed to double man their ships that, by the help of many hands, they might despatch their voyage and load their ship with fish while the fishing season lasted, which could not be done by a bare sailing company. Now it was conceived that, the fishing being ended, the spare men that were above their necessary sailors, might be left behind with provisions for a year and when that ship returned the next year, they might assist them in fishing, as they had done the former year, and, in the meantime, might employ themselves in building and planting corn, which, with the provisions of fish, fowl and venison that the land yielded would afford them the chief of their food. This proposition of theirs took so well that it drew on divers

persons to join with them in this project, the rather because it was conceived that not only their own fishermen, but the rest of our nation that went thither on the same errand might be much advantaged not only by fresh victual which that colony might span them in time, but withal and men by the benefit of their ministers labors which they might enjoy during the fishing season; whereas otherwise, being usually upon those voyages nine or ten months in the year, they were left all the while without any means of instruction at all. Compassion towards the fishermen and partly some expectation of gain prevailed so far, that for the planting of a colony in New England there was raised a stock of more than three thousand pounds sterling, intended to be paid in five years but afterwards disbursed in a shorter time.

How this stock was employed and by what errors and oversights it was wasted, is, I confess, not much pertinent to the subject in hand. Notwithstanding because the knowledge thereof may be of use for other men's direction, let me crave leave in a short digression to present unto the readers views the whole order of the managing of such moneys as were collected, with the success and issue of the business undertaken, 1623/4.

The first employment then of this new raised stock was in bringing a small ship of fifty tons, which was with as much speed as might be despatched towards New England upon a fishing voyage, the charge of which ship with new

upon a fishing voyage, the charge of mutiny ship with men
as much speed as might be despatched towards New England
the planting of a colony in New England there was raised a
partly some expectation of gain prevailed so far, that for
er time.

How this stock was employed and by what errors

reader views the whole order of the managing of such

business understand, I beg\A.

The first employment when of this new raised stock

salts and other provisions to furnish her amounted to more than 300 pounds. Now by reason the voyage was taken too late and came at least a month or six weeks later than the rest of the fishing ships that went for that coast, and by that means, wanting fish to make up her lading, the master thought good to pass into Massachusetts Bay to try another that would yield them any, which he performed, and speeding then better than he had reason to expect, having left his spare men behind him in the country at Cape Anne, he returned to a late and a bad market in Spain, and so home.

The charge of this voyage, with provisions for fourteen spare men left in the country, amounted to about 800 pounds, with the three hundred pounds expended on the ship mentioned before and the whole provenue, besides the ship which remained to us still, amounted to not about two hundred pounds. So with the expense above the return of that voyage came to six hundred pounds and upwards.

The next year, 1624/5 was brought to the former ship a Flemish fly-boat of about a hundred and fifty tons, which, being unfit for a fishing voyage, as being built mainly fur burthen, and wanting lodging for the men, which she needed for such employment, they added unto her another deck, by which means she was sarved (raised) so high that she proved walt (top heavy) and unable to bear any sail, so that before she could pass on her voyage they were fain to ship her upon a better trim, and labor had to unload her and take her up and fur her. So with delay when she

arrived in the country, being diverted to Cape Cod, where they were fortunate the year before, they now found little fish there. So that the greater ship returned one third full only, and she came back contrary to orders, which were forBordeaux; she came direct to England, was unladen and a smart ship employed to take her cargo to market. The charge of this voyage, with both ships was 2,200 pounds, whereof eight hundred pounds was for building up ship and other charges about the greater ship. By these two ships were left behind in the country about thirty-two men, the charge of whose wages and provisions amounted to at least 500 pounds of the sum formerly mentioned. The provenue of both the voyages that year exceeded not the sum of 500 pounds at the most.

Now we come to the year in which Roger Conant and Anthony Dike, with Lyford the Chaplain join the Company at Cape Anne, Roger Conant as Governor.

The third year, 1625/6, both ships with a small vessel of forty tons, which carried kine with other provisions were again set to sea upon the same voyage, with the charge of two thousand pounds, of which sum the Company borrowed, 1,000 pounds and upwards. The great ship commanded by an able master, having passed on about two hundred leagues, found herself leaky, by the carpenter's fault and she returned to Weymouth and mended her leak, set herself to sea again, resolved to take advice of the ship whether to pass on her former voyage or to turn into New Foundland,

Now we come to the year in which Roger Conant and Anthony Dike, with Lyford the Chaplain join the Company at Cape Anne, Roger Conant as Governor.

Nothing more was to be seen upon the same voyage, with the vessel of forty tons, which carried Dike with other provisions were again set to sea upon the same voyage, with the borrowed, 1,000 pounds and upward. The great ship commanded by an able master, having passed on about two hundred leagues, found herself leaky, by the carpenter's fault and she returned to Weymouth and mended her leak, but hereof to pass again, resolved to take advice of the wind whether to keep on her former voyage or to turn into New Foundland,

charge of whose wages and provisions amounted to as large 800 pounds of the sum formerly mentioned. The provisions of both the voyages that year exceeded not the sum of 800 pounds at the most.

which she did by reason that the time was so far spent that the master and company despaired of doing any good in New England, where the fish falls in two or three months sooner than at New Foundland. There she took fish good store and much more than she could lade home. The overplus should have been sold and delivered to some Sacke or other sent to take it in there, if the voyage had been well managed, but that could not be done by reason that the ship before she went was not certain where to make her fish. By this incident it fell out that a good quantity of the fish she took were cast away and some other part was brought home in another ship.

At the return, by reason of our war with Spain, falling to a very low rate, the Company endeavored to send the greater ship to France, but she, being taken short by a contrary wind, in the West country, and intelligence also that these markets were overfull, they were forced to bring her back again and to sell the fish at home. The New England fish for ten shillings the hundred tale, t he New Foundland fish for six shillings, four pence the hundred tale.

By this reason the fish which at a market in all likelihood would have yielded nigh 2,000 pounds, amounted with all the provenue of the voyage to about 1,100 pounds.

Unto these losses were added two other, no small disadvantages, the one in that country by our landmen, who, being ill governed and ill commanded, fell into many disorders,

and did the company little service. The other of the fall of shipping in price which was now abated one half, by which means it came to pass that our ships which stood us in little less than twelve hundred pounds were sold for four hundred and eighty pounds.

The occasions then of wasting this stock are apparently these: first, the ill choice of the place for fishing. The next that the carriage of our men at land, who, having stood us in two years and a half in well nigh four thousand pounds charges, never yielded one hundred pounds profit. The last, the ill sale of the fish and shipping, by all which the adventurers were so far discouraged that they abandoned the further prosecution of the design and took order for the dissolving of the Company in land, and sold away their shipping and other provisions."

Then he remarks on the fact that fishermen do not make good land men. Nor do land men make good fishermen, etc.

"But to return to our former subject from which we digressed; upon the manifestation of the Western adventurers' irresolution to give off their work, most part of the land men, being sent for, returned. But a few of the most honest and industrious resolved to stay behind and take charge of the cattle sent over the year before, which they performed accordingly, and not liking their seat at Cape Anne, chosen especially for the supposed commodity of fishing, they transported themselves to Naum-keike, about four

or five leagues distant southwest from Cape Anne.

Since then of the adventurers that still continued their desire to set forward the plantation of a colony there, conceiving that if some more cattle were sent over to these few men left behind they might not only be a means of the comfortable subsisting of such as were already there, but of inviting some other of their friends and acquaintances to come over to them, adventured to send over twelve kine, and bulls more, and conferring casually with some gentlemen of London moved them to add unto them as many more, by which occasion the business came to fresh agitation in London and being at first approved by some and disliked by others, by argument and disputation it grew to be more vulgar, insomuch that some men, showing some good affection for the work, and offering to help through their purses, if fit men might be procured to go over, inquiry was made if any would be willing to engage their persons in the voyage. By this inquiry it fell out that among others, they lighted at last on Master Endecott, or more well known to divers persons of good note, who manifested much willingness to accept of the offer as soon as it was tendered, which gave great encouragement to such as were upon the point of resolution to set on this work of erecting a new Colony upon the old plantations.

Hereupon divers persons having subscribed for the raising of a reasonable sum of money, 1628, a patent was granted with large encouragement every way, by his most

excellent Majesty. Master Endecott was sent over as Governor, assisted with a few men, and arriving there in safety in September, 1628, and uniting his own men with those which were formerly planted in the country into one body, they made up in all not much above fifty or sixty persons. His prosperous journey and safe arrival of self and all the company, and the good report he sent back of the country, gave such encouragement to the work that more adventurers joining with the first undertakers and all engaging themselves more deeply for the prosecution of the design, they sent over next year,1629, about three hundred persons more, most servants, with a convenient number of cattle and some mares and horses, of which the kine came safe, but the greater part of the horses died, so there remained not above twelve or fourteen alive.

By this time the often agitation of the affair in sundry parts of the Kingdom, the good report of Captain Endecott's government, and the increase of the colony began to awaken the spirits of some persons of competent estates, not formerly engaged. Considering that they lived either without any useful employment at home, and might be more serviceable in assisting in the planting of a colony in New England, they took at last a resolution to unite themselves for the prosecution of that work. And as it usually falls out, some other of their acquaintances, seeing such sort of good estates engaged in the voyage, some for love of their persons, and others upon other respects united unto them,

and embarked themselves for a voyage to New England, where I hope they are long since safely arrived.

This means the 1630 Colony of Governor John Winthrop, or first settlement at Boston.

Rev. John White makes clear in a few pages the beginnings at Plymouth and at Salem, beginnings which added [illegible] in numbers to those of your ancestors in New England, of whom Anthony Dike was the first at Salem, under this Company mentioned here and described so well.

The first planters were non-conformists, not separatists, but they became separatists at once on landing. Historians err who say otherwise, and many do so err.

The first church assemblage of this "Independency" was 1637, at Cambridge, where was formed the"Cambridge platform".

The men of estates included John Winthrop, Isaac Johnson, Saltmstall, Dudley, Cradock, and others. John Endecott's wife was a cousin of Governor Cradock, which is not often mentioned.

"Hubbard's Narrative" gives a fuller account of this settlement. He says that the inhabitants of New Plymouth built a house at Nantasket, 1622 for trade, and thither Mr. Roger Conant, with some others, after Mr. Lyford and Mr. Oldham were for some offence, real or supposed, discharged from having anything more to do at Plymouth (From this it would appear that Conant, Dike and their men were not exiled--as were Lyford and Oldham--).

"Here they found a place of retirement for themselves and their families, for the space of a year and some few months, till a door was opened for them at Cape Anne, and thither they removed, 1625," and after a year removed a third time to Naumkeak (Salem).

As for the rest of the coast, save only Plymouth, the plantations "were like the habitations of the foolish, as it is in Job, cursed before they had taken root."

So it might be said of the sternness of Endecott later in life, he may have felt or regarded the Baptists and Quakers, whom he certainly bitterly persecuted, that like the early plantations of the coast which failed, so too the "Bay Colony" might fail. Indeed in the Philip war there was a close call and heavy loss of life and estates. It will not do to judge Endecott without reading both sides of the story. There were five failures in planting colonies to two successful, viz: Plymouth and Massachusetts Bay.

In 1623, thirteen of the adventurers which Mr. White was connected with, writing to their brethren at New Plymouth, tell them: "Let it not be grievous to you that you have been instruments to break the ice for others who come after you. The honor shall be yours to the world's end."

A list of the supplies given in Young, p. 40--with of February, 1628, for five pieces of ordnance long since bought and paid for, Mr. Cumfrey is entreated and

and doth promise forthwith to cause them to be delivered to Samuel Sharpe, who is to take care to have fit carriages made for them, three drums, two ensigns, and a long list of military and fowling weapons and uniforms, shot for the ordnance, etc.

As Captain John Oldham plays so prominent a part in early times, a sketch of him is not inappropriate. His murder by the Indians at Block Island in 1636 was the ultimate cause of the "Pequot War", in which Anthony Dike participated.

Oldham may have traded on the coast prior to his coming on the Ann, 1623, with Dike and others, who joined him at Nantasket. He seems to have had ten men on the Ann, perhaps Conant was one of them. After his first expulsion, 1624, he returned, 1625 to Plymouth and was ignominiously expelled then.

In 1626 he sailed to Virginia and on this voyage [illegible] delivered from a threatened peril, became penitent and was [illegible] a third time at Plymouth, and they trusted him, so that when [illegible] of Merry Mount was arrested, he was intrusted to the care of Oldham and sent to England.

From 1630 to time of death, 1636, Oldham lived at Watertown, from which place his will was proved, 1636, with Thomas Stanton and Richard Lord, creditors among others.

Oldham traded with Hartford in the early times of confusion of Patents. Robert Gorges, son of Sir Ferdinando, at death left his brother John, who married a

daughter of the Countess of Lincoln, his Patent of land when he started a colony in 1623, which included land from Charles River to Nahant Cape. John Gorges sold it to Sir Wm. Breveton and John Oldham, and the Massachusetts Bay Patent covered the same land, hence trouble again with Oldham.

Sir William Breveton, on the outbreak of the Civil War took part in the war prominently, in England and we hear no more of his patents. Probably Oldham was settled with in some way. Breveton intended to come over, sent some servants and made some improvements, but never came.

In Young, page 131, is a letter of Governor Cradock to Governor John Endecott, which speaks of what the company desires them to send in ships for a return cargo, a long letter of information, dated 1629, February. He says we thought of Mr. Hugh Peter for the Minister, but he is now in Holland. Mr. Hugh Peter was a stockholder in the Colony from the first inception, but he did not come over until 1635, when he came with Harry Vane, John Winthrop, Jr., and Winthrop's wife, who was his step-daughter, 1636, when Roger Williams was expelled from Salem. Peters was appointed the minister in Williams' place and continued at Salem until 1641, when he went to England. Mr. Skelton and Mr. Higginson came in 1629 as the ministers, and it was Mr. Higginson, father of that John, who often is mentioned in the writing of this, and also he who changed the

form of service in the church here from Non-Conformity to Separatism, in 1629, on the advice of Dr. Fuller, of Plymouth to conform with the Plymouth ways of service, as practiced at Scrorby, first at Mr. Wm. Brewster's house, when Roger Williams wrote and sent by Anthony Dike the letter copied. He was familiar with him, for Roger Williams after preaching a year or two at Plymouth, was pastor for Salem four years, so knew Dike.

The supposition is that Hubbard, who was an Ipswich man, when he wrote his first history of the Massachusetts Bay Colony, received his information of the first planting from the mouth of Roger Conant himself, and the language would so indicate.

That considerable space has been given to Anthony Dike and his times seems appropriate as he is your first ancestor in a direct male line, he becomes the ranking man and worthy of the space. In fact there seems a fair amount of record for him and it seems unfair that he should be rated in ancient New England history as Anthony Dix, and not Anthony Dike, so that if any one were in search of him, he would not be found under his right name, but would be found under Dix. It then became necessary to make a case for him, and to prove that he was Dike, and not Dix, unless the names were interchangeable, as has been insinuated, and in some sort proved, in the "Conant Genealogy".

It is intended that each one of you shall fill in this vacancy in the record by your own reading of the

It is intended that each one of you shall fill

events, March 1627/8 Sir Henry Rosewell, Sir John Young, [illegible] Humphrey, John Endecott and others obtained a charter, [illegible] Matthew Craddock, as a large stockholder, 1628 Endecott was sent out as Governor to replace Conant. Eventually the old planters were not only recompensed but admitted to rights in the New Company of Massachusetts Bay.

1629 Rev. Francis Higginson and Rev. Andrew Skelton came as Ministers, and it was soon after, at a time when there was an epidemic, that Dr. Fuller, of Plymouth, came to aid them in the care of the sick and dying. In conferring with the Ministers he informed them of the way of the church management of Plymouth. Endecott was with them in consultation, and the bold decision was made to change from the Episcopal or Church of England way to the Independent way of Plymouth, 1629.

The Genealogy of the Conant family is not alone of interest from the connection of Anthony Dike and Roger Conant in America, but it may be that they were kinsmen as well, and this may be of interest to the family of Dike. Should there be a wish at any time to connect the Dikes of America, with the family in England, there is at present no way of finding out what that branch in England was, or where the Conant Genealogy may yield a clue, which is as follows:

Rev. John Conant, Vice Chancellor of Oxford, died 1693, was buried at Northampton. Thirty-six volumes of his sermons are inBodleian Library. In his will, he mentions daughter Elizabeth, wife of Johnathan Dix, his widow

mentions her also and the son, John, in his will mentions "my Cousin, Frances Dix, her brother and sister that are beyond the seas, when they return to England, ten pounds each". These records are on pages 85, 86 and 87. Conant Genealogy, on Page 92.

Eliz., widow of John and grand nephew of Roger, mentions in her will, 1735, as witnesses, M. Dyke and Danl. Dyke, Jr. This John was Rector of Poole Dorset. His grandfather had been appointed Rector of Lymington, 1611, by Sir Henry Rosewell, who was the principal stock holder in the first company of Massachusetts Bay, and Roger Conant's protector in England--with John Humphrey. This Elizabeth Conant, as a widow, probably removed to New Savurn, from Poole Dorset.

In the south cross aisle of Salisbury Cathedral is an inscription to the memory of Alice Conant, as follows: "Here lyeth Alice, daughter of the Rev. John Conant, late Rector of Poole Dorset, who died July 5th, 1745, aged 45 years" as mentioned. Should any of the family of Dike desire to get a clue to their English kinsmen, it might be through the record of this family of Dyke and Dix, as shown in these Conant wills. The name was then spelled differently: Dike, Dyke, Dix, Dicks. The Salem records spell it Dik. Family names in those days were spelled in any way; Walter Raleigh's name seven ways. Again, a sister of Roger Conant, Mary, comes to Salem and married there Williard Veren, 1641. Her brother, Richard Conant,

In the south cross aisle of Salisbury Cathedral is an inscription to the memory of Alice Cecaut, as follows: "Here lyeth Alice, daughter of the Rev. John Cecaut, late Rector of Poole Dorset, who died July 8th, 1748, aged 24 years," as mentioned. Should any of the family of Dike desire to get a clue to their English kinsmen, it might be through the record of this family of Dike and Dix, as shown in [illegible]. The name was often spelled differently: Dike, Dyke, Dix, Dixie. The Salem records spell many names in those days were spelled in any way; Walter Ralegh's name seven ways:

Mila., widow of John and [illegible]
mentions in her will, 1738, as witnesses, M. Dyke and
His grandfather had been appointed Rector of
1619, by Sir Henry Rosewell, who was the pri
Roger Conant's Protectors in England--with John Humphrey.
Canada, from Poole Dorset.

Minister at East Rudleigh, Devon, mentions her in his will, 1688, leaving Mr. Baxter's book to my sister, Mrs. Mary Veren, of Salem, in New England, if she be living at my decease. A queer confirmation of this relationship comes in "Davis Landmarks of Plymouth". A Samuel Dike removes from Ipswich to North Bridgewater, near Plymouth; dies 1775, he leaves a large family of children. Among the names appear Samuel, born 1748, Anthony, 1751, John, 1753, Nathaniel, 1766, Veven, 1769. Here we have the names of Salem Dikes, viz: Samuel, Anthony, Nathaniel and now Veven or merely respects. The writer is inclined to think that [illegible] in Vice Chancellor John Conant's will, and Mix mentioned as cousins, by his son in his will and whom he mentions as "now beyond seas", which would there mean America, probably Salem.

Again we have as mentioned in Davis Landmarks of Plymouth the name Veren as a given name. Now Veren is a singular name and means something, and probably a family relationship. So it seems almost certain that Roger Conant and Anthony Dike, who came with Christopher Conant on the Anne, 1623, were kinsmen in England, and this clue is important should you ever wish to go to England for [illegible].

To be sure Dikes of England are entitled to coat armour, yet there is not evidence so far to what family in England the American family is connected, hence this clue to be followed, of Conant connection.

It is queer that the pedigree of Samuel Dike, of Ipswich with the Salem family names so clearly set therein Lewis puts him as born in Scotland, knowing that although Anthony Dike, first ancestor landed at Plymouth, yet a long line of his descendants are not aware of it and say that Samuel of Ipswich was born in Scotland.

Again another line of Dikes of Maine put no claim to Anthony, so it has seemed not only reasonable but right to put them right in this regard.

North Bridgewater is in the old colony and Samuel Dike who came there from Ipswich, Mass., was a son of the third Anthony Dike, viz: Anthony first and second of Salem, and third Anthony of Ipswich. This third Anthony, father of Samuel of North Bridgewater, was a brother of the Nathaniel Dike who removed to Suttery, Mass, his son James, of Thompson was second cousin of Samuel of Bridgewater, and of Colonel Nicholas Dike, of Westminster, an eminent officer in the Revolution, also of Colonel Nathaniel Dike, another Revolutionary officer.

There appears a Ralph Dix at Ipswich, Mass., 1648, later at Reading, founder of the line of Dix in our day, eminent in Major General John A. Dix and Rev. Morgan Dix, of Old Trinity, New York. It is possible that this Ralph was a son of Anthony Dike of the Annes, indeed I think the Dix family so claim, in which case it may be said that in addition to Anthony II, the first Anthony had Ralph, who appears as Dix, at Ipswich and Reading.

General John A. Dix was born at Boscowen, N. H.. The Dix question I have referred to Rev. Samuel W. Dike, Boston.

Thornton says of Roger Conant, the first Governor of the Salem Company, his true courage and simplicity of heart and strength of principle eminently qualifies him for the conflicts of those rude days of peril, deprivation and trial.

Endecott was the opposite of Conant--arbitrary and sometimes violent, he ruled with a determined hand and carried the sword unsheathed. A man of theological asperity. It is to be noticed that the form of worship begun by Lyford at Cape Anne was that of the established church and so continued until after the arrival of Endecott and Higginson, the expulsion of the two brothers Browne, for support of episcopacy in the fall of 1629, after the organization of the new form or "independent" form of church worship of August, 1629 marks the line of demarkation. From now on the churches of New England will be under a uniform organization first practised in the manor house of Elder William Brewster at Scrooby, England, 1606, carried to Leyden, thence to New Plymouth in America, after instructions of Doctor Fuller to Higginson. As Higginson says Endecott approved of it and in August, 1629, in the presence of delegates from Plymouth church, a most important event took place, at which most likely Anthony Dike

and family take some part. That event is the establishment of the Independent church in All New England, which was ratified at the Cambridge Synod or Assembly, 1637, and an account of which in manuscript was carried to England, 1641 by Rev. Hugh Peter, and published 1643, as the New England form or way of worship, and although the 1643 Westminster Assembly began with the powers that were in England, then mostly Presbyterian, it ended in 1648 with the Cromwellian party or party of the army in power, and Hugh Peter was the famous chaplain who had made the independences of New England to triumph over the Presbyterian party in Parliament, but with the Restoration of 1660 Charles II destroyed both. But in America, particularly in New England "Independences" kept the camp fire burning and in the revolution of 1775 in America triumphed the independency of Mr. Brewster's church of Scrooby, 1606, in Nottinghamshire, New Plymouth in New England 1620 and in Salem, 1629.

In Jones' History of the Royalists of New York in the Revolution we find that the "Liberty Boys" of New York, as early as 1760, were wont, at their assemblages to drink to the toast of: "Those patriots, Oliver Cromwell, John Hampden, and Hugh Peter.

Now this Hugh Peter preached for seven years in this Salem church, and his first wife lies buried there. From 1636 to 1641 he was minister at Salem. The church he preached in stands to this day, and in it doubtless

Anthony Dike and family worshipped under him, for as Anthony Dike became a freeman at time Comant did, 1631, we know that he was in good standing in the church, and had to be to be a voter.

The writer is familiar with every movement spoken of in this regard. Thomas Prince mentions that Bradford complained that the movement to settle at Cape Anne and Salem was a disloyal movement, which the writer thinks was true, and that the Massachusetts Bay Colony intended to exercise an independent position, and for that reason Lyon Gardner fortified the bay, 1635, when the King demanded the return of the charter.

Harry Vane returned to England to establish a Commonwealth and hence his trouble with Cromwell, 1653, and to this day Massachusetts is a "Commonwealth", not a State.

Hugh Peter was executed 1660, Harry Vane, 1662, Col. John Humphray, the swordbearer at the King's trial, 1649 died 1661, it may be in prison or in hiding, and he was of Salem too, in Peter's time.

It should be known that Hugh Peter, some time pastor of Anthony Dike, became the famous army chaplain, all powerful with all the commanders in the Civil War and the idol of the triumphant army and of Cromwell. His name, as I have mentioned was to be a toosin in the Revolution of 1775--83, and so I have tried to show a sequence from Lawrence's charter of liberty, 1100 to all the great movements in England and America, of which the

in which the independent church or Congregational Church of to-day stands sponsor.

Another thing in connection with the Salem of Anthony Dike and the Methodist Church of to-day is this: The Rev. John White, who is the virtual founder of the Colony and under whom Conant and Dike worked at order by letter of John Humphrey, 1628, Treasurer of the Dorchester Company. This John White, later a prominent member of the Westminster Assembly, was an ancestor of the Wesley family, founders of Methodism, the most numerous and powerful of all the Protestant sects. It is probable that Conant, and Dike too, perhaps were personally known to White. Thus it may be seen that although they were exiled from Plymouth, with the Episcopal system, yet they, in 1629 return to the Plymouth form and henceforth work on harmoniously.

Elder Brewster, Governor Bradford, Governor Conant, and we may say Dike, too, for he was Conant's partner, thus played a part in the foundations of things in America. At the time Roger Conant and Dike became citizens of Massachusetts Bay Colony, 1631, the same year they became partners in business, as Salem records show. Roger Conant, Peter Palfrey, Anthony Dike, and Francis Johnson, form a partnership for trade with the Indians along the coast. They had a station or truck-house as it was called, at Blue Point, Mass., (near Portland) which was afterwards sold to Richard Foxwell, together with

certain debts due from the Indians.

Dike was lost at Cape Cod, while on a trading trip. There was a disagreement among the partners in settling their affairs. As in 1655, Conant, Palfrey, and Nathaniel Pickman, as executors to Dike, brought suit in the court at Salem against Francis Johnson to recover the value of a quantity of beaver and otter skins sent by Foxwell to Johnson and not accounted for by him. The following testimony is found on the court files: of Essex County; Johnson wrote Foxwell, February 12, 1635, acknowledging receipt of the skins. George Sayter sworn June 18th, 1654 saith: "that about eighteen years since I, dwelling with Mr. Clewes in Casco Bay, Mr. Richard Tucker and I was going Bostonward, and at Saco we met with Mr. Richard Foxwell. He desired me and Mr. Tucker to carry a packet of beaver and otter to Mr. Francis Johnson, which we delivered him at Boston.

Richard ~~Foxwell~~ Tucker, of Falmouth (now Portland) deposed, July 1, 1654: "About eighteen or twenty years ago, Mr. Richard Foxwell delivered me in my boat, then bound for Massachusetts, a great parcel of beaver and another of otter, value, to the best of my ~~remembrance~~ remembrance at seventy or eighty pounds sterling."

Deposition of Lot Conant: "This deponent testifyeth that about seven years since, that going Eastward, I was desired to carry a letter by Nathaniel Pickman, to Mr. Richard Foxwell of Blue Point, answered that he owed nothing

to Nathaniel Pickman, but to Anthony Dike and to Mr. Johnson. Before me, John Endecott,

Dep. Gov.

Deposition of Tabitha Pitman.

This I, Tabitha Pittman do testify that at my husband, Mike's last going away from me, when he was taken away at Cape Cod, by the hard winter, being the last words he ever spoke to me, he said: "Wife, when thee hast paid Peter Palfrey such a sum, then there is due to thee from Richard Tewell, one the bills, three and twenty pounds, or thereabouts, and all for each partner and that itt was due and owing to them at the time of the date of the bills.

Taken upon oath 30, 1, 1657.

Before me,

Edmond Batter.

Francis Johnson deposed: "That about twenty-four or five years since, Mr. Roger Conant, Peter Palfrey, Anthony Dike and myself formed a partnership for a trade to the eastward in which trade they left the sole business of management unto me, Francis Johnson. At the end of three years or thereabouts, I sold unto Mr. Richard Tewell all the interest in the house, with the debts due from the Indians, household stuff and trading goods, for all which I took two bills of debt under his hand, payable at two set days, one in December, the other in June after. As I do remem-

ber a small parcel of goods addition was sold, making three bills of debt. Some time after Foxwell shot some beaver and otter, by a boat which I received, debts to ourselves and other men, which the trade was indebted to, this beaver and otter was disposed of for that.

Two or three more years after seeing no more pay come from him, the aforesaid partner came to me for account, to see how they stood, upon which we found Mr. Foxwell as much indebted to us as amounted to twenty-three pounds or thereabouts to every partner. The bills which we accounted desperate were delivered into the hands of Peter Palfrey, at that time, by Mr. Conant's desire and our consent.

This appears to be in the hand of Conant, original now in the hands of the compiler of the Conant genealogy, 1887, or fac-similie in book, page 112 of the Conant Genealogy.

(Signed) Roger Conant,
Pater Palfrey,
Nathaniel Pickman.

Of the following answer

Nor answer to Mr. Johnson's declaration, we desire the Court and jury to have knowledge;-

"1. That as for the matter of these bills, it has never been denied, only one of them has been lost.

2. And as for the guaranty of the bill lost, none of us can affirm, neither can Mr. Johnson, but only

by supposition, but whether the bills be or were more or less, we suppose it littell to the purpose, or to what we looke after, wch is our pts. of that beaver and otter which Mr. Johnson hath received, as witness his two letters dated long after the bills.

3. As for the twenty-three pounds sterling, which we accounted due to each of us, it was so much disbursed by our particular statements, as most our disbursements even in the trade, which was long before the time that Mr. Johnson received this forementioned beaver and otter and for what might be further due by bills, if it came to hand to be equally divided amongst us.

4. For the fourth particular there is no need of answer to it.

5. As for the arbitrators of Boston, they did fully consider and debate of the bill lost and of what Mr. Johnson hath rendered of our joint debt and of what Mr. Johnson had promised to Mr. Foxwell, of land and house, to be secured, proofs being produced to the arbitrators by ffofwell's agent.

The signatures of Roger Conant, Peter Palfrey and Nathaniel Pickman are all three of excellent penmanship, Pickman's particularly so, and this extant signature of the second husband of Tabitha, widow of Anthony Dike the first, is perhaps the only ink mark extant of that generation and this of a step-ancestor, but through him came the name of Nathaniel into the Dike family, as will appear.

The verdict of the Salem Court was:

"At a Court held in Salem, ye 7th, 9th month, 1655, Mr. Roger Conant, Peter Palfrey, and Nathaniel Pickman, plaintiffs, against Mr. Francis Johnson, defendant, in an action of the case for detaining a parcel of Beaver, containing one hundred and forty-one and a half pounds, and a parcel of Otter, more or less in value to be received twenty years since; with due damages for forebearance. Jury finds for plaintiff, in the hands of the defendant one hundred and forty-one pounds of Beaver, vallued at seventy pounds, ten shillings and seventy pounds of otter at five shillings per pound, seventeen pounds ten shillings; three parts thereof we find for plaintiffs, bothe of the Beaver and the Otter which three quarters amounts to sixty-six pounds sterling and costs of Court, which is thirty-six shillings, two pence.

This case shows the fact of the marriage of Tabitha and that her second husband, Pickman continued as a partner in the place of Anthony Dike, deceased, also that her husband died at Cape Cod, as Governor John Winthrop made note in his journal, see elsewhere. See Conant Genealogy, pages 111 to 113, with fac-simile of signatures and answer to the Court at Salem.

An episode in the early history of New England concerning the French and their causing trouble for the English.

From Rumsey's History of Acadia.

This is interesting, as it includes reference to John Howland, Anthony Dike, and the Pirate Dixy Bull.

"For the French in Acadia often exhibited a capacity to annoy and injure quite out of proportion to their actual strength. In June, 1632, before De Razilly arrived in Acadia an event took place which gave some indication of the spirit in which the treaty of St. Germaine was likely to be interpretted by the subjects of France. A party of French came in a pinnace to Penobscott, where the new Plymouth colonists had established a trading house under charge of John Howland, as trading master; after La Tour had been dispossessed by the English by reason of the treaty of St. Germaine. The French pretended that they had lost their reckoning; that their vessel was leaky and that they desired to haul up and repair her.

It so happened that the trading master and most of the men had gone to the westward for a supply of goods, leaving only three or four men to protect the fort. The French, seeing the weak state of the garrison, resolved to help themselves to the contents of the trading house. They having overpowered the few men in charge, loaded their vessel with the goods, which consisted of beaver, besides trading stuff, such as coats, rugs, blankets and biscuit. The whole valued at five hundred pounds sterling.

The French did not injure or imprison the men in charge, but when they had secured their plunder, set them at liberty, telling them to carry it to their masters the insolent message that some gentlemen of the Isle of Rhe had been there. Bradford speaks of it .

While returning with this plunder, the French fell in with the Mallow, of "Dirty Bull", an Englishman engaged in the Indian trade to the eastward, and robbed him of his goods. Bull seems to have been so discouraged by the ill success of his attempts to make an honest living by trading, that he resolved to turn pirate himself. He gathered together fifteen other vagabond Englishmen, who were scattered along about the coast east of Boston, and seizing some boats made a raid on Pemaquid, where there had been a small English settlement for some time. Bull rifled the fort and plundered the settlers. He was finally chased away by a hastily armed force, under Neale and Hilton, from Piscataqua.

It is at this time that Bull captured Anthony Dike in his pinnace and demanded of him that he should pilot him to Virginia, as is written by Roger Clap, of Dorchester.

Bull was the first pirate on the coast. Captain John Gallup, in his Shalup, with John Mason, as his Lieutenant, and fifteen men were two months in search of Bull, but he escaped. These men mentioned were later to be prominent in the Piqot war, with Anthony Dike.

John Mason, as Captain of the troops, and John Gallup, Captain of the fleet. It would appear that Dike and Gallup were employed by the Colony to carry provisions and troops in the War with the Pequot Indians, 1637.

The Memoirs of Captain Roger Clap, the Captain of the castle in Boston, in his own handwriting, presented to the Rev. Thomas Prince, by Mr. James Blake, Jr., of Dorchester. The first edition was printed under the care of Prince.

Clap came to Dorchester, 1630, in the "Mary and John", with John Gallup. This Memoir was printed in Boston, 1731, by B. Green. He says he was born in Salcom, Devon, in the year 1609. A most interesting history, from which one can understand the privations, as he writes them.

Among other things he mentions the Pirate Bull and Anthony Dicks. So rare a work is worth copying. On page 35 "there arose up against us one Bull, who went to the eastward a Trading, and turned Pirate and took a Vessel or two, and plundered [illegible] Planters Habitations and intended to return into the Bay and do mischief to our Magistrates here in Dorchester and other places. But as they were weighing anchor, one of Mr. Short's men shot from the shore and struck the principal actor dead, and the Rest were filled with Fear and Horrour. They having taken one Anthony Dicks, a master of a Vessel and endeavored to per-

swade him to pilot them into Virginia, but he would not. They told him that they were filled with such Fear and Horrour again, that they were afraid of his very rattling of the ropes.

This Mr. Dike told to his own mouth. These men fled eastward and hall themself got into England, but God destroyed this wretched man. Thus the Lord saved us at this time from their wicked device against us.

Here you have Captain Clap giving a record of word of mouth from Anthony Dike thus this ancient history speaks to the present.

Roger Clap was the ancestor of an eminent family in New England history and Rev. Thomas Prince appears in it also.

Clap mentions also "God permitted Satan to stir up the Piquot Indians to kill divers men as Mr. Oldham, Mr. Tilley and others. God prospered our soldiers once and again in their enterprises, once and again until the Pequot people were destroyed and dread into the hearts of the Indians around about us.

A sketch of this Roger Clap of Dorchester, who [illegible] mentions Anthony Dike and evidently was an intimate of his and a Devon man. On page 257 of Clap's History of Dorchester: "On the second of February this year, 1690, died in Boston, whither he removed from Dorchester, Roger Clap, in his eighty-second year. For more than twenty years he was commander of the castle, which was the principal

fortress in the province. As already mentioned, he was one of those who came to Dorchester in the "Mary and John", 1630, the first vessel to arrive of the Winthrop fleet. From that time until he resigned his post at the castle, he was almost constantly engaged with the civil, military, and ecclesiastical affairs of the town and colony. Blake says he was buried in the old burying place, Boston, the military officers going before the body and next to the relations, the Governor and the whole General Court following after, and the guns at the castle firing at the same time. Many of the name have been eminent men.

Letter of John Higginson to John Winthrop.

Mass. Hist. Col., Vol. 37, page 394.

For the right worshipful and honored in the Lord, Mr. Jo. Winthrop, Esquire, and Deputy Governor, these with speed. Right worshipful and much honored in the Lord,- my due service and respect remembered, and having given full information to the Governour of the manner of the Lord's proceeding with us here, I spare to write thereof to yourself. Onely I make bould to present you with my weak and feeble thoughts concerning the same, which you may be pleased to consider as you see cause.

First, whether now the Lord begins not to send (as shepherds use to doe their dogs to fetch in the straggling sheep, so he) the Indians upon his servants to make them cleave more close together, and prize each other, to prevent contentions of brethren, which may prove as hard

to break as castle barres, and stop their now beginning breaches, before they be as the letting out of many waters that cannot be gathered in againe, & c. O that as this is the Lord's meaning, so it may be the use that all his servants may make thereof, that he may have the praise in Jesus Christ for evermore.

Secondly. Whether the Lord intends not in his dealings here with us a gracious warning to all the English in the land that shall ever have to doe with Indians againe in this kinde, for it hath been a common conceit, but is in truth a dangerous errour. Indians are afraid of pieces, & c. Ten English will make a hundred Indians fly. Some dare venture;(happily now) with twenty, forty, sixty men, among a thousand army Pequots (for that, if not many more in probabilitie is their number), &c., &c.; but if the passages here be well considered, and the Lord be pleased to sanctify our punishments to be warnings to the wise, I hope it may be a means to roote out that deeply rooted securitie, and confidence in our owne supposed strength (2 English diseases and dangerous worms that used to breed and grow in abused peace or slighted liber-ties) that so the loss of these, and danger of ourselves may be the saftie and preservation of many others.

Thirdly. Whether now the Lord calls not now by all these sad alarums and Heavenly warnings from hence, to all his servants lowder and lowder, more seriously to intend this ware than yet they seem to doe.

For if that our condition here to have 10 lusty men out of so little a number as ours is so cruelly slayne, others crying and rearing out through extremity of the paine of wounds, others gasping and dying and breathing out their last, ourselves beleaguered by the same bloodthirstie, and hemmed in by those who daily seek our lives, &c., &c.

If this, I say, were the case of the servants of the Lord in the Bays, their hearts would be effected, their eyes opened, and their hands enlarged to defend (not so much their lives and libertie, to say nothing of them) as the glorious Gospel of Christ, which hath shined amongst us hitherto and may doe yet, if it be not our owne fault,

And yet this may be the conditions of those pretious servants of the Lord up this river, we know not how soon, unless the Lord be pleased, as he hath done hitherto, and I hope he will make salvation unto them for walls and bulwarks round about. For hath not the Lord, in abundant mercy to them, kept the many hundreds of our enemies in a serious and furious beleaguering of us here, and restrained them from attempting anything there as yet, as they have upon ourselves, I see not how they could have bene preserved without a miracle.

And let not Boston, Roxburie, & c., thinke warre is farre enough from them, for this seems to be an universal deluge, creeping and encroaching on all the English in the land.

The multitudes of our enemies daily increase by

the falling Mohiginers, Nagnets (who lived not many miles from the Bay) Niantickus at Narrohiggonset, and their malice is not to be questioned, their cruelty divers of ours have felt. Their experience in warlike affaires (being men of warre from their youth), their advantage against us in agilitie and arms, their industrious sedulitie, plying and attending the warre against the English, as their mainest business, providing retreats at Long Island, fortifying upon the main, gathering new supplies of forces, confederating with former enemies, giving large rewards to those amongst them who are most skillful to destroy, (which we hear of from Plantations above, and they from Indians) doe farre exceed the preparations and provisions of the English against them, who yet have farre more cause to defend their lives and liberties and gospell, than such bloodthirstie wretches have to invade, destroy, and take away the same, and add to the former also this, that now the eyes of all the Indians in the country are upon the English, to see what they will doe; and all may be assured of this, that if some serious and verie speedie course, be not taken to tame the pride, and take down the insolencie of these now insulting Pequots, though with charge and loss, and damage for the present, we are like to have all the Indians in the country about our ears, and then there will be work enough, &c.

In all these respects and many more, I desire

it may be considered whither the serious and speedie prosecution of this warre, be not the greatest business, New England has, for it cannot be conceived that either building, planting, fishing, trading, colledges, &c., or in a word, if good of either church or Commonwealth can flourish and goe forward without a timely removing and preventing the warres that now begin; for these are but the beginnings of warres, the progress hath been something sad, what the issue will be the Lord He only knows. Now the Lord be pleased to raise up the publick spirits of his servants (and where they are not to create them) that every heart and hand may be striving and working in the case; for the strength and sinews of these warres I take to lye in the combined abilities and united hearts and heads of all the servants of the Lord, &c. (To omit that it cannot be expected that ever warres should prosper abroad if civill (nay, worse, religious) dissensions abound at home) yet all partaking in the good and benefit of peace and in the danger and damage of common Warre, should also be every way enlarged to their utmost, for the procuring and preserving the one, removing and preventing of the other.

Three places and precedents in scripture I onely make bould to present your worshipp with and so end. Judges, 20, 1, 2, 8. Ezra X, 3, 4. Hag II, Iv.

Hence may be collected this in brief that (after serious reconciliation with the Lord of Armies and Indians himself) it belongeth firstly and chiefly to you, the much

honored magistrates, that as you have hitherto not been wanting according as the Lord hath called.

So now you will arise, be serious, be speedie, be strong, and be courageous in the Lord, &c.

That also our much honored ministers and watchmen of the Lord will not be wanting to presse upon the conscience, charge as a duty, command in the name of the Lord from Heaven, the speedie prosecution of this warre.

That also all the people of the land should be seriously aroused to open their purses and enlarge their hands, offer their persons, &c., to doe what service they can to help the Lord against the mighty. And O, that the heavie curse of Meroch may never fall upon any of the Lord's, and again, O that the disposition of this bearer and others also lately come out of the Bay who are seriously affected with things here, &c., might runne through all the land, namely, they would willingly lay down half they have to serve this way, and yet less than halfe, a quarter, a tenth would doe that now which hereafter all the world cannot recover, &c.

But I fear I am too bold; I entreat you therefore, pardon my weakness, and consider the things, and tho' I, it may be am afraid to die, out men here fearful, melancholy, &c. Yet the Lord help all his servants to consider what his will and pleasure is in all these sad occurrences hitherto. He be pleased to councell and direct and bless from Heaven, all intended enterprises

in Jesus Christ, (in great haste) I rest,

Yours engaged in many bonds,

In all due service most devoted.

Jo; Higginson.

The necessitie of Mr. Dixes stay hath been very great hitherto. partly to fit our ordnance, partly to be a safeguard to us in respect of weakness and fewness of our number, &c. for ought I know his stay hath been the preservation of all of us, I hope it will be considered, &c.

This letter indicates that Anthony Dike was the bearer of this very urgent message for help and giving the news of the massacre of ten English men in Connecticut already and there were in all but two hundred and fifty men in the colony. The arguments of Higginson were just and right and the men of Connecticut River towns joined with those of the Fort at Saybrook under Captain Underhill, the whole under command of Captain John Mason to the number of seventy-seven Englishmen only, and although joined by several hundred friendly Indians of the Narraganssett, Mohigan and Niantic tribes, yet when the fighting came, the Englishmen were alone in it, but they won a great victory, captured the Indian Fort, practically annihilated the Pequot tribe. We may judge that Anthony Dike was in the war to the end, as a captain of a vessel to move the troops and supplies.

This John Higginson, the writer of this letter, was a son of the first pastor, Francis Higginson of the

was a son of the first pastor, Francis Higginson of the

This John Higginson, the writer of this letter,

treason and mutinies.

war to the end, as a captain of a vessel to move the

We may judge that Anthony Dike was in the

Pequot tribe.

story, captured the Indian fort, practically annihilated the

the Puritans were alone in it, but they won a great vic-

Mohigan and Niantic tribes, yet when the fighting came,

several hundred friendly Indians of the Narragansett,

with these of the Pequot at Saybrook under captain Underhill,

and right and the men of Connecticut River towns joined

already and there were in all but two hundred and fifty

news of the massacre of ten English men in Connecticut

bearer of this very urgent message for help and giving the

vation of all of us, I hope it will be considered, &c.

ber, &c. For ought I know his duty hath been the preser-

church at Salem, at which Dike and Conant attended.

This Rev. John died, 1708, aged 94, after a life of most distinguished activity in the Church.

At the time this letter was written Harry Vane was Governor of Massachusetts Day, and John Winthrop was Lieutenant Governor. Harry Vane came to Boston with Rev. Hugh Peter, 1635, who was afterwards pastor for several years of the Salem church. In 1636 Vane was elected Governor, but was defeated about this time for re-election. Indeed it was said that the Connecticut people were left to their own defence on account of the excitement of the election for Governor, the contest being between Vane and Winthrop. This caused much bitter feeling in Connecticut.

The letter following this, from Roger Williams, is one sent at this time from him by Anthony Dike as messenger. He had come from Saybrook Fort to Providence in his vessel and proceeded from there by land in haste to Boston, bearing these letters. The emergency was great, the life of the colony of Connecticut was at stake, and was only saved by the bravery of the men of that colony, and the soldiers at the Fort under Captain Underhill and Mason.

(See Bodg History of Pequot War.)

Indeed it was said that the Connecticut people were left to their own defense on account of the excitement of the election for Governor, the contest being between Vane and [illegible].

The letter following this, from Roger Williams, in one sent at this time from him by Anthony Dike on [illegible], he had come from Weybrook Fort to Providence in his vessel and proceeded from there by land in haste to Boston, bearing these letters. The emergency was great, the life of the colony of Connecticut was at stake, and was only saved at the last under Capt. Underhill and Mason.

(See Doty History of Pequot War.)

From the Winthrop papers in Volume 36 Massachusetts Historical Collection, page 189, a letter of Roger Williams to Henry Vane, Governor and John Winthrop, Deputy Governor, sometime before the 17th of May, 1637. A Winthrop was then elected Governor, just prior to the Pequot war: For his much honored Mr. Governor, or Mr. Deputy Governor, these with speede This last of the present week in the morning, Sir, Miantunnomu with a great traine arrived the same day that Anthony Dike departed hence with his sad tidings, and confirmeth with the most the report of Anthony. The Nanhiggonsicks are at present doubtful of realitie in all our premises; I have alleaged the best arguments I have heard, or could invent, to perswade realitie of purpose and speedie performance, as alsoe reasons of delay. Miantunnomu and his best councill here with him, have requested me earnestly to make this proffer to you. The Pequots are scarce of provisions and therefore (as usually so, now especially) they are in some numbers come down to the seaside (and two Islands there) to take sturgeon and other fish, as alsoe to make new fields of corn, in case the English should destroy their fields at home. Mia ntunnomu desires to go himself with one Wequash here at present with him, in this pinnace here left by Anthony Dike, or any other fleet should take him in at the Nanhiggonsick. He will put in 40 or 50 or more, as the vessell will stow. He will put in vitualles himselfe for his men.

he will direct the pinnace to the places, and in the night land his men, despoil them of their canooes, cut off the men he finds, (the greatest number being women and children, this for the most part he would not do), as allso spoile their fields; and this he proffers to doe, without landing an English man with whom he will remain aboard in English clothes, which he desires for himselfe. John, a seaman aboard, calls the island Plum Island and is very willing to go on the designe, and thinks as also Miantunnomu doth that if within 2 or 3 days they went forth, they would be here againe within 4 or 5 or less.

Sir! for myself I dare not advice; but if my thoughts be asked I shall (with all due submission) say this: it will at present wedge them in from any starting aside, untill your forces shall follow. If they speede it will weaken the enemie and distresse them, being put by their hopes; as allso much enrage the Pequots forever against them, a thing much desirable. Besides the charge or danger of the English will be known, unless Miantunnomu's coarse cloths and a large coate for Wequash, the Pequot guide, a man of great use

The Most Holy and only Wise be pleased to smile upon the face of the English that be his. (We have all if ever cause to examine ourselves, our errands and work in the face of Jesus Christ, while I write, a messenger is come to Miantunnomu from Nooepement, reporting a farr greater slaughter than that Anthony brought word of, and

since the former, a great number of the Plantations and some persons are mencioned, but I will not name either, but hope and long to hear it countermanded,

In case that Anthony or other seamen cannot be gotten suddenly, here is one with us willing to make up a third man (to the other two left with the Pinnace) to carrie the vessel, though I judge Anthony himself be fittest

Sir: Miantunnomu desired me to give you a hint that the 6 fathom of beads which he gave for the slaying of Audsah be repaid him, and sent now if it may be, his warres keepe him bare.

Your Worships unfeignedly respective,

Roger Williams.

For any gratuities or tokens Cannonicus desires sugar. Miantunnomu desires powder.

My humble respects to all my loving friends.

Sir: Miantunnomu is close in this his project and therefore I think the messenger is sent only the beades. It is very convenient that Miantunnomu's cloths, and Wequash his coat be sent by him.

NOTE: Read the history of the Pequot Wars by Vodge.. It will be seen that this Wequash was the guide, who finally led the English, but the Narragansetts did not fight. They were safe in the rear. This great fight and destruction of the Pequot tribe was on or about the 20th of May, soon afternthis letter was written. Anthony Dike probably had time to return to his vessel.

at Providence and participate in the conveyance of the English and their supplies during the War. It would appear in this transaction covered by these two letters of John Higginson and Roger Williams that Anthony Dike was despatched in his pinnace from the Fort at Saybrook to Providence, there left his pinnace and proceeded with despatch by land to Boston, to give an account of the massacres committed by the Pequod Indians in the Connecticut towns, and it is to be presumed that he immediately returned and was engaged with his pinnace in the war.

These letters also show the estimation in which he was held and are in line of proof of his historical existence.

Higginson's letter shows him as an expert ordnance officer, for although Lyon Gardner, the commander of the Fort was in charge, and with him was Captain Joh n Underhill, with some twenty soldiers as a garrison, yet we see they required the services of Anthony Dike to assist in placing the guns which he had brought from Boston in his pinnace when he came with Captain Hohn Underhill and his twenty soldiers to reinforce the garrison at Saybrook against the Pequot Indians. Captain Underhill wrote a history of this war which is extant and may be seen at the Massachusetts Historical Collection. He was an ancestor of Mr. Murray Boocock, husband of Miriam Dike. The Rev. John Higginson was his Chaplain, and in his letter Mhis last clause: "For aught I know, his stay hath been the

preservation of us all". This is certainly as strong as he could make it, for it involves all the Connecticut towns..

In the letter of Roger Williams he calls him Anthony Dike and Anthony, showing an intimacy. The fact is that for four years Roger Williams had been his pastor in Salem and the Rev. John Higginson was likewise from Salem.

The statement of Roger Clap, shows that Anthony Dike was master of a vessel and that he at that time, viz: 1632, had a knowledge of the way to Virginia, probably he had been for years in the coasting trade.

The way Higginson spells his name, as well as Roger Clap, shows that there were various ways, but Roger Williams spells it properly. He must have been a veteran soldier to have had a knowledge of how to place the ordnance at the fort, and like Captain Mason, Captain Underhill and Captain Gardner, who were all veteran soldiers of the wars in the low countries, so he probably had been also.

The writer saw at the British Museum a number of great volumes of accounts of John Dike, Treasurer of the Duke of Buckingham, who, as Lord High Admiral of England, enjoyed a monopoly of all prizes and seizures at sea, and John Dike had charge of their confiscation and sale.

This John Dike, at this period, say from 1620 to 1638, was a stockholder in many adventuring and colonization companies, particularly the Bermuda Company, and being a man of importance in sea affairs might have had this

kinsman, Anthony Dike, for instance, with whom he took an interest in the early plantations of Nantasket and Cape Ann. However, the name of Dike at that time was not rare in England. The writer saw many ancient gravestones of this family at Stratford Churchyard, and as is well known, several important families in England boast of that ancestral name as most ancient, and it enjoys in many instances coat armour.

In Volume 1, page 345 of Winthrop's History of New England, is this entry by Governor Winthrop in his journal: "Anthony Dick, in a barque of thirty tons, was cast away upon the head of Cape Cod. Three were starved to death with the cold; the other two got some fire and so lived there, by such food as they saved, for seven weeks, till an Indian found them, the writer walked along the shore of Cape Cod at the extreme end, which is known as the ship's graveyard. At the time he was there, a severe storm threw seven different vessels ashore and all were destroyed. At Provincetown, nearby, the Pilgrims of the Mayflower first landed, and at that place a bronze tablet sets forth the compact of the Mayflower made there in that harbor and the names of the signers are graven on the tablet.

The writer has been careful to write out in full the various historical entries of Anthony Dike, who came in the Ann, 1623, for, strange as it may appear, this

record of the real Anthony Dike appears to have been lost to his descendants and although the writer has seen many genneological sketches in different local histories yet in not a single one have they reached the real first ancestor, this Anthony Dike.

The Bridgewater family in the old Colony have a Scotchman for their ancestor. In the Sutton History, claiming only Anthony II of Salem and Ipswich and the Portland family going to the same Anthony II.

The Westminster History of Colonel Nicholas Dike of the Revolution, refer only to his ancestor of Beverly, Mass. All seem to fall short of this real Anthony, who made so much of early history and acted so bravely his part, that the sands of Cape Cod shall not hide his history even though they may have his bones in their charge..

To return to the genealogy of Anthony Dike I and wife Mehitha, we continue that of Marjory, wife of Anthony Dike Sr. 2, and the names of the children follow:

Anthony Dike III; born 24th March, 1666.

Nathaniel Dike III, born 10th month, 1667.

Marjory Dike III, 16 day of 6th month, 1669.

Johnathan Dike, III, born 28th of March 1625.

Mary Dike III, born 1675;

married Bethia Baker.

Benjamin Dike III, born 22nd of 2nd month,1679-80

Charity Dike III, who married John Alford, of

Salem and removed to New London,

was called by Miss Calkins in her history of New London, Colonel Alford. H. F. Waters, the genealogist added this name of Charity to to Anthony Dike's list of children, and Waters was a careful genealogist and an editor of New England Genealogical Register.

Of these children of Anthony II, Anthony III married Sarah Davison, born March 30th, 1660, daughter of Daniel Davison of Ipswich, of whose descendant Dorothy Davison, wife of Sergeant Thomas Dike, of Thompson, Connecticut, more is written elsewhere.

This Anthony III, amont other children had Anthony IV, who married Abigail Williams, June 19th, 1719, and had Samuel V, who married a daughter of his guardian, Samuel Perkind, 1748, and removed to Bridgewater, Massachusetts, in Old Plymouth Colony, and founded a line there of the Dike family (See Davis Landmarks of Plymouth.) which contain a considerable genealogical series under that name, in which they allege that the ancestor came from Scotland.

Nathaniel Dike III of your line, second son of Anthony II, was a cord wainer and lived at the hamlet, Ipswich, now called Hamilton. He married two wives, Hanna, and Mary, one of them being a Thompson, perhaps both. They lived at Ispwich. His wife, Thompson was probably a daughter of Simon Thompson, of Ipswich, 1636, who was botn 1610. 1656 he married a second wife,

Rachael Clover, and at death in his will, mentions no sons, but seven daughters, among them Sarah, who married Abraham Fitts, who was executor, and one of whose children will appear in another place in marriage with a daughter Mary, second child of Nathaniel Dike III, and perhaps Mary Thompson, his wife, as stated. She married Robert Fitts of Ipswich, perhaps her first cousin and son of Abraham Fitts, who married Sarah Thompson, her aunt.

Rachael Clover, second wife of Simon Thompson may have been a daughter of Charles Clover, of Gloucester, who came to Salem, 1653, but Savage makes no mention of her in his dictionary.

From the History of Sutton, Mass., by Benedict, the list of children of Nathaniel Dike III and his wife, probably Mary Thompson:-

1. Nathaniel IV, married in Ipswich, but removed to Sutton, appears at Sutton as Junior.

2. Mary IV married perhaps her first cousin, as stated, Robert Fitts, of Ipswich.

3. Sarah IV, married William Sibley of Salem.

4. Martha, married Samuel Sibley, of Salem. These were grandsons of John Sibley, of Salem, who came with Higginson, to Salem, 1629.

5. IV, married a Waite.

6. Daniel, married Mary Witt, of Marlboro, descendant of another Salem family.

They had eight children. A list of them may be seen in Benedict's History of Sutton, Mass., also of their descendants.

7. Ebenezer IV removed to Vermont.

8. Benjamin IV, removed to Thompson, Conn.

9. James IV, youngest child of Nathaniel III, and your ancestor, removed to Thompson, Conn.

Nathaniel Dike III removed with these children before mentioned from Ipswich, Mass., to Sutton, Mass. about 1720 or 1721.

In addition to the mention of Ebenezer, who removed to Vermont, the History of Woodstock, Vermont, says he was the first settler there. A man of education, superior to his neighbors and was employed by the Colony of New York, to make the first census in 1770, at a time when New York claimed that territory. Ten heads of families were then reported by him. He left descendants there, but the name is no longer known, in the male line at least. The historical mention in Sutton, of Nathaniel Dike III reads: from 1721 in church organization, and he continued in church and town committees continuously, and mention is made as member of the Grand Jury, of Worcester.

In 1724, he and Nathaniel IV, his son, signed a protest on some local matter. 1733--1735 treasurer of the church. 1738 mention is made of his son, Daniel, who had special privileges in a seat in church.

7. Ebenezer IV removed to Vermont.

8. Benjamin IV. removed to Thompson, Conn.

9. James IV, youngest child of Nathaniel III, and your ancestor, removed to Thompson, Conn.

Nathaniel Dike III removed with those children before mentioned from Ipswich, Mass., to Dutton, Mass., [illegible] or 1751.

In addition to the mention of Ebenezer, who removed to Vermont, the History of Woodstock, Vermont, says he was the first settler there. A man of education, superior to his neighbors and was employed by the Colony of New York, to make the first census in 1770, at a time when New York claimed that territory. Von Hoeda of Tom- [illegible] were then reported by him. He left descendants there, but the name is no longer known, in the male line at least. The historical mention in Dutton, of Nathaniel Dike III reads: from 1721 in church organization, and he continued in church and town committees constantly, and mention is made as member of the grand Jury, or Worcester.

In 1754, he and Nathaniel IV, him son, signed a [illegible] on note local matter. 1745--1750 treasurer of the church. 1758 mention is made of his son, Daniel, who received spacial privileges in a seat in church.

In 1740, the Rev. Mr. Hall mentions a plague at Sutton. Nineteen die of it. It is about this time that Benjamin IV and James IV remove to Thompson, Conn.

Another son of Anthony Dike No. 2, namely Benjamin III, brother of Nathaniel III, of Sutton. Banjamin was born 1679/80, married Ann Lucas, and settled in Beverly, Mass., founding a line of the Dike family there. He was slain by Indians, at Cape Sable, Nova Scotia, 1713. His grandson was that Colonel Nicholas Dike, of Westminster, Mass., who so distinguished himself in the Revolutionary War. Thus Colonel Nicholas Dike, of Westminster, and Sergeant Thomas Dike, of the Revolution were second cousins. The number of men who served during the Revolutionary War in the line of the female descendants has not been attempted, but there were about thirty of that name in Massachusetts and four in Connecticut, who appear in the Revolutionary lists, see Massachusetts and Connecticut records of leading Revolutionary soldiers..

James Dike IV, who removed about 1740 from Sutton to Killingly, Conn., the name by which Thompson was then known, married Mary Harramore, daughter of Samuel Harramore, who deeded to him the farm on which he died, July 1st, 1792.

Of the ancestry of Samuel Harramore, the writer knows nothing, further than that Samuel Harramore, the father, appears at Thompson as one of the early settlers

Of the ancestry of James Barrymore, the writer
can know little more than that he came from Ashton-
under-Lyne, and became a prosperous manufacturer of
cotton and flax in Connecticut, who suffered in the Revolution-
ary times, but whose whole history of that name in Massachu-
setts and Connecticut has not been attempt-
ed, but there were three sisters of that name in Wenham
in the time of the Tennis dancemaster has not been attempt-
ed.

The number of men who served during the Revolutionary War
was eighty-four. Three Colonel Nicholas Dike, of Wenhamster,
Ver. Three Colonel Nicholas Dike, of Wenhamster, and
man., who so distinguished himself in the Revolutionary
The grandson was first Colonel Nicholas Dike, of Wenhamster,
was slain by Indians, at Cape Sable, Nova Scotia, 1718.
was born 1679/80, married Ann Lucas, and settled in Beverly,

IV and James IV remove to Thompson, Conn.

and was a member of the church. Is mentioned in church and civil affairs occasionally. Probably the family of Narramore is descended from that Thomas Narramore, of Dorchester, 1664, removed to Boston, where wife, Hannah, joined the church, 1681, they had children, Hanna, 1671, Sarah, 1672, James, 1674, and John, 1676.
Savage says he probably removed to New Hampshire, as he prayed for the jurisdiction of Massachusetts, in a petition of 1690. It is likely that this Samuel of Thompson is his grandson. Of that the writer is not certain. Here is a faulty line of ancestry, which cannot be said of any other.

James Dike IV appears in the history of Miss Larned, of Wyndham County, as a deacon in the church, and as a man who was an occasional preacher, in addition to his duties as a deacon, and it appears he had a license so to do. He was of the methodist persuasion. His name is found on many committees of the church and of the town, and in charge of the poor of the county, and on the Committee of Highways.

By his wife, Mary Narramore, he had several children, three of whom were soldiers in the Revolution. Their record and the names of his children will follow elsewhere. The names of the sons that served in the Revolution were Nathaniel and Thomas who served in the Lexington Alarm, 1775, then Sergeant Thomas and his brother

Samuel were in General Wadsworth Brigade, 1776, in the campaign at Long Island and New York, under Major General Putnam. Their regiments were engaged at Battle Pass, in what is now Prospect Park, Brooklyn. They barely escaped being captured in the retreat from Long Island; were engaged in the various actions on New York Island, at Harlem Heights, first where Columbia University now stands, and second, at about where Trinity Cemetery now stands. At this time the Captain died of exhaustion, Samuel was taken with the fever and died later.

Sergeant Thomas Dike V, son of James Dike IV was born and died in Thompson, Conn., on the farm where he was born. The record of his children will follow elsewhere. He was not only a sergeant in the war, but was also a deacon in the church, as his father had been before him, and was much employed in town affairs. He married 11th of December, 1776, Dorothy Davison, born 1756, a daughter of deacon Joseph Davison, who was a son of Peter Davison, who was a son of Daniel Davison, of Ipswich, Mass., a captain in the ancient and Honorable Artillery Company of Boston, Major of the Regiment, and a merchant of ability.

Peter Davison, his son, appears to have married Ann Morgan, perhaps of Salem.

The ancestry of Dorothy Davison is as follows:-

The ancestry of Dorothy Davison is as follows:-

Ancestry of Dorothy Davison, wife of Sergeant Thomas Dike, V.

This very interesting genealogical sketch of the Davison family is founded on Savage's Genealogical Dictionary, supplemented by a very beautifully edited volume of 600 pages by Hinckman, A History and Genealogy of Nantucket, in which the genealogies, wills and much other historical matter is given in extenso, showing very interesting relationships with the poet Whittier, Professor Miss Maria Mitchell, Lucretia Mott, the eminent quakeress and a multitude of people of note, who have descended from the Nantucket ancestry as shown in the Hinckman volume.

Savage says, Peter Coffin, Dover, merchant, eldest son of Tristram Coffin, born at Brixton, near Plymouth, County of Devon, England, 1605. Peter was born in England, 1631. He married Abigail, daughter of Howard Starbuck, and had Abigail, born 20th of October, 1657, who married Daniel Davison, of Ipswich, Mass., son of Nicholas Davison of Newbury, 1679. They had five children. He was a man of note, says Savage, and of the Artillery Company, 1672, etc.

His father, Nicholas Davison, was one of the chief agents of Governor Matthew Craddock, the first Governor of Massachusetts Bay colony, the greatest benefactory of it and the greatest trader in the early days of New England. This Nicholas Davison, by his wife, Johanna [illegible], had

a son Daniel here mentioned Nicholas Davison was constantly travelling to England and back, during the entire period of the Civil War. He died, 1664, leaving a large estate. This Johanna Hodges was probably daughter of John Hodges, of Salisbury, England, an early settler, who returned in the Civil War, 1647.

Edward Starbuck, Dover, 1640, came from Derbyshire and married Eunice Reynolds of Wales, and had a number of children, among them, Abigail, who married Peter Coffin and became mother of that Abigail Coffin, who married Daniel Davison of Ipswich, Mass.

Peter Coffin was a man of note, he was a Lieutenant in the Philip War, 1675/6; was representative 1672/3 Judge of the Supreme Court, and died at Exeter, N. H., 1715. His son Peter, married Elizabeth Starbuck. Robert, another son was a Captain in the French War, 1708.

Tristram Coffin, father of Peter, came to New England, 1642. He was born as said, at Brixton, near Plymouth, Devonshire, 1605. He was son of Peter and Dionis Stevens, he brought his mother with him to New England. She died 1661, aged 77, and with him came two sisters, Mrs. Fuller and Mrs. Adams, from Boston. He was a magistrate, and in 1660, he, his mother, and most of his children removed with Edward Starbuck, his families and others, all being Baptists and suffering from their faith in Massachusetts. They obtained a grant of the Island of

in Massachusetts. They obtained a grant of the Island of
others, all being Baptists and suffering from their fai-
a registered, and in 1660, he, his mother, and most of his
tors, Mrs. Hutter and Mrs. Adams, from Boston. He was
land. She died 1661, aged 77, and with her came two sis-
Dionis Stevens, he brought his mother with him to New Eng-
Plymouth, Devonshire, 1605. He was son of Peter and
England, 1582. He was born as said, at Brixton, near

Tristram Coffin, father of Peter, came to New
Robert, another son was a Captain in the French War, 1708.
1710. His son Peter, married Elizabeth Sturbuck.
Judge of the Supreme Court, and died at Exeter, N. H.,

Peter Coffin was a man of note, he was a Lieuten-
ant in the Philip War, 1675-6; was representative 1672-3
Daniel Davison of Ipswich, Mass.

and become mother of, Mrs. Abigail Coffin, who married
of children, among them, Abigail, who married Peter Coffin
nive and married Eunice Reynolds of Weiss, who had a number

returned in the Civil War, 1634.
John Hodges, of Salisbury, England, an early settler, who

period of the Civil War. He died, 1684, leaving a large

of Nantucket, from Sir Ferdinando Gorges and William Alexander, the Earl of Sterling, through Thomas Mayhew, the agent of these noblemen in this country. This Island had a change of jurisdiction about this time; it came under the Colony of New York, hence their religious troubles were over.

Hinchman's History of Nantucket shows that these families intermarried and married with many of your kin of the Cape and of Plymouth Colony, and in the very carefully written genealogical lines in that volume, should you be so fortunate as to see one, you will be able, at a glance, to find those descendants of the Island and of the mainland, with whom you are kinsmen. The historical matter in Hinchman is of interest, as it embraces wills in England and other documentary evidence connecting the families in America with the families in England., as also a full and complete history of the Island itself. A most delightful volume, beautifully bound, well executed in every respect. And, as by your descent from Dorothy Davison, wife of Sergeant Thomas Dike V, you should be interested in this. In this kin, although they be quakers many of them, yet they are quakers who have made their mark in the history and civilization of the country.

The ancestry of the wife of Joseph Davison and of Peter Davison, two intermediate links of descent from Daniel Davison, of Ipswich, to Dorothy Davison, of Thompson,

Daniel Davison, of Ipswich, to Dorothy Davison, of Thompson,

The ancestry of the wife of Joseph Davison and

in the history and civilization of the country.

many of them, yet they are quakers who have made their mark

interested in this. In this kin, although they be quakers

Davison, wife of Covenant Thomas Dike V, you should be

every respect. And, as by your descent from Dorothy

delightful volume, beautifully bound, well executed in

full and complete his story of the Island family. A most

tion in America with the families in England, as also a

ter in Nineteen is of interest, as it embraces wills in

mainland, with whom you are kinsmen. The historical mat-

find those descendants of the Island and of the name

fortunate as to see one, you will be able, at a glance, to

written genealogical lines in that volume, should you be no

the Colony of New York, hence their religious troubles

Conn., the writer has not inquired into. Lack of time has made it impossible to do so, although the wives of these two men might possible have as interesting a descent as the foregoing, which includes the names of Starbuck, Coffin, Davison, Hodges, etc.

Elsewhere in this history, when we arrive at the families of Thatcher and Gorham, at Yarmouth and Barnstable, we shall find considerable intermarriage between the people of Nantucket and the people of Cape Cod, which will bring in a second line of kinship between you and the people of Nantucket, as may be seen in Hinckman's History more extensively, and which will be mentioned later, in Gorham and Thatcher.

Sergeant Thomas Dike V, by wife Dorothy Davison had several children, a list of them will follow in a sketch taken from a communication from Miss Barnes, the historian of Wyndham County, who has been so kind as to furnish the writer with this information.

From the Revolutionary record we are enabled to give the Brigade and Regiment in which Sergeant Thomas Dike served. His Colonel was Hage. Colonel Hage's Regiment; Lieut. Colonel Charles Russell. This Charles Russell appears to have been an adjutant in the same regiment with Captain Ebenezer Jencks, whom he died at Lake George in 1758. Lieut. Colonel Russell's wife, was a sister of Phineas Stanton I. The record of this Charles Russell during the Revolutionary War was very brilliant and he

From the Revolutionary record we are enabled to give the Brigade and Regiment in which Sargeant Thomas Dike and Samuel his brother served; his Colonel was Sage, his Lieutenant-Colonel Giles Russell . A name mentioned in the Rhode Island record of the French and Indian War 1754-63 Charles Russell was adjutant of the Rhode Island Regiment in which served Captain Jeremiah Jenks at the time of his death at Lake George 1756. He married a sister of Captain Phinias Stanton's wife, and Captain Stanton was executor of his will when he died 1778, As we shall show on page 66, with the additional record of Sargeant Thomas Dike. The blending of service in the French and Indian war and the Revolutionary War induces at this point a combination record of all ancestry during the several wars namely the Pequot War the Phillip War the French and Indian Wars, as well as the Revolutionary War. The record of Captain Anthony Dike in the Pequot has been given extensively already in the Dike ancestry. But in the Phillip War no record of Dike appears save only that mentioned as a [illegible] case of Daniel Dyke. The Revolutionary record of the family of Dike has been given also in the Dike ancestry by itself. From Bodge's History of the Phillip War we obtain a general knowledge of the ancestral records of the different men in whom you are interested. The name of Daniel Davison appears as in the Bodge History as Commissary of the Garrison at Marlboro, Mass. 1675 - 6 Later in life Daniel Davison was Major of the Essex County regiment. Or in other words his commander. At that time also his brother-in-law Joseph Lynde appears as Lieut. Colonel of the Middlesex

County Regiment, and he was sent 1676 against the Indians to the Northward. In the War of the Revolution the Davison family of both Mass. & Conn. served prominently; but your immediate ancestor Joseph Davison died 1777. However, three of his sons served in the Revolution. In the Phillip War the service of the Ballard family appears under the name of William Ballard and also of his son Nathaniel Ballard. Both of them ancestors of your line. Nathaniel Ballard served in the troop of Cavalry under Captain Thomas Prentice. In the winter campaign against the Narragansett tribe 1675 -76 and in the Battle called the "Great Swamp Fight". The son of Nathaniel, your ancestor William Ballard received a grant of land 1728 in recognition of that service. In the French and Indian War Zaccheus Ballard served 1748-49. He had also a credit of two separate services during the Revolution. First in the Company of Captain Jeremiah Kingsbury in Colonel Jonathan Holman's Regiment - one month and thirteen days payroll Providence January 30, 1777. The second service was for more than three years in the fourth regiment of the Continental Army in Captain William Weeks's Company of Colonel William Shepperd' Regiment, From March 5, 1777 to April 30th 1780 , and of the name of Ballard there appeared 73 different services during that war, but many of these were probably duplicate services.

The Jenks family of Rhode Island, suffered severely during the Phillip War from the fact that all their property at Pawtucket was utterly destroyed. Another record which is interesting in the Phillips War is the service of your ancestor

Mr. Simon Lind in Captain James Olliver's Company in the "Great Swamp Fight" December 19th - 1675. The only name of that Company mentioned with the prefix of respects Mr. is that of Simon Lind which is worthy of remark.

In the Philip War the ancestors of Dorothy Davison under the name of James Morgan, Joseph Morgan, his son, Thomas Blake Park, are mentioned in Hodge as receiving grants of land in the year 1696 for their service in the Massachusetts Philip War.

The ancestry record of the Junks family during the revolution in your line has been abundantly shown in the name of Colonel Ebenezer Junks who rose from ensign in 1775 to Col. of his regiment in 1778 in which position he continued until the termination of that war. Also in Thompson, Conn. may be seen a monument recently erected to the memory of

Zaccheus Ballard,

4th Massachusetts Regiment,

1750 ------ 1800

Elizabeth Valentine,

his wife,

1759------- 1807

In the Plymouth Colony ancestry the service of every able bodied man may be taken as granted from the fact that the War commenced in that colony and ended there, and it may be said that from the opening day until the end every able bodied man was under arms. The massacre of the family of Thomas Clark at Fall River during that War in addition to other atrocities committed by the savages upon the families of their former neighbors angered the inhabitants to such an extent

that when the Indian Chief Tuspaquin or the Black Sachem who lived where Middleboro now is, and whose treachery caused so much sorrow and his fellow Sachem, Totenon they were executed by the people at Plymouth and the son and wife of King Phillip with many other indians were sold to slavery at the Bermudas, where their descendents are to be found at this day.

The colony of Conn. only gave grants of land in the Phillips War to those who served as volunteers. Impressed men and Indians were not granted land. But in the colony of Mass. Bay both impressed men and volunteers received grants of land. These grants may be seen in Hodge History of that War as the grant appears there to the name of Robert Park, and as he was dead at the time of the Phillip War it seems to show that he participated in the Pequot War, although the record of those who served in the Pequot War is fragmentary and uncertain. The record of Sargent Thomas Dike V, is abundantly shown in the History of Windham County Conn. written by Miss Larned, who has been so kind as to furnish the writer with such information, as well as a record of his list of children and from that history has been obtained the service of the regiment in which he served in the year of 1776 - 777. The mention of Lieut. Col. Giles Russell recalls the fact of his eminent services not only in the French and Indian War in a Rhode Island Regiment but as well as his service in the Revolutionary War especially during the campaign ensuing after the battle of Brandywine, in which service on the Delaware River he lost his health utterly and he

died in 1779 from exhaustion and wounds and his body is buried beside his wife, in Stonington, Conn.

In the Fifth Company of this regiment under Captain Stephen Crosby, who died on the retreat, then under Captain John Green, served Sergeant Thomas Dike and Samuel Dike, his brother.

In Larned's History of Windham County, Sergeant's Thomas Dike's letters are included as historical matter. On page 166, as follows; Thomas Dike writes:-

"The British Regulars landed on the Island of New York, both on the North and East Rivers, on Sabbath Day morning, and Putnam's Division was forced to make a hasty retreat. Many Wyndham County men were slain, taken, or died of wounds or exposure. Captain Stephen Crosby, of Thompson, being over hot, went into a house, drank cold water, and died immediately. Lieutenant Buck was either killed or taken and other killingly men.

Exhausted by hurried flight, chilled by a severe shower and sudden change of temperature their hearts sank within them, by the loss of artillery, Baggage and works, in which they had been taught to put a great trust, they lay upon their arms covered only by the canopy of an uncomfortable sky.

Knowlton's Rangersstole around the rear of the enemy. He had previously assaulted them on the front with the loss of ten men. Major Leitch, of Virginia was wounded, and Colonel Knowlton mortally, at this time.

He was carried to the rear by Sergeant Nehimiah Holt and General Reed. Knowlton's death and the attack mentioned as the Battle of Harlem Heights is remembered in New York by tablets, one on Columbia University building and another at One Hundred and Fiftieth Street and Broadway. Battle Pass in Prospect is remembered by a tablet on the main road in that Park.

Putnam, Knowlton and Nathan Hale were all members of Connecticut Batallions and from Wyndham County. Wadsworth's Brigade was in retreat from New York and participated in the Battle of White Plains, October 28th, 1776 and in the New Jersey campaign, later. Their time of service expired on the 25th of December, 1776. Colonel Knowlton left eight children. Captain Crosby left six children.

On page 168 of the History of Wyndham County is another letter of Sergeant Thomas Dike, written to his parents, which mentions that his brother Samuel is missing.:

"The last account I had of him he was sick and in the hospital. came that day up to the Regiment, but being weak could not travel any further, and several of the company told me that there carriages provided to carry the sick that could not travel over to the Jersey side, among whom was Sergeant Jessie Larned, who is since dead; Amos Green; Samuel Dike, and many others.

Colonel Williams' Regiment,(11th Malitia) is ordered off to the Jersey side, and we expect to go from

here to-day. It is very sickly among the militia. William Smith, and Ebenezer Nichols, we left behind. Solomon Smith and John Barrett must remain here or turn back. The Lord be merciful to us all, for we have got where the inhabitants show no pity. I beg your prayers for me, that I may be preserved from sin, sickness, and sword, and be soon returned to my family and friends. Remember me to Mr. Howard and his wife. Tell them that I have not heard from their brothers. Tell my little children I long to see them, but when I shall I cannot tell. It is all confusion here".

Dated Westchester, September the 20th, 1776.

This Sergeant Thomas Dike, was your ancestor, and any of you who, at any time desire proof, of his service, can get it by writing to the Adjutant General of the State of Connecticut at Hartford, for a certificate of service, for which the Adjutant General generally charges one dollar.

This Captain Nathan Hale mentioned, has a monument in New York City Hall Park. General Putnam's pluck and energy and Knowlton's sad death made the record of Windham County men in the campaign of 1776 in New York memorable.

Captain Crosby who died, and was Captain of the Fifth Company, in which the two Dike brothers marched forth, may have been an ancestor of that Crosby after whom the name of Camden Crosby came into the family.

To show how young the soldiers served in the War of the Revolution the records of some thirty of the name of

in the State of Massachusetts show that youths at the age of twelve and thirteen served. In Colonel Nicholas Dike's Regiment from Westminster, Mass., were three of the name of Nicholas Dike, which were probably his son and grandson. A long genealogical record may be found in Westminster of the history of that branch of the family.

Among the names of Dikes who served in the Revolution, appear the following:-

Anthony Dike, of Bridgewater, in General John Thomas' Regiment.

Another Anthony Dike served in Colonel Nelman's Regiment.

Again Anthony Dike served in Major Carey's Regiment.

Archelaus Dike enlisted for three years.

Benjamin Dike, of Sutton. In Colonel Larned's Regt.

Benjamin Dike of Tyringham; had a long service of five years in all.

Daniel Dike of Sutton; served in Colonel Larned's Regiment.

Another Daniel Dike; served in Colonel Nicholas Dike's Regiment, in Captain Richardson's Company.

Daniel Dike, Sr., of Sutton, served in the Ninth Regiment of the Continental Army.

Daniel Dike, Jr., of Pittsfield. In the Artillery. Is the son of the previous Daniel.

Ezekiel Dike, of Hallowell.

Hercules Dike, Tewksbury.

John Dike, of Athol.

John Dike of Billerica.

John Dike from Colonel Spooner's Regiment.

Johnathan Dike of Tyringham. Served an enlistment of five years altogether.

Nicholas Dike, Westminster. Colonel.

Nicholas Dike, Jr., in his father's Regiment.

Nicholas Dike III, in the same Regiment.

Another Nicholas Dike, in Colonel Cushing's Regiment.

Rubin Dike, from Northfield.

William Dike, of Beverly.

William Dike, of Royalton.

William Dike, in Colonel Glover's Regiment.

William Dike, in Colonel Sparhawk's Regiment.

In all thirty-two records appear in the Revolution. There were but four from Connexticut. Three were sons of James Dike IV and a Gideon Dike, who served also in Colonel Wadsworth's Brigade.

And, as mentioned, no attempt has been made to include the names of those of female descent.

This record is an eminently patriotic one and reflects credit on the name.

Joseph Dike, VI and Wife, Alice Ballard Dike, had five children; three sons and two daughters, namely, Albyn Ballantyne VII, who married Phoebe Ann Prince, Arba Ballard VII, who married Ann Eliza Hetherington. Joseph Appleton, Ataresta, a daughter, married Talcott Crosby, Her sister Rhoda married Myman R. Joslin. The three sons removed to Providence, R. I., and married there. The marriage of Albin Valentin Dike to Phoebe Ann Prince will appear later.

Arba Ballard Dike married in Providence, Ann Eliza Hetherington and left a large family of children. She was a daughter of Mary Armington, who married Captain Abel Brewster Hetherington. She had but one sister, Charlotte Jenckes Hetherington, who married Charles Pond. These two were the only children.

The Armington family were of Rehoboth for several generations. See Arnold's Vital Statistics. The Brewster in Captain Hetherington's name indicates Plymouth ancestry.

The fact that Rhoda Dike, who married Lyman R. Joslyn, had a son, named Joseph Appleton Joslyn, seems to indicate a descent from the eminent Appleton family of Ipswich, Mass., but of that the writer has not examined further.

The Valentine, in Albyn Valentine's Dike's name, comes in through his mother, who had kinsmen of that name. The Ballard, in Alba Ballard, is in honor of his mother.

Joseph Dike, VI and Vita, Alice Bellard Dike, had
Bellamyne VII, who married Phoebe Ann Prince, Arba Bellard
VII, who married Ann Miles Washington. Joseph Appleton,
Absereta, a daughter, married Talcott Crosby, Her eldest
Thoda married Hyman P. Joslin. The three sons removed
to Providence, R. I., and married there. The marriage of
Albin Valentine Dix to Phoebe Ann Prince will appear later.

Arba Bellard Dike married in Providence, Ann
Miles Washington and left a large family of children.

There two were the only children.

The Arlington family were of Rehoboth for several

The fact that Thoda Dike, who married Hyman P.
Joslin, had a son, named Joseph Appleton Joslin, seems to
[illegible] account from the eminent Appleton family of
[illegible], but of that the writer has not examined
[illegible].

The Valentine, in Albyn Valentine's name,
seems in through his mother, who had intimation of that name.
The Bellard, in Alice Bellard, is in honor of his mother.

Ancestry of Alice Ballard, of Thompson, Conn., wife of Joseph Dike VI. This ancestry is of importance, as it returns to the same head as the ancestry of Esther Ballard, who will appear in the Genealogy of the Jenckes family as the ancestress of that family.

Thus, William Ballard of Lynn, appears twice as your ancestor, in two differentelines of descent which culminated in Providence, R. I., by the marriage there of Albin Valentine Dike, representing one line and Phoebe Ann Prince, representing another line, from the same ancestral William Ballard, of Lynn, Mass.

Savage Genealogical Dictionary says of him: "Came in the James; wife of Elizabeth; he aged 32; she aged 26, their children were, Esther, aged 2; John, aged 1.

He lived for some time at Newbury, but fixed at Andover. He was of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, of Boston, and died 10th of July, 1689.

There was a previous William Ballard, who died 1646, and is supposed to have been the father of this William Ballard, and arrived previously to Dike, which would make this William Ballard; William Ballard II.

The Esther Ballard, who came in 1635, with her father, in 1655 married Joseph Jenckes II, of Lynn, later of Pawtucket, and ancestor of all the Jenckes of Rhode Island.

Temple, in his History of Framingham, takes up the main Ballard line, which terminates as far as this history is concerned, in Alice Ballard, born June 25, 177?

sister of Lynde Ballard, who was born May 15th, 1774 and settled at Thompson, Conn., where his father removed from Framingham, Mass.

We return to Lynn, Mass. In Lewis' History of Lynn, Nathaniel Ballard appears as a son of William Ballard II and the grandson of William Ballard I., and a brother of Esther Ballard, just mentioned, who married Joseph Jenckes II. This Nathaniel Ballard resided at Lynn, and died there January 1721/2.. He married there December 16th, 1662, Rebeckah Hudson, daughter of Thomas Hudson, of Lynn, 1637, who had Johnathan and other children whose names are not given. She, Rebecka Hudson, Ballard died May 16th, 1724, at Lynn. They had nine children; among them, William Ballard IV, named for his grandfather and great grandfather. He was born at Lynn April 23d, 1686.

Thomas Hudson, father of this Rebeckah was a farmer and lived in the Western side of the Saugus River. He owned the land whereon the iron works were situated, part of which he sold. The descendants of his son Johnathan remain to-day owners of this property.

Lewis says, in his History of Lynn, and he appears to be a descendant of this Thomas Hudson, that has of the same Hudson family, as Henry Hudson, or Hendrick Hudson, the discoverer of Hudson's River, in 1609.

So, when the 300th Anniversary of that event takes place in New York, the descendants of this Thomas Hudson should bear in mind their kinsman.

William Ballard IV, bought June 27th, 1707, Sixty acres of land on the Sudbury River, Framingham, Mass, which he probably removed after his marriage to Deborah Ivory, of Lynn, October 17th, 1721. He had twelve children by two wives, Zachius Ballard V was his tenth child, was robably born at Framingham, of the second wife, Deborah Ivory, who was a descendant of Thomas Ivory who came to Lynn, 1638. He died 18th of July, 1690. His wife's name was Ann, and he had daughters, Lois, Ruth and Sarah, and two sons, Thomas and John. His daughter Lois Ivory, married 10th of May, 1654, John Burrill, and was the "favored" mother of Hon. John Burrill, the "beloved speaker" and the Hon. Ebeneezer Burrill, his brother. These quotation marks come from Hutchinson's History of New England, who speaks in the highest terms of the wonderful popularity and personal magnetism of the Hon. John Burrill, more than a score of years Speaker of the House of Representatives of the State of Massachusetts.

This family of Burrills, descended from Lois Ivory are mentioned in Newhall's History of Lynn in the very highest terms. Sarah, a sister of Lois Ivory, became ancestor to the famous Pickering family of Salem, among whom was Timothy Pickering, who, during the Revolutionary period and the early constitutional period, was the tried friend of General Washington and President Washington. He, writing to an Ebenezer Burrill, of New York, 1803 says: "My maternal grandmother was Sarah Burrill, of Lynn."

One of whose brothers, John, born 1658, died 1721, was one of the most eminent men in the Colony of Massachusetts Bay. He was of His Majesty's Council, a judge who served in all the courts of the time. His brother, Hon. Ebenezer Burrill, 1679/1761 was a younger brother of the beloved speaker. His brother married General Mansfield, another of his descendants was eminent in Rhode Island as the Hon. James Burrill, Chief Justice, 1816 and United States Senator for the State of Rhode Island and died in Washington, 1820.

The wife of the Hon. Henry Wheaton, LLD, was his sister. In fact the historian of Lynn says no family has brought as much honor on Lynn as that descended from Lois Ivory and her husband, Lieutenant John Burrill.

As this William Ballard IV, born at Lynn, married her sister, Deborah, 1721, the same year that her famous nephew, the Hon. John Burrill, died, her station in life as a relative of such an eminent man indicates that William Ballard was in a like social position. He was, after his removal to Framingham, Mass., a Selectman there, 1728--1736, and held various honorable offices and died at an advanced age, [illegible] October 5th, 1771, in his eighty-sixth year.

Mr. Joseph Ballard, a descendant, lives at the present time on the farm where descended from him. His tenth child, a son, Zaccheus Ballard V, married at Framingham, Elizabeth Clayes, or Cloyes, of the same place.

As Sheba William Ballard IV, born at Lynn, married
Dola Ivory and her husband, Lieutenant John Burrill,
1680.

Mr. Joseph Ballard, a descendant, lives at the
present time and the farm which descended from him
eighth year.

advanced age, namely October 5th, 1727, in his eighty-
1736, and had various honorable offices and died at an

of the most eminent men in the Colony of Massachusetts Bay.

Born February 8th, 1749; after their marriage at Framingham, 1770, they removed to Leicester, Mass., thence to Oxford, Mass., and finally to Thompton, Conn.

His daughter, Alice Ballard VI, born 1779, married at Thompson, Joseph Dike, VI, and was mother of Albyn Valentine Dike VII, and other children, as mentioned. The widow of Zaccheus Ballard married secondly, John Ellis, of Thompson, so when Joseph Dike VI died, her daughter Alice Dike VI followed her mother's example and married a second time to a Mr. Jacobs, of Thompson, Conn. and had a daughter by him, who became the wife of the Hon. Jeremiah Olney, of Thompson, but at her death, she requested to be buried beside her first husband, Joseph Dike VI..

The ancestry of Elizabeth Clayes, wife of Zaccheus Ballard V, follows:-

She was a daughter of John Clayes, and wife, Elizabeth Morse IV, daughter of Joseph Morse III, of Watertown. They were married 1730. Joseph Morse III of Watertown, was son of Joseph Morse II, of Watertown, who married 1600/01 Susannah, daughter of William Shattuck, and had, among other children, Elizabeth, who married John Clayes.

Joseph Morse II, his father was eldest son of Joseph Morse I, of Ipswich, Mass, 1642. He probably came from Suffolk County, England with wife, Dorothy, and sons Joseph and John. He died 1646. His son, Joseph II of Watertown, came in 1634, aged 24. He came before his

father, from Ipswich, England. He was freeman at Watertown, 1635, and married Esther, daughter of John Peirce, of Watertown, and had Joseph II born 30th of April, 1637, among other children, and this Joseph, as has been shown, was the father of Elizabeth, who married John Clayes.

This John Clayes was a descendant from John Clayes, of Watertown, mariner, 1657. His house was burned down, and he removed to Charlestown, where he and wife Jane, gave a deed of a barn and land in Watertown, to Samuel Stratton, 1656. In 1660 he and wife, Jane, sold and removed to Falmouth, Maine. In 1670 he was living on the west side of the Presumpscot River, and was killed by the Indians, 1676, in Philips War. He married a first wife, Abigail and a second wife, Jane and a third wife, a widow, Sparwell, admitted to Charleston church, 1666. He had seven children. One son, Thomas, was killed by Indians in Maine, 1690, as the father had been.

Peter Clayes II, son of John I, at first in Maine, he secondly lived at Salem village, coming there 1676. Was taxed in 1681 one pound, six shillings and six pence, which indicates a man of considerable estate. He removed to Framingham, 1693, for reasons which will follow, locating at Salem end of the town. He took a leading part at organization of town, was a Selectman, an original member of first church, 1708, was thrice married, as his father had been, by his first wife, Hannah, he had six children.

had been, by his first wife, Hannah, he had six children.

organization of town, was a Selectman, an original member
at Salem end of the town. He took a leading part at
to Framingham, 1703, for reasons which will follow, locating
which indicates a man of considerable estate. He removed
was taxed in 1681 one pound, sig t shillings and six pence,
he secondly lived at Salem village, coming there 1678.

Peter Clayes II, son of John I, at first in Reine,
1690, as the father had been.

One son, Thomas, was killed by Indians in Reine,
ren. admitted to Charleston church, 1686. He had seven child-
and a second wife, Jane and a third wife, a widow, Sperwell,
1676, in Philips War. He married a first wife, Abigail
of the Pressumpscot River, and was killed by the Indians,
Falmouth, Maine. In 1670 he was living on the west side
1656. In 1660 he and wife, Jane, sold and removed to
a deed of a barn and land in Watertown, to Samuel Stratton,
and he removed to Charlestown, where he and wife Jane, have

Is John Clayes was a descendant from John Clayes

among other children, and this Jane B, as has been
Iron, not Watertown, and had Joseph II born 30th of April,
, from Ipswich, England. He was freeman at
town, 1638, and married Mather, daughter of John

She died 1680. He married secondly the widow, Sarah Bridges, by whom he had two children. She was a daughter of William Towne, of Salem and Topsfield, born 1638. Married Edmund Bridges, of Salem and had five children.

In the Spring of 1692, she was accused of witchcraft, was imprisoned several months in the Boston jail, was tried and condemned to death, and confined in the jail at Ipswich, from which she found means to escape before the day of execution (See Bridges, page 125, Temple's History of Framingham. Her Aunt, Rebecca (Towne) Nurse, the wife of Francis Nurse. Was arrested at Salem Village for witchcraft; was tried and the jury failed to convict at first trial. On a second trial, she, from a defect of hearing, understood not the question, and was found guilty, and executed July 19th, 1692.

The former widow, Sarah Towne Bridges mentioned, the wife of Peter Clayes, who so fortunately escaped from prison, died at Salem End Colony, Framingham, 1703, and Mr. Peter Clayes married thirdly, in 1704, the widow, Susanna Beers, daughter of Robert Harrington, Jr., of Watertown. Her first husband was John Cutting, of Watertown, by whom she had seven children. She married secondly, 1690, Eliezer Beers, of Watertown, and thirdly, Peter Clayes, of Framingham, 1704.

James Clayes III, son of Peter Clayes II, may have been by either of Mr. Clayes first wives. No list

of children, save only his will, as it is not a certainty whether James III was by the first wife Hannah, or by second wife, Sarah Bridges Clayes, whose sad experience is given. There were no children by his third wife.

James Clayes III built a house West of his father. He married Mary..... .... Here is a blank, the first in a long time.

They had six children, the son, John Clayes IV, born September 25th, 1707. 1730 he built a house (and set two elms) which he exchanged for his grandfather's old homestead, with his brother James. He died 1794. He married first, December 10th, 1730, Elizabeth Morse IV, 1760., and had Elizabeth V, 1749, who married Ezecheus Bullard V, who was father of Alice Bullard VI, born June 23, 1779 and married Joseph Dike VI, as mentioned previously.

To complete this ancestry, we must return to Susanna, daughter of William Shattuck, of Watertown, who married Joseph Morse II, of Watertown, as mentioned. Bond's History of Watertown says: William Shattuck settled in Watertown as early as 1642, when he was not more than twenty-one years old. His name is on the list of proprietors, although he was very young.

He seems to have purchased much land, and several transactions given in the records. By his will, dated August 3rd, 1671 "Aged 50 years". He mentions wife Susannah, and several sons. His widow, Susannah, married 1673 Master Richard Kereress. She died December 11th, 1686.

His daughter, Susannah Shattuck, born 1643, married April 12th, 1661 Joseph Morse, who was her next neighbor at Watertown. She married secondly, 1678 John [illegible], of Watertown, who appears also as an heir of William Shattuck, her father, perhaps as a kinsman.

Faith Shattuck, 1704 married Isac Williams of the Robert Williams family.

Lemuel Shattuck, the historian of Concord, Mass., was a descendant of this family. Bond gives three pages in his history of Watertown to the genealogy of this family. A grandson was killed by Indians in 1709, namely, John Shattuck. His father John Shattuck had been drowned at Charlestown Ferry, 1675.

Johnathan Shattuck, born 1695, married Elizabeth Stearns, of Watertown, and a widow of Nathaniel Shattuck, married 1721, Benjamin Shattuck Stearns, of Lexington.

Sarah Shattuck married a Samuel Parkhurst, a descendant of that George Parkhurst, who will appear as your ancestor in the Arnold Genealogy. Bond gives a [illegible] of such list locally to this Shattuck family.

To complete this Genealogy, we must go now to Esther, daughter of John Morse, of Watertown. Bond says he was a weaver. Admitted freeman, 1637. His will dated 1667. He names no children, but his widow, Elisabeth, who died March 12th, 1667, mentions sons Anthony, Robert, John and daughter Esther, wife of Joseph Morse II.

Here is an ancient document gleaned by Judge Savage, for the Mass. Hist. Society collection, Fourth series Vol. 1, page 96. This document was found by [illegible] in the English Exchequer, "April the 6th, 1637" The examination of John Pers, of Norwich, England, in County of Norfolk, weaver, aged 49 years, and Elizabeth, his wife, ages 36 years, and four children, John, Barbare, Elizabeth and Judith, and one Servent, John Gadney, aged 19 years, are desirous to pass to Boston, in New England, to inhabit". There are nine pages in Bond's Watertown, devoted to genealogies of the Peirce family. There are three pages of genealogy for the Clayes family in Temple's History of Framingham, and three pages of Ballard genealogy in Temple's History of Framingham.

Framingham is in that territory which lies just west of Watertown, and the people there are naturally mostly of Watertown descent.

The name of Valentine appears to have come into the family from a Betty Valentine, of Hopkinton, who married an uncle of Alice Ballard, and settled at Sugar Creek, Pennsylvania.

There is in the Lenox Library a volume or pamphlet of 71 pages, published in 1827, by William Ballard, graduate of Harvard College, 1799, and called a History of Framingham. He was a cousin of Alice Ballard, previously mentioned. He gives the organization of the church at Framingham, with eighteen members.

Among the names are Peter Cloise. His second wife, Sarah Bridges Cloise, her sons by her first husband, namely: Benjamin Bridges and Caleb Bridges.

Benjamin Nurse, nephew of that Rebecca Nurse executed for witchcraft, 1692. He was a brother of the wife of Peter Cloise or Clayes, as mentioned. These people appear to have removed here from Salem Village (Danvers), on account of the witchcraft delusion, in which the people there continued to believe for many years.

This volume of William Ballard indulges in much bitterness concerning Calvanist church government and is probably tinged with a remembrance of the Mathers and their influence on the witchcraft delusion at Salem.

Tradition assigns Wales as the origin of the Ballards. There are many of them at Worcester, England.

In the Stearns Genealogy at Watertown, Abigail Stearns married 1666, deacon John Morse, a brother of our Joseph Morse, who married Susannah Shattuck (See Morse Memorial, page 74. This Morse Memorial is a large volume giving an account of all the different families of Morse in America, including that of Joseph of Ipswich and Watertown.

In the Arnold Genealogy, which will be found elsewhere, the first Samuel Arnold lived at Watertown, and married there Phebe, daughter of George Parkhurst,

We now find that Elizabeth Morse a sister of that

In the Arnold Genealogy, which will be found

We now find that Elizabeth Morse a sister of that

Elizabeth Morse, a sister of Elizabeth, who married 1730 John Clayes, of Framingham, your ancestor, married deacon John Parkhurst, of Watertown Farms, and their son, Isac Parkhurst married Lydia Bigelow, and Samuel Parkhurst, of Waltham married 1710, Sarah Shattuck, of that family.

Joseph Parkhurst married Elizabeth Bigelow, 1758.

Mary Parkhurst married Captain David Stearns.

This is given merely to show how the Watertown genealogies mix and become your kin.

FRAMINGHAM IN THE WARS.

. . . .

In 1725 in the Indian War, Joseph Morse and David Morse served, also James Clayse, your ancestor.

In 1755, the French and Indian War, Samuel Morse and Benaja Morse served.

In the War of the Revolution two first cousins of Alice Bullard, namely Captain Peter Claves and Captain Elija Clayes served from this place.

The petition for setting apart the town of Framingham 1707, is signed by Peter Cloice. At the first town meeting, Peter Cloice, Sr., was chosen selectman and Peter Cloice, Jr., surveyor.

The mention of the names of Bridges and Nurse appear frequently and honorably.

On page 67 is a long account of the death by lightning of Mr. Abraham Wise and Mr. John Clayes, June 3d,

1777, He was a brother of that Elizabeth Clayes who married Zaccheus Ballard, an uncle of Alice Ballard.

It is in this town of Framingham that Boston secures her water supply from various lakes and ponds, where in early times, the Indians made their home. And at [illegible], the Rev. John Eliot established one of his praying villages of Indians, which continued successful until the time of the Philip War.

Before the dams were constructed in the rivers, the fish ran up the rivers to spawn in the ponds and were caught in immense numbers, and were the chief support of the indians.

Rev. John Eliot, Jr., pastor of the church at Newton, was in addition, pastor of the Indian church at Natick.

Daniel Gookin and Captain Thomas Prentice, or Newton were the protectors of these friendless indians during the Philip War, as the common people held them in detestation and threatened them with massacre.

In Barry's History of Framingham, page 52, 1692: "This year is memorable as the date of the outbreak of the celebrated witchcraft illusion; in the course of which, the lives of many innocent persons were sacrificed to blind zeal and superstitious credulity."

It is so far connected with our present history as having caused the emigration soon after to this plantation from Salem Village, of the families of Clayes and Nurse.

who, with their descendants, still remaining in town, have been useful and respected members of the community. They settled about a mile west from the centre of plantation and the neighborhood has since been known by the name of Salem end.

The melancholy delusion commenced February 1691/2 in Salem Village. Among the numerous families who suffered from this infatuation were the families named. March 1st, 1692, Rebecca Towne Nurse, wife of Francis Nurse and Sarah Towne Bridges Clayes, wife of Peter Clayes, of Salem Village were committed, with others, to the prison in Boston, on the charge of witchcraft. The fate of the former was singularly unhappy. At her trial the jury could not agree on a verdict, but on a second trial, she persisting, however, in a refusal to answer certain questions about an expression she had used, her silence was made constructive proof of guilt. She was accordingly condemned to death. Afterwards it was found that she suffered from deafness and had not heard the question asked. She was excommunicated from the church at Salem, and, on the 19th of the same month, was hung. Many testimonials were given of good character and domestic worth, without effect.

The 31st of the following month, the wife of Mr. Peter Clayes was removed to the Ipswich prison, but the fury of the delusion abating, she escaped with her life.

having, as tradition says, been conveyed by night to Framingham.

Mary Easty, a sister of Rebecca Nurse (as was Sarah Clayes), also Abigail Williams, probably the neice of Mr. Clayes, appear to have been implicated in the course of events.

It is painful to reflect that this delusion was encouraged by men of high distinction in the Colony, both in church and state. One of them Judge Sewall afterwards bewailed his participation in it and asked pardon of God and man.

Nathaniel Hawthorne, in his works of fiction, bewails his ancestor's part in it.

It was probably on account of this question that William Ballard wrote his History of Framingham, filled with bitterness against Calvanism and against the ministers but were the ministers worse than the judges, such as Wait Winthrop, William Sathern and Samuel Sewall? As their part was the legal part they should bear the odium.

The people of Framingham seem to have had a desire for migration, and there are few of the original families now represented.

Watertown, which was in one way the parent of Framingham, and where so many of your earliest ancestors started life in America, was founded 1630, by a colony under the direct patronage of Sir Richard Saltinstall, who

was here with his family, but he seems to have lost his fortune by his extravagance and two of his daughters returned to England at the outbreak of the Civil War and were admitted into the service of the Puritan noblemen, the Earls of Warwick and Manchester, and he himself returned later to England, and died there. His son married Muriel Gurden, of the famous Puritan family of Gurden, Assington, in Suffolk, England, a family which is prominent in English politics to this day. They returned to America and settled at Ipswich and founded the American family of Saltinstall, prominent in America ever since.

Watertown seems to have known the name no more, but he had given it a start by his outlay and if he did not reap, others did, and it soon became the most populous town in the Colony and the fountain of a great number of families which have spread throughout the land. And their intermarriages are of interest in the names of Parkhurst, Morse, Shattuck, Stearns, Bigelow, Garfield, Peirce, Williams, Wyman, and others. These intermarried in the early days, left large families and became of mixed kin.

Watertown was founded before Cambridge. Cambridge was then known as Newtown, [illegible] people going to Boston by land, [illegible] Watertown Bridge and Roxbury Neck, a journey of some eight miles.

The settlers of Watertown seem from the first to have been industrious and prosperous.

GENEALOGY OF THE FAMILY OF DAVISON

DOROTHY DAVISON

Wife of Thomas Dike of Thompson, Conn. born in Brooklyne, Conn. October 13, 1750 and married there December 11 1770 to Thomas Dike. Her ancestry as shown in the Davison Genealogy.

Early in the sixteenth century the clan MacDarmid or MacDavid of the county of Dingwall Scotland had a Nicholas Davison born about 1530 in Scotland who removed into England and settled at Lynn. There he married, and had a son Nicholas Davison, born there about 1611, who came to New England as the agent of Mr. Matthew Cradock, at one time Governor of the Colony before the charter was brought here, and one of the most extensive merchants engaged in the trade of New England until his death. Nicholas Davison represented him and his heirs after him. He was engaged in many voyages both to the West Indies and to England, and his name appears in the genealogy in five pages of records taken from the record books of Boston and Charleston, Mass. where he served as a Commissioner in various Commissions as the Colonel of the military company and holder of various civil offices. A great number of transfers of property appears in his name. In every sphere of life of that early period he was prominent. He died 1659 leaving an estate inventoried at about 2,500 lbs. sterling. His wife was Joane or Joanna daughter probably of Mr. John Ledes whose name was always recorded at Charleston with the title of respect Mr. Mr. Nicholas Davison resided at Charlestown during life and died there after having had two child-

ren ,one Daniel born 8th of April 1639

two Sarah Born 1647 who married in Charleston 1665 Mr. Joseph Lynde or Lind son of Mr. Thomas Lynde. The memorial History of Boston mentions the following: "Colonel Joseph Lynde married first Sarah Davison daughter of Mr. Nicholas Davison, secondly Anna widow of John Brackenberry, and thirdly Mary widow of the Hon. Adam Winthrop. His grand-daughter Sarah Lynde married Rev. Joseph Stevens, and Elizabeth a granddaughter of Major Benjamin Davison, son of Mr. Nicholas Davison married 1728 Captain Robert Hall, a prominent and wealthy citizen. Her portrait and his now in the possession of the Editor of the Memorial History of Boston. See Vol. II see page 27 of that work. This marriage of Sarah Davison to a son of Mr. Thomas Lynde at that time a most prominent citizen and the record of Mr. Joseph Lynde his son, who rose to be Colonel of the Regiment, and the husband of Madame Winthrop indicates the position occupied by this family at that period. A mention is made which seems to show a family connection between the Winthrop family and the Lynde family from the fact that Mary Lynde daughter of Thomas Lynde aged six years came in the Abigail under care of John Winthrop Junior, and the record of Thomas Lynde shows a complication of genealogical records. In this respect: He married thirdly Rebecca, widow of Capt. Nicholas Trerice who long outlived him. Her son John Trerice married her step-daughter, Hannah Lynde for his first wife. After this Hannah died, Capt. John Trerice married Dorothy, daughter of Thomas Stanton, Junior by his wife Sarah Daniel, daughter of Capt. George

Denison, by his first wife Bridget Thompson. This Dorothy Stanton married first 1696 Nicholas Lynde, son of Sarah Davison and Joseph Lynde, and after his death she married as stated Capt. John Trerice. She was born 1662 and Nicholas Lynde was born 1672, graduated Harvard College 1690 and died in the West Indies at Jamaica 1705 leaving Dorothy Stanton Lynde a widow who then married in Boston this Capt. John Trerice, whose first wife was Hannah Lynde, aunt to the Nicholas Lynde her former husband. This Capt. John Trerice was a man of large wealth. They were married at Boston 1706 where they continued to reside until his death. After which, she returned to Stonington, married her cousin William Denison, removed to Preston, Conn. where she died at the advanced age of 105 years. Here is a broad record covering several ancestral lines, and leaving this woman at Preston, Conn. where your Davison ancestry began in that state by the marriage of Peter Davison to Anna Morgan, a kinswoman of this Dorothy Stanton. We will now take up the record of Daniel Davidon son of Nicholas Davison, born 1635 at Charlestown, Mass. marrie at Ipswitch Mass. Margaret daughter of Thomas Low, and Susannah his wife who came to Ipswitch Mass. 1634 where he died 1677 after having a numerous family of children including two sons ? Thomas & John who found the family name of Low of Americanin the subsline. He left in addition several married daughters who each had many children, and from these the blood of Low expanded in every direction throughout England and not the least of these was that of Davison. The children of Daniel Davison and wife Margaret Low Davison all born at Ipswitch, Mass. were:

2. John, born October 1697 died young.

3. Mehetabel, born 1701. She was living in 1727 and remembered in the will of Thomas her brother her sister Her.

5. Sarah, married a Stafford and

6. Rachel, married 1727 Jacob Hedge of Ipswich, removed to Brookhaven, Conn. where after having many children he and his wife died and their children married there and left large families as well.

8. Elizabeth, married and remained at Ipswich leaving many children.

8. Peter, of your line married ninth of Jan. 1728 at Preston, Conn. Ann Morgan , daughter of Joseph Morgan and Dorothy Park Fort a his wife of Preston, Conn.

7. Thomas Davison, married at Norwich Conn. Nov. 21st 1723 Hannah Tracy of Norwich. Them three sons of Daniel Davison of Ipswich became citizens of the Colony of Conn. and left large families of children who married and scattered the name of Davison until that Genealogy is largely composed of these Conn. families residing in the Counties of Preston, Norwich, Brooklyn and Pomfret.

4. John Davison married at Ipswich Mass. and remained there leaving five children. One of his daughters Hannah married a Joseph Griffin. Martha married Benjamin Conant and Mary married Joseph Griffin all these prominent families of Mass.

9. Bridget Davison.

10. Dorcas Davison. Dorcas last two daughters married at Ipswich and has families there. So much for the Davison

family of Ipswitch Mass. Your ancestor Peter and his borther Thomas came to reside in the year 1695 at Preston.

Peter Davison and Ann Morgan married 26 6th of Jan. 1695 at Preston, Conn. Their children were all born there.

1. Daniel born 1697 t
2. Dorothy born 1700
3. Joseph 1703 your lines of ancestry married 1729 Mary Warner or Warren.
4. William born 1705
5. Peter born 1709
6. Paul 1711
7. Ann 1714
8. Deborah married Samuel Webb of Wyndham of these your ancestor was Joseph Davison born 17 Jan. 1703 died the 21st July 1757 in his 54th year. His widow then Mrs. Mary Davis died April 17th in her 67th year. These two are buried in the old burying ground at Brooklyn, Conn. where their headstones may be seen.

Joseph Davison and his wife Mary Warner came to Brooklyn from Pomfret nine miles away 1734. It was then called Mort Lake. He was the first Deacon of the Church and the Rev. Ephraim Avery was the first Minister, and he baptised all of their children and married many of them. Joseph Davison was a temperance man of pronounced opinion, and maintained a war against those who sold rum, among them being Capt. Israel Putnam, the Inn Keeper, who in after years became famous as that general of the Revolution, and it was in this section that Capt. Putnam had his famous fight with the Wolfe in

his don.

Later, in the Revolution General Israel Putnam was to be the Commander of the Conn. troops in the Battle of Long Island in which participated Sargeant Thomas Dike and his brother Samuel, and many other thousand soldiers of that State. The children of Joseph Davison and Mary Warren were as follows:

1. Joseph born 1730 married Lydia Goodell.
2. Lois born 1732 married Stephan Walker.
3. John born 1734 married Mehitable Babin
4. Ebenezer born 1737.
5. Peter born 1739 married Abagail Woodward
6. Mary born 1741 married Thomas Follet
7. Phinehas born 1743.
8. Elizabeth born 1746
9. Daniel born 1748 married Katharine Davis
10 Dorothy born 13th Oct. 1750 married Thomas Dike of Thompson Conn. of your line.
11 Paul born 1752 married Sarah Hyde.

So having brought the Davison line from Nicholas of Charleston to Dorothy wife of Thomas Dike we now proceed to the ancestral lines of Dorothy Davison of the female lines.

GENEALOGY OF THE MORGAN FAMILY

OF ANN MORGAN

Wife of Peter Davison. She was born November 10 th 1679 at Preston Conn. and married there as the Preston record says to Peter Davison Jan. 6th 1695. Here ancestry

JAMES MORGAN.

who came to New England with the Reverend Mr. Blinman and his Welsh colony first two Green Harbor in Plymouth Colony, and in 1644 they removed to what atthat time was known as Cape Ann but since has been known by the name of New Gloucester in honor of the city from which they came in England. These colonists remained in Gloucester until 1650, when the Rev. Mr. Blinman was induced by Gov. John Winthrop of Conn. to remove to Pequot, since known as New London, where these Welsh's had grants of land, raised large families which intermarried with their English neighbors. Mr. James Morgan eventually accompanied by Mr. Avery removed to the Eastern side of the Thames River, since known as Preston, Conn, and here these two became the foremost men, and their descendants continue to this day to occupy the ancestral acres. In 1657 Mr. James Morgan was Deputy to the General Court at Hartford, and in the following years continued to represent the town frequently. He was appraiser often on occassions and in 1660 James Morgan and his son James, Jr. witnessed the will of Mr. Robert Park, and the descendants of these two became your ancestors. The last record of James Morgan appears in 1676 when he is called Capt. The date of his death is unknown. He had children as follows:

1. Hannah married Nehemiah Rogers
2. James, Junior, married Mary Vine of Old England 1666
3. John, married Rachael Dyman, 1665
4. Joseph, married Dorothy daughter of Thomas Park, and granddaughter of the Rebt. Park whose will was witnessed by James Morgan, and James Morgan Jr. as mentioned.

There may have been other children of James Morgan, but their record has been lost. Your ancestry comes through the son Joseph Morgan, and Dorothy Parke, who were married at Plymouth 1670, where Thomas Park then resided. Not in 1680 both families removed to Preston, Conn. where they formed the first church of which Thomas Park was the deacon and Rev. Fulton first was the minister. The children of Joseph Morgan and wife were:

1. Joseph, Jr. born 1672, the only son.

2. Dorothy born 1676, married Witter.

3. Ann born Nov. 10th 1679 married Jan. 6th 1695 Peter Davidon of your ancestral line.

4. Martha born 1681, married Jos. Perkins of Norwich, Ct.

5. Hannah, born 1683 married Sam'l. Loomer and these five children all signed the division of the estate of Joseph Morgan Sr. Father on the 1st of July, 1746 at Preston as shown on the records there, and four persons and Joseph Perkins have a settlement on land of Ephraim Woods and Ephraim signs her name so that there is no question concerning the identity of these here of Joseph Morgan, Sr.

Genealogy of the Park family, of which Dorothy Park who married Joseph Morgan 1670.

Mr. Robert Park came from Preston, North Hampton-shire England, and was probably a friend, if not a relative of Mrs. Alice Thompson, widow of Mr. John Thompson, of Preston Parish, North Hamptonshire who came to Hingham, Mass. and became the second wife of this Mr. Robert Park, as will be shown in the Thompson record, in which the son of Robert Parke, Thomas married the daughter Dorothy of Mrs. Alice Thompson.

In the Winthrop papers, in the Massachusetts Historical Collection is a long letter of Mr. Robert Park dated February 1640 from Lincolnshire to John Winthrop at Groton, asking advice as to the shipment of his stock of cattle horses and goods at South Hampton, and stating that it is his intention to join the colony, which he did coming over in the fall with Gov. Winthrop. His son William Park settled at Roxbury and became one of the first citizens representing that town for 11 consecutive years in the general court. Mr. Robert Park and his son Thomas became citizens of Weathersfield, Conn. When these two married their wives of the Thompson family is not known. The first wife of Mr. Robert Park, was Martha daughter of Robert Thapen of Admondbury, England. She died in England. The list of children of Mr. Robert Parke by this wife Martha was:

1. William, Park born 1614 married Martha Tolgrave daughter of Mr. John Tolgrave of Salem, Mass. 1640

2. Samuel, born in England married Hannah ------ he is mentioned in his father's will but no further record exists.

3. Thomas, born in England married in the England, Dorothy Thompson,

4. Ann, the only daughter married Edward Pelham 1640 at Roxbury. She died 1641 when he married secondly Mary Allet widow of the apostle John Allen. Deacon William Park of Roxbury had twelve children, but two of them came to maturity both were daughters and each married sons of Robert Williams of Roxbury and had many children, the sons of these were educated at Harvard College under the care of their grand

and founded a line of divines soldiers and statesmen known from that day to this under the family name of Williams, represented in your family by Dr. George Williams, husband of Jessie Dike. They were likewise ancestors of Mrs. Camden C. Dike; both - of these were descended from Captain Isaac Williams, who married Martha Park and removed to the Falls of the Charles River in Newton, in the Phillip War a mention is made of his residence, at the Falls of the Charles River, identifying that spot.

Thomas Park the second son, of Robert bought the land in Stonington owned by his brother-in-law, the Rev. Mr. Gilman, when he removed to New Haven. The children of Thomas Park and Dorothy, his wife, were:

1. Martha born 1646 at Weathersfield, Conn. married Mr. Isaac Wheeler of Stonington, Conn. and by this marriage ancestors of Mrs. Camden C. Dike. Thus two cousins of the name of Park were her ancestors.

2. Thomas Park, Jr. married Mary daughter of Allyn, Lord of Allen's Point opposite New London. These Robert Park married Rachael, daughter of Thomas Leffingwell, a prominent family of New London.

4. Nathaniel, married Sarah Geer also a New London family.

5. William married Hannah Frink, of Stonington, and

6. John married Mary ---- and after his early death she married Rev. Salmon Treat 1716.

7. Dorothy, born Mar. 6th 1652, married Lieut. Jos. Morgan as stated in that family and of your line of Morgan Park Amsenaugh ancestry.

8. Alice, married Greenfield Larrabee, and all of these marriages were in prominent Eastern Conn. families.

Additional on the Thompson family.

of John Thompson, of Preston Capes, North Northamptonshire, England who died there 1636. He was a gentleman of a family only second to the great county families. His will was probated in June 1637. The exact date of the arrival of his widow Alice Thompson with her children is not known but they appear at Roxbury, Mass. at an early date. And the names of three sons at New Haven, Conn. namely: Anthony, John, and William, as stated in the Thompson Genealogy, therefore proof that these were sons of Stephen Yale not at hand. But they were either the one or the other. For a connection is shown by the will of William Thompson who died 1683 in New Haven and by the names of Bridget in the list of daughters of Anthony of the Town, and of the eldest sister at Roxbury. The children of Mrs. Alice Thompson other than these three sons in New Haven were as follows:

1. [illegible], [illegible] Anne [illegible] married the Rev. Mr. David Glenmam the Minister as mentioned of the Welsh colony, who was [illegible] of New Haven, later at [illegible] whereby the Thompsons mentioned previously and lastly in 1686 he returned to Bristol, England where he died there at an advanced age.

2. [illegible] born Sept. 24th 1634, married at Roxbury 1661 [illegible] Samuel who was by him the daughters Sarah born 1662, who married Thomas Stanton, Jr. son Samuel born 1667 who married First Rebecca Shattuck, and second Mrs. Barnes, [illegible] of Newport who had children and from her is descended Willard Fay, Esq., and Hannah Thompson, daughter of Anthony Thompson of the Town mentioned 3 married John Glenham, brother of

Thomas Stanton Jr. This John Stanton lived a near neighbor of Geo. Denison, and their families occupy the same houses of that generation to this day. The Rev. Mr. Blinman, havin married a daughter of Mrs. Thomasyn Thompson seems to have been the means of drawing to New London, the great number of her family as may be mentioned.

3. Dorothy Thompson, her daughter born July 5th 1634 in North Hamptonshire, England, married Thomas Park; at first they lived at Weathersfield, Conn. but both Robert Park the father and his second wife Alice Thompson and Thomas Park the son and his wife Dorothy Thompson removed to New London in 1650 doubtless at the request of Mr. Blinman. This Thompson Park Genealogical inter connection with New Haven and Stonington and New London, presents many complications difficult to understand unless well studied by the reader. However Judge Wheeler in his genealogies of Stonington, Conn. has given much space to the intermarriages and interrelationships of these various Eastern Conn. families.

Miss Caulkins in her history of New London, Conn. has given a very large amount of room to the families of Morgan, Park Stanton, Lamison, Avery, Miner, Palmer, and the various intermarriages of these families with families in New London, Norwich, Preston, Stonington, and the surrounding townships, and all these families and their intimate blood relations were involved in the terrible catastrophe of the massacre of Fort Griswold, Sept. 6th 1781, when the traitor Benedict Arnold, inflicted such terrible losses of blood and fortune, involving all these families mentioned.

As so much of this Ballard ancestry starts in Lynn, and embraces several families, who early settled at Lynn, namely, Ballard, Hudson, Ivory, and as Mrs. Jessie Mike Williams married a descendant of the founder of Lynn, Mr. John Humfrey, and his wife the Lady Susan Humphrey, it seems that a short sketch should be given.

The place was named from Lynn, in England, and it was here that Colonel John Humfrey started in America, 1634, and at Swampscott, he had a very extensive plantation. In fact a large part of the history of Lynn in early times is given to him and his family. But he, like Saltinstall, Winthrop, and many other of the early proprietors, seems to have lost his fortune, and failing in his desire for the appointment as Governor of the Colonies, he returned to England, with his family, in 1641.

Newhall, in his History of Lynn, mentions that he has in his possession, a deed of property signed by Ann Wiles, the last surviving child of Colonel John Humphrey and his wife, the Lady Susan. The deed is signed in 1661 and sells the remaining property there.

In the early days there was much mention of the nobility and gentry in these early settlements in Massachusetts Bay Colony, but the authorities here did not encourage the coming here , with any special privileges, and, fortunately for the colonial development, no special privileges were granted.

When Colonel Humfrey returned to England, he sold his famous plantation at Swampscott to Lady Moody, a woman of the nobility, but she became imbued with Baptist principles and suffering there for her faith, about 1645, she removed to Gravesend, near New York, in the time of Governor Keift, of New Amsterdam. About that time the Indian wars broke out in New Amsterdam and she and her people suffered great losses, but remained a strong support financially to both Governor Keift and Governot Stuyvesant.

It seems that at this early time the Baptists had a strong hold at Lynn, and their sufferings there will appear later in this history.

Whether your immediate ancestors at Lynn were Baptists or not does not appear..

As regards the credulity of that age, the story of "Eric, the Red" and Norembaga may be here cited as bearing on the credulity of the present.

On the old Bridge at Watertown, crossing the River Charles, may be seen a monument, announcing that this was the ancient shipyard and port of Eric the Red, who was said to have coasted North America until he reached Watertown, which he called Norembaga, and he was so pleased that he settled down there, about the year 1000 of our era. And, on the Boston Parkway, at the end of Commonwealth Avenue, may be seen a bronze figure of Eric, the Red, facing westward. So we have a Harvard Professor, a Watertown

[illegible] community which says to itself: "[illegible] Erie [illegible] we settle [illegible] on the [illegible] Charles", and Boston has located a Park there, which is called Norembega.

Again we have a stone windmill at Newport, built by your kinsman, Benedict Arnold, somewhere between 1650 and 1660. That too is a monument to the Norsemen, according to many, but we know that it was Benedict Arnold's stone wind-mill, copied after a similar mill near his early English home, in Dorsetshire, and in his will he distinctly mentions this mill and left it to his daughter Freelove, who married Edward Pelham, and his ancient burial place lies on Pelham Street, near where the Aquidneck House stands to-day.

So much for modern credulity. With Edward Pelham there comes a great name into the family. Son of Herbert Pelham, whose mother was Penelope West, daughter of Lord De la Ware. A brother of hers had been the first Governer of Virginia, and one of our States and one of our rivers honors the name.

Herbert Pelham had married a Waldegrave of that great family for his first wife. She died and he removed to this country; brought with him two sisters, Penelope and Elizabeth Pelham and a daughter Penelope.

In 1638 there dies in Pelham a Roger Harlakenden, a man of great wealth for those days, and Herbert Pelham married the widow and eventually returned to England during the Civil War and took service in it under Oliver Cromwell. This Herbert Pelham and Roger Harlakenden were the most

eminent men in the early history of Watertown and Cambridge, both for wealth and position.

Herbert Pelham's sister, Penelope married Governor Bellingham, and his daughter married Josiah Winslow, of Plymouth Colony, who was General in Chief in the Philip War, at the Great Swamp Fight. Elizabeth, his sister is buried at Green Harbor, near Plymouth, where her toomb may be seen to this day and his son, Edward, married Governor Benedict Arnold's daughter, Penelope, and this old stone wind-mill came to him eventually.

The Genealogical record of Anthony Dike and of his descendants seems to be, by all of their intermarriages, up to that of James Prince's daughter, Phoebe Ann, almost without exception with families in or from Salem, Ipswich, Lynn, Watertown, Boston, and several are of Salem, as may be said also of Lynn and Ipswich, also Watertown.

It appears in almost every instance that the bearers of the names given were men and women of good understanding and in almost each and every family have appeared at some time men of unusual note and influence, as of those mentioned. How many unknown kinsmen have been men of prominence is a question which the writer does not undertake to answer, but leaves to you a genealogical study , which may be improved on your opportunities may present.

The writer has given genealogies, local histories, and general histories for that purpose. If you are so

which may be improved as your opportunities may present.

The writer has given some

of prominence is a question which the writer does not under-

at some time men of wealth and influence, as of

standing and in almost each and every family have appeared

persons of the names given were men and women of good under-

It appears in almost every instance that the

be said also of Lynn and Ipswich, also Water-

Lynn, Watertown, Boston, and several are of Salem, we may

without exception with families in or from Salem, Ipswich,

up to that of James Prince's daughter, Phoebe Ann, almost

The Genealogical record of Anthony Mills and of

wind-mill came to him eventually.

be seen to this day and his son, Edward, married Deborah

buried at Green

War, at the Great Swamp

situated as to be near a great library of reference, this can be done, if not, then you must take the writer's word, for you cannot prove it yourself. But it has been the intention to so write history and genealogy as to make the two go together in some way. Repetitions are, of course, frequent; must occur to keep up the line of interest from mixing, or as a certain note in music must be repeated, or an idea in any work, as in a romance, or a play one brings in the characters from time to time, so it is necessary particularly in genealogy.

The Salem of Anthony Dike I and II was a town of commerce from the first, and when the Rev. Hugh Peter was pastor then he, in 1640 had a company of stockholders build there the first great ship of four hundred tons, of the Colony. So commenced the commerce and shipbuilding industry, which made this section of the State of Massachusetts the commercial stronghold for a hundred years.

Hawthorne in "The Scarlet Letter" gives the best description of the decline and fall of the commerce of Salem.

Much of the antiquity of the town is well preserved; the ancient houses remain in most excellent preservation. The ancient church in which it is claimed Hugh Peter preached remains standing, and its emptiness but accentuates the changes which time has made. The gallery in which the dignitaries were seated remains. The body

of the church was for the people at large, for there were many of noble or gentle blood who lived at or near Salem. It is probable that the Lady, Susan Humfrey, her daughters, Lady Moody and her family, and many gentlemen beside the dignitaries of the Colony might have been seen in this little gallery.

The family of Fynes, or Fiennes de Clinton and Gaye, was the Earl of Lincoln's family name, and this Lady Susan was his daughter. This very ancient Baronial family performed an important part in the early planting of New England, from the time that: "John Wincob, a gentleman of the Countess of Lincoln" obtained that first charter for the Mayflower Pilgrims of Leyden. The charter was to be used when they arrived at Hudson's River, within the jurisdiction of Virginia. But, when they finally landed at Plymouth, they were outside that jurisdiction and the Charter of this John Wincob was never used, and has been lost. Wincob himself intended to join them, but he never came.

In the year 1623 Robert Gorges, a son-in-law of the Countess of Lincoln and a brother-in-law of the Lady Susan Humfrey, commenced a colony at Weymouth, but within the year he tired of it and returned to England, leaving his Chaplain at Plymouth, who while there wrote much in both prose and verse descriptive of the Colony.

In 1625, John Humfrey appears as Treasurer of the Dorchester Company of the Rev. John White, mentioned

previously in the Planters Plea.

Another son-in-law of the Countess of Lincoln Isaac Johnson, Esquire, and his wife, the Lady Arbella, came with Winthrop in the Ship Arbella, named in her honor, 1630, but both of these died very soon, of the prevailing distemper. It is probable that both lie in the ancient burying ground of Salem, unmarked. Here lies also the first wife of the Rev. Hugh Peters. She was the widow of Edmund Reade, of Wickford, in Essex, England. This Rev. Hugh Peter had been a stockholder from the first in the Massachusetts Bay Colony. He was the Beecher of that time; had preached in England and in Holland to great multitudes and when he arrived in the Massachusetts Bay Colony, his services were in demand, and when Roger Williams was exiled, owing to the influence of John Humphrey and his Lady, Peter came to Salem as their pastor, preaching in that little church you stand in and you can imagine your ancestor, Anthony Dike and his family, as members of that church and seated on benches in this little auditorium. For Anthony Dike became a freeman in 1631, and that meant a member of the church in good standing, for in that consisted the Theocracy.

Peters and Humphrey at one time expected to found the collage at Marble Head or Swampscut, but it was finally settled at Cambridge. The house in which Roger Williams lived is standing in good preservation to this day.

One of the show houses in Salem is the House of

the Seven Gables, the ancient Pickering homestead.

Across from Salem to the eastward, lies Beverly, where Benjamin Dike and his descendants were found.

Ipswich, about ten miles north of Salem was first settled by John Winthrop, Jr., eldest son of Governor John Winthrop, who had married as a second wife, a step-daughter of the Rev. Hugh Peters mentioned, and John Winthrop, Jr., the Rev. Hugh Peters, and Harry Vane, all arrived in the same vessel, 1635 at Boston. It was feared that the French might start a colony to the northward, hence Winthrop was urged to commence a plantation at Ipswich, then called Agawan.

This plantation of Ipswich at once took a prominent position in the Colony, and the people of the better class settled there, so that in the early days it was, as far as its families were concerned, the ruling village of the Colony, and intellectually played a very important part.

The Rev. Nathaniel Ward, their first pastor, on his return to England in 1647, published a book: "The Simple Cobbler of Agawan". He says: "I have been seventeen years with them and have not heard an oath, nor seen a drunken man.

It was among such people that your Ipswich ancestors were reared. All these places were early interested in seafaring, and it is likely that not only Anthony I, but Anthony II, were engaged in the sea.

[illegible]

[illegible] Benjamin Dike and his descendants were found.

Ipswich, about ten miles north of Salem was first settled by John Winthrop, Jr., eldest son of Governor John Winthrop, who had married as a second wife, a step-daughter of [illegible]. Hugh Peters mentioned, and John Winthrop, Jr., the Rev. Hugh Peters, and Harry Vane, all arrived in the [illegible], [illegible] Boston. It was feared that the French might start a colony to the northward, [illegible] Winthrop was urged to commence a plantation at Ipswich, [illegible]

This plantation of [illegible] at once took a prominent position in the Colony, and the people of the better class settled there, so that in the early days it was, as far as its families were concerned, the [illegible] of the Colony, and [illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible] "The Simple Cobbler of Agawam". [illegible] says: "I have been seventeen years with them and have not heard an oath, nor seen a drunken man.

It was among such people that your Ipswich ancestors [illegible]. All [illegible] in seafaring, and it is likely that not only Anthony I, but Anthony II, were engaged in the sea.

The following pedigree is that of the Dike family during the period of their residence at Thompson, Connecticut, and has been kindly given to the writer by Miss Larned, Historian of Windham County, Conn., and as the Rev. Samuel Dike has had a part in its construction, it may be considered as the official pedigree:-

James Dike IV, and Mary Marramore Dike, his wife, had six children. First, Thomas, born July 19, 1744; died March, 1815;

Second, Nathaniel V, born March 1747; removed.

Third, Rachael V, born 1749; married George Brown, of Gloucester, Rhode Island.

Fourth, Mary V, born 1751, married Elija Robinson, and removed to Vermont.

Fifth, Silvia, born July 1st, 1753.

Sixth, Samuel V, born October 12, 1755; died February 19th, 1777, in the hospital of the Army of the Revolution.

Thomas Dike V married Dorothy Davison, March 1770. They had nine children.

First, Lydia, baptised May 23d, 1773; married as his second wife, July 18th, 1893, Rev. Elisha Atkins.

Second, Joseph Dike VI. Baptised April 8th, 1776, married Alice Willard, April 10th, 1798. He died 1814.

Third, Lucy VI. Baptism not found. She married

Third, Lucy VI. Baptism not found. She married
1814.

Lydia, baptised May 23d, 1770; married
as his second wife, July 18th, 1809, Rev. Elihu Atkins.

James Dike VI. Baptised April 6th,

Rev. Samuel Dike has had a part in its construction, it may be considered as the official pedigree:-

James Dike IV, and Mary Bermmore Dike, his wife, had six children, James, Thomas, born July 16, 1764;

Married V, born March 1767; removed.

and removed to Vermont.

February 19th, 1777, in the Hospital of the Army of the Revolution.

1790. They had nine children.

Noah Shumway, of Oxford, May 27th, 1800.

Samuel VI, baptised April 22nd, 1779; married first Rachael Davis, March 14th, 1808, and secondly, Polly Thompson Davis, her sister, 1810.

Fifth, Mary VI. Baptised March 14th, 1782; married Daniel Smith, of Gloucester, R. I., June 3d, 1804.

Sixth, Lois VI. Baptised June 20th, 1784, married Jessie Tourtolette, of Thompson, 1803.

Seventh, Thomas VI; baptised March 16th, 1788.

Eighth, Thomas again, baptised January 3d, 1790.

Ninth, James VI, baptised May 18th, 1794.

. . . . . .

Joseph Dike VI, born 1776, eldest son of deacon Thomas Dike, died 1814. He married Alice Ballard, born 1779. His daughter Ataresta VII married Talcott Crosby. She died only recently. Her sister, Rhoda VII married Lyman N. Joslyn. His three sons removed to Providence, R. I., namely Allyn Valentine VII, Arba Ballard VII, and Appleton VII, and married there.

The following account of the family appeared in the Patriot, 1900:-

James Dike IV won the confidence of the townspeople, and in 1760 appears as one of the Selectmen. Soon after that date, he was employed in a very difficult and painful service, having had the small-pox at an outbreak of that dreaded contagion, his house was selected as a hospital, the kitchen floor was covered with patients.

His wife caught the infection and died February 17th, 1764, Isolated as he was, he made the coffin and buried her alone. A number of the patients died and were similarily buried on the premises.

He continued to serve the town in public capacity. He was one of a committee to view the districts, replacing the older by ten new or smaller divisions.

In 1770 he was one to provide a workhouse for the Parrish of Thompson, and was master of the same. He was one of the founders of the Baptist society and church, opening his house for religious services. He was chosen as a deacon and was set apart for that service, with appropriate solemnities, December 9th, 1773. The following year, he received formal license to preach, and often supplied the pulpit in the absence of the pastor, to public satisfaction. He died June 15th, 1792.

. . . . . .

Thomas V, son of James IV, served, with two of his brothers in the Revolutionary War. Thomas and Nathaniel went out in the Lexington Alarm of 1775.

In 1776 Thomas was Sergeant in Captain Stephen Crosby's Company, of [illegible]'s Regiment, Wadsworth Brigade, and his brother Samuel was a private in the same Company.

The letters of Sergeant Thomas have been given before. The illness but not the death of his brother, Samuel was mentioned. He died January 1777, in the Hospital of the Army of the Revolution.

Thomas Dike succeeded to the farm and homestead. Soon after his return from military service he was appointed Justice of the Peace, which office he held many years.

In 1785 he was chosen deacon of the Congregational church and was chosen first Selectman on the day the town of Thompson was organized.

He left four sons and four daughters. His brother, Nathaniel, probably removed from the town.

James and Thomas, sons of deacon Thomas V, were among the enterprising young men who instituted the Mechanics Factory in 1827. Later both removed from town.

Lidia became the second wife of Rev. Elisha Atkins of Killingly. Samuel, the youngest son, retained the family homestead and died 1828. His son Thomas died young.. His brother, George occupied the homestead, and like Thomas, was deeply interested in the anti-slavery and temperance movements and in public and in church affairs.

The farm is now held and occupied by his children, ninth in descent from one including Anthony I, who is, as far as can be ascertained, the only farm in the town occupied by descendants of the first purchaser.

Two of this household have been recently taken away, Miss Harriet and Henry. Loyal representatives of the name, we are indebted to the researches of their brother, the Rev. Samuel W. Dike, D. D., for many of these particulars. His brother Joseph T. Dike now occupies the farm.

The foregoing sketch has mentioned that Nathaniel, the brother of Thomas V, removed from town. The writer has been enabled to give his history, through a letter just received, which says:

"Yours of May 7th, 1903 has my attention. I have the account book and family bible of one Nathaniel Dike, who was a native of Connecticut. From what place, I do not know. There is an extensive record of Dikes in the family bible, as follows:- Nathaniel Dike, Sr., died January ye 31st, 1813, aged 65 years, 9 months. His honored father, James Dike, died June ye 18th, 1792. The account book is kept on English stamped paper. The book is bound in raw hide. It is in a fine state of preservation. The first account is in the year 1788 and runs to 1812. The accounts from 1788 to 1791 were at various places on the Mohawk River. From 1791 to 1794 at Newpoint, now called Elmira, New York. Accounts with such noted men as Guy Maxwell and Isac Parris.

At the time he volunteered in the War of the Revolution, he was a scholar at Yale College. On the cover of the account book the following is written, by James Dike, his son and grandson of James Dike IV, namely:- "Nathaniel Dike, the owner of this book was from Connecticut. He was a Revolutionary hero, serving on the staff of General Warren, and at his death, on that of General Washington. He was educated at Yale College. He moved from Connecticut to the Mohawk Valley, 1788, thence to

Elmira, New York, in 1791, then to Elm Valley, Allegheny County, in 1795. He was the first white settler to enter Allegheny County and take up land. He was engaged in the lumber, flour and tanning industry.

The first religious services in that county were held in his house.

I find the record in the bible contains the names of Benjamin Dike, died 1797; Thomas Dike, died 1785. Isaac Willard Dike, died 1815. Daniel Dike died 1785. Azubah Dike died 1785. Zerviah Dike died 1797. Nathaniel Dike's wife, Esther died 10th month, 11th day, 1818, aged 74 years, and I believe she was a Burrill before marriage.

Signed: EUGENE T. BLACK,

Scio, Allegheny County,

New York. "

The facts presented here apparently complete the history of this Nathaniel. The writer has seen in a history of the First Settlement of Allegheny County, this same assertion that this Nathaniel Dike was the first settler in that County, but was not aware that he was of the immediate family until this latter relict that fact unequivocal.

In Volume 57, page 192--198 New England Genealogical Historical Society may be seen an account of Framingham, County of Suffolk, England, written by a man employed by the society in England to photograph ancient towns and write sketches of them, wherever historical connection with New England exists.

This town was the seat of the ancient Saxon kings of East Anglia. In early Norman times Roger Bigod, Earl of Norfolk, built a great castle here, which stands to this day, with walls of immense thickness, fifty feet in height, surmounted by thirteen great towers, the moats still filled with water.

Lieutenant Governor Danforth of Massachusetts came from here and Framingham was named in his honor.

The Rev. Thomas Prince, 1707, while in England, preached for a time at Combs, near here.

John Stowers, founder of that family at Watertown came from here and Edmund Thompson, of Salem, and it is quite likely that your ancestor, Simon Thompson, of Ipswich, was a relative of this Edmund Thompson, and probably came from this place.

One of the daughters of Nathaniel Dike III married a man by the name of Waite. His family proceeded from this place in England.

Mention is made that Robert Bond opposed in Charles I time the payment of the tax for ship money, was hanged here and his goods seized.

GENEALOGY OF THE FAMILY OF JENKS, JENKES

or JENCKES.

. . . . . .

Austin, in his Genealogy of the One Hundred and Sixty Allied Families of Rhode Island, which includes only the first three generations, uses the old style of spelling proper names, and he spells the name Jenckes, and so do all the histories and records up to about the year 1800, when the name seems to have changed its spelling locally and historically to Jenks, and as this genealogy is both ancient and modern, and as the modern way is the most simple, that way will be used throughout. But bear in mind that in examining histories or records before 1800 you must search for the ancient way of spelling and not the modern.

. . . .

In Newhall's History of Lynn, page 158 and 159 "Biographical Sketch of Joseph Jenks" appears, as follows:-

"From all that appears, Mr. Jenks came hither from Hammersmith, near London, as an operative in the iron works just established here. But he was not destined long to remain in an obscure position, for his skill and ingunity soon commended him to the notice of the "General Court" and the country at large. And well may he be called the pioneer inventor of America. For his ingenious Contrivances, he was granted several patents, and one or two

have hardly been improved upon to the present day, (notably his scythe). It is said that the dies for the famous pine trees coins, which all bear date 1652, though they were struck in different years, were made by him.

In our Annals, under date 1654, it is stated, that the Selectmen of Boston, agreed with Joseph Jenks "for an ingine to carry water in case of fire", and that this was the first fire engine made in America. The order was in these words: "The Selectmen have liberty, to agree with Joseph Jynks for ingins to carry water in case of fire, if they see cause so to doe". This order, it will be observed is permissive, rather than imperative, and there has been a question whether they did contract for an engine, or if they did, whether the contract was ever fulfilled, for it is asserted, that Boston had no engine, till after the great fire in November 1676, at which some forty-six dwellings were destroyed, besides shops, warehouses and "A meeting-house of considerable bigness". An opportune rain is mentioned as having done much towards arresting the flames, and some buildings were blown up. But nothing is said about an engine being there.

Pemberton seems to have thought that as late as 1711 Boston had no fire engines Yet on the ninth of March, 1702, the town voted that the Selectmen should "procure two water engines, suitable for the extinguishing of fire; either by sending for them to England, or otherwise

to provide them. This must have been in addition to one before had, for it was, on that same day voted, that "The Selectmen are desired to get the water engine for the quenching of fire repaired, as also the house for keeping the same in". Now, might not the one referred to as needing repairs in 1702, have been manufactured by Mr. Jenks on the order of 1764? It would have been an "Old machine", to be sure, but was no doubt constructed in a thorough manner and not very frequently called into use.

In "Lewis' History of Lynn, " page 121: In 1643 the Iron Works at Lynn, the first in America, were organized. The capitalists were London merchants, and John Winthrop, Jr., was the first agent, in connection with Robert Bridges, of Lynn. Several persons came in 1643, who had been engaged in London by Mr. Winthrop, or through the Rev. Hugh Peters, his step-father-in-law.
The Rev. Thomas Wells, coadjutor of Hugh Peters, as agent in England, at this time of the Massachusetts Bay Colony, was a stockholder in this company.

Among the skilled machinists engaged was Joseph Jenks, of Hammersmith, now a part of London. As its name indicates, a place of smiths.

The new works were in Saugus, and were called "Hammersmith".

Joseph Jenks I came from there. He was a machinist at the iron foundry, and a man of great genius,

as will be abundantly shown. He made the dies, the fire-engine, and took out many patents for tools, and improvements of tools in America.

The Pine Tree coins are his monument. He deserves to be held in perpetual remembrance.

He came a widower, leaving two sons in England, and married here Elizabeth , by whom, he had one son and two daughters in America. He dies in March, 1683. His wife, Elizabeth died, 1679. His list of children were,

First, Joseph II, born in England, who came later to Lynn, and while here, married Esther, daughter of William Ballard. He, Joseph II then removed to Rhode Island, was first at Warwick, then he was the first settler at Pawtucket, where he built the first house, and constructed a forge, about 1671.

In the "Philip War" the forge and all else was destroyed by the Indians.

A second son, George II, of Joseph I, removed to Virginia and founded there a line of this family.

A third child, a daughter, Sarah II, married John Chilson.

A fourth child, Samuel II, married Elizabthh Darling. He was a worker at the Iron Works.

Fifth, Deborah II.

Sixth, John II, who married Sarah Merriam.

They had four daughters, all were married and had children. They had only one son, John III, who was married three times and had nineteen children. From these are all of the name in Massachusetts and to the eastward.

The seventh child, Daniel II removed to Rhode Island.

"Joseph Jenks I, is noted in American History as being the first founder who worked in 'Brass and Iron' on the western continent. By his own hands he made the first models, and the first castings taken of many of the domestic impliments and iron tools. The first article said to have been cast was a small iron pot, capable of containing about one quart.

Thomas Hudson, of the same family as the celebrated Henry Hudson, who discovered the river of his name in New York, was the first proprietor of the land on Saugus River, where the Jenks foundry stood. (See your Hudson ancestry in the line of Alice Ballard, wife of Joseph Dike). If this statement in the Lynn history be true then are you of kin to the famous Hendrick Hudson, the great discoverer. Lewis, who wrote this History of Lynn, seems to have been a descendant of this Hudson family. He states also that he has one of the actual iron pots, the first article made by Jenks in America.

In the year 1646, on the tenth of June, Mr. Joseph Jenks presented a petition that the Court would

patronize his improvement in mills, and the manufacture of scythes. "In answer to a peticon of Joseph Jenks for liberty to make experience of his abillityes and Inventions for the making of engines for mills to goe with water, for the more speedy despatch of worke than formerly, and mills for the making of sithes and other edged tooles, with a new invented saw-mill, that things may be afforded cheeper than formerly, and that for fourteen yeares, without disturbance of any others setting up a like Invention. That so his study and costs may not be in vaine or lost, This peticon was granted, so as power is still left to restrayne the exportation of such manufactures, and to moderate the prizes thereof, if occacon so require.

In 1647, page 132. On the 20th of January, Richard Leader sold to Joseph Jenks, the privilege to build a forge at the "iron works" for the manufacture of sythes.

August 4th, 1648, John Winthrop, the Governor of Massachusetts, writes to his son, John Winthrop, Jr., Governor of Connecticut and says:

"The Iron Works goeth with more hope. It yields now about seven tons per week, but it is most out of that brown earth which lies under the bog mine. They tried another mine and after about twenty-four houss they had a sum of about five hundred, which when they brake, they conceived to be a fifth part silver.

There is a grave man of good fashion come over

There is a brave man of good reputation come over
they conceived to be a right part either
had a sum of about five hundred, which when they broke
friend another mine and after about twenty-four hours they
Wiegle now about seven tons per week, but it is most out
Ironmongerth, written to his son, John Winthrop, Jr., dat-
build a forge at the "iron works" for the manufacture of
In 1629, made 132. On the 20th of January,
erate the Prince thereof, it occasion no reduce.
That no his study and couple may not be in value or loss,
purpose of any others setting up a like invention.
tium formerly, and that for fourteen years, without dis-
invented saw-mill, that things may be attorned elsewhere
for the making of slitten and other edged tooles, with a new
for the making of engines for mills to doe with water, for

now, to see how things stand here, He is one who hath been exercised in iron works.

On September 8th, Winthrop says: "The furnace runs eight tons per week, and their bar iron is as good as Spanish.

In 1651 there is a record of a mortgage for that property commonly called Nahant, to Nicholas Davison, of Charlestown, for Twenty pounds sterling. "Dew many yeer". The deed was signed by that Indian Chief who ruled over about one third of what is now the State of Massachusetts. This Chief joined Philly in his War, 1676; was captured and sold to Barbadoes. He was enabled to return to Lynn 1684 and died in poverty, and this Nahant which he mortgaged for such a small sum, to one of your ancestors, is to day one of the finest seashore sections of the City of Boston.

On the date 1652, a record: "At the Quarterly Court". On the Twenty-ninth of June, the following presentment was made:-

"We present Ester, the wife of Joseph Jynkes, Jr., ffor wearing silver lace". This was your ancestor, Esther Ballard Jenks.

In 1655 the "General Court" grant Joseph Jenks a patent for an improved scythe: "For the more speedy cutting of grasse, for seven years."

This improvement consisted in lengthening the

This improvement consisted in lengthening the
ting of grease, for seven years."

In 1688 the "General Court" grant Joseph Jenks
for weaving silver lace". This was your ancestor,
"We present Peter, the wife of Joseph Jenks, Jr.,
presentment was made:-
Court". On the Twenty-ninth of June, the following
the City of Boston.
On the date 1652, a record: "At the Quarterly
which he mortgaged for such a small sum, to one of your
ruled over about one third of what is now the State of
year". The deed was signed by that Indian Chief who
of Charlestown, for Twenty pounds sterling. "Dear mother
Dunstan,

blade, making it thinner, and welding a square bar on the back th strengthen it, as in the modern scythe.

Before this, the old English blade was short and thick, like a bush-scythe.

The minister at Lynn at this time was Mr. Whiting, whose wife was the daughter of that famous Chief Justice, Oliver St. John, who serves so creditable during the Civil War in England and the Commonwealth. His assistant was the Rev. Mr. Cobbet, who wrote more books than any one of the early ministers of New England. One was "A Defence of Infant Baptism", said to have been able and eshaustive of the subject, and an answer to Dr. Clark's book "Ill News From New England," published in London, 1652, and Mr. Cobbet's answer, "The Civil Magistrate's Power in Matters of Religion Modestly Debated". A brief answer to a certain slanderous pamphlet called: "Ill News From New England," containing six pages of grievous dedication to Oliver Cromwell, 1652. Mr. Cobbet was later pastor of the church at Ipswich, and made a practice of walking from Ipswich to Boston, once in two weeks, to attend Mr. Norton's lecture, and to see Mr. Whiting.

In 1668, the ministers of these several towns assembled in Boston on the 19th of April, to hold a public disputation with the Baptists, and Mr. Cobbet was the principal speaker. This is referred to in Benddict's History of the Baptists. Mr. Whiting preached to your ancestors at Lynn forty-three years. His wife died there,

1677 at the age of seventy-two.

As the ancestry of Alice Ballard, given previously, covers practically the ancestry of this Esther Ballard, who married Joseph Jenks II, at Lynn, we will merely repeat what Savage says thus: "William Ballard I of Lynn, came in "The Mary and John" 1634, from London. Had wife and children and died 1646. His son, William II came in the "James", from London, 1635, with wife Elizabeth, he aged thirty-two; wife aged twenty-six, daughter Esther aged two, and son John aged 1. Freeman 1638, member of the Artillery Company the same year. Died July 1689.

Joseph Jenks, Jr., II, and his wife, Esther Ballard Jenks moved to Rhode Island, and from now on we shall quote from Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of One Hundred and Sixty Rhode Island Allied Families, page 112.

"Joseph Jenks II, son of Joseph I, born 1632, died 1717. Married Esther Ballard, daughter of William and Elizabeth Ballard of Lynn, Massachusetts.

1669, March 25th, Warwick. He was granted land on either side of the Pawtuxet River for the supply of his [illegible] mill and [illegible], for this favor from purchasers of Warwick, agreed to let them have boards at four shillings six pence per hundred, and all other sawn work to be equivalent to the same. The grant included trees of pine, chestnut, or oak, within half a mile of each side of the river, that is floatable, the proprietors reserving the right to cut what

As the ancestry of Alice Bullard, given previously
what Savage may thus: "William Bullard I of Lynn, came in
married Joseph Jenks II, of Lynn, we will merely repeat
children and died 1646. His son, William II came in the
thirty-two; wife aged twenty-six, daughter Mercy aged two,
and son John aged 1. Freeman 1638, member of the
Artillery Company the same year. Died July 1685.

Joseph Jenks, Jr., II, and his wife, Esther
Bullard Jenks moved to Rhode Island, and from now on we
shall quote from Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of
112.

"Joseph Jenks II, son of Joseph I, born 1638,
died 1717. Married Esther Bullard, daughter of William
and Elizabeth Bullard of Lynn, Massachusetts.

1668, March 25th, Warwick. He was granted land
on either side of the Pawtuxet River for the employ of his
new mill, and he, for this favor from purchasers of Warwick,
agreed to let them have boards at four shillings six pence
per hundred, and all other sawn work to be equivalent to
the same. The grant included trees of pine, chestnut, or
floatable, the proprietors reserving the right to cut what
oak, within half a mile of each side of the river, that is

they need.

1670, January 18th, he was foreman of a jury in the case of Thomas Smith and Ruth, his wife, "Who were both drowned in the River Pawtuxet, the 16th instant, at night".

1671, October 10th, Providence. He bought sixty acres more or less, with a right of commonage, of Abel Potter, and wife, Rachael. The said land belonging formerly to Rachael's grandfather, Ezekiel Holliman, and being situated near Pawtucket Falls. Here he established his forge, saw-mill, etc.

1676 his house, forge, etc., destroyed by Indians, "Philip War".

1677, he was freeman.

1679, taxed twelve shillings, six pence, including his saw-mill.

1679,to 1699 continuously Deputy to the Assembly.

1680, He and two others were empowered by the Assembly to purchase a bell, "For the public uses of the Colony, and for giving notice, or signifying the several times of the sitting of the Assembly, and of the Court of Trials, and the General Councils at Newport. The bell was purchased for three pounds, ten shillings, of "Free-love Arnold, daughter of the late Benedict Arnold, who had died in 1678. As she was your kinswoman, she will be heard of later.

In earlier times, the Assembly had been called together by beat of drum.

they need.

the cause of

almsy serve more or less, with a right of commonage, of
Abel Potter, and wife, Rachael. The said land belonging
formerly to Michael's grandfather, Rachiel Hollimon, and
being situated near Pawtucket Falls. Here he established

1676 his house, forge, etc., destroyed by Indians,
"Philip War".

1677, he was freeman.

1679, raised twelve shillings, six pence, including
his saw-mill.

1679, to 1699 continuously Deputy to the Assembly.

1680. He and two others were empowered by the
Assembly to purchase a bell, "for the public uses of the
Colony, and for giving notice, or signifying the several
times of the sitting of the Assembly, and of the Court of
Trials, and the General Councils at Newport. The bell

love Arnold, daughter of the late Benedict Arnold, who had
died in 1678. As she was your kinswoman, she will be
heard of later.

In earlier times, the Assembly had been called
together by beat of drum.

1691 to 1698 he was an assistant, equivalent to Senator in the General Assembly.

1687, he and his son, Joseph III and Major Nathaniel III were taxed twelve shillings.

1688, his ratable estate was six acres of planting land, two acres of meadow, eight acres of pasture, thirty acres wild, four oxen, seven cows, two steers, a heifer, a yearling, two mares, a colt, swine, sheep and a saw-mill.

1690, January 30th, he and five others of the Assembly, and the Deputy Governor, wrote a letter to King William and Queen Mary, congratulating them on their accession to the throne, and informing them, that since the deposition of Sir Edmund Andros, the former government, under the Charter, had been resumed. They also mention the seizure of Andros, on his flight from Massachusetts, and his return to that Colony on the demand of that Colony.

1695, he was chosen by the Assembly to run the eastern boundry of the colony.

1713, taxed twelve shillings, six pence.

1717, his will proved. Executrix, wife, Esther Willard, but she declining by reason of age and inability, her son, Major Nathaniel III acted at her request, and by appointment of the Court. He confirmed deeds already made to sons Joseph II., Nathaniel III, Ebenezer III, and

made to sons Joseph III, Nathaniel III, Ephraim III, and
Benjamin of the Court. He continued deeds already
her son, Major Nathaniel III acted at her request, and by
Ballard, but she declining by reason of age and infirmity,
eastern boundary of the colony.

1698, he was chosen by the Assembly to run the

and his return to that Colony on the ceasing of that
the persons of Andros, on his flight from Massachusetts,
under the Charter, had been resumed. They also nominated
tion to the throne, and informing them, that since the
William and Queen Mary, congratulating them on their accession
Assembly, and the Deputy Governor, wrote a letter to King
mer-mill.

1690, January 20th, he and five others of the
heifer, a yearling, two mares, a colt, swine, sheep and a
thirty acres with, four oxen, seven cows, two steers, a
ing land, two acres of meadow, eight acres of pasture,

1687, he and his son, Joseph III and Major Nath-

1691 to 1698 he was an assistant, equivalent to

William III, and if any further division was made by the proprietors of Providence. Then the four sons were to share equally.

To sons Ebenezer and William, equally, the coal-house, and one half the forge, at death of himself and wife.

To loving wife Esther, all the rest of the movable estate, cattle and chattels, for life, and what remains at her death she to dispose of to her children or grandchildren, as she sees fit. Inventory 36 pounds, 19 shillings and 8 pence, namely, wearing apparel, six pewter platters, three pieces, three basins, five porringers, etc., brass and iron-ware, old books, money due for a cow sold, another cow, unsold, 4 pounds, 10 shillings, warming pan, smoothing irons, old bible, stillyards, etc.

The family account gives Samuel Miller, as the husband of Joseph Jenks II, daughter of Esther III, that she married Samuel Miller or Millard at Rehoboth, but the Rehoboth records are confusing. The record says Esther born in 1682 married Samuel Millard, July 20th. [illegible] had children Esther, John, Elizabeth, Alice, Margaret, Samuel. A record says Hannah.(Who should read Esther Jenks).

The marriage of Esther Jenks III to a Rehoboth man, led to or followed the marriage of your ancestor, Major Nathaniel Jenks III at Swansea to Hannah Bosworth, a grand-daughter of the famous historian and secretary, Nathaniel Morton, of Plymouth Colony, who was a nephew of Governor William Bradford, who had married his aunt, a

To loving wife Hester, all the rest of the mov-
able estate, cattle and chattels, for life, and what re-
mains at her death due to children of to her children or
Grandchildren, as she sees fit. Inventory 36 pounds,

etc., brass and iron-ware, old books, money due for
warning pan, smoothing irons, old bible, utility ware, etc.

The family account gives Samuel Miller, as the husband of Joseph Jenks II, daughter of Esther VII, Thus who married Samuel Miller or Millard at Marlboro, but the Marlboro records are confusing. The record says Esther Bowen in 1682 married Samuel Millard, July 20th. They had

A record says Hannah,(which should read Esther Jenks).

The marriage of Esther Jenks III to a Hemphill

man, led to or followed the marriage of your ancestor,

dominion William Brackett, who had married his sis-, a

share equally.

sister of his mother. Governor Bradford brought him up as his son, as George Morton, his father, died soon after their arrival.

The widow, Southworth, who married Governor Bradford, as his second wife, 1623, came, with the Morton family in the Ann, as did Anthony Dike, and many more of your ancestors, as will appear from time to time. This George had published in London, 1622 "Mourts Relations", the first history of Plymouth, and his brother-in-law, Governor Bradford's history, and the second, written 1647, but not published until 1855.

Secretary Nathaniel Morton's "New England Memorial", published 1669 in America, and also in England the same year. This will all be brought out more fully in the Genealogy of Hannah Bosworth, which will come in later.

To return to the separate history of the children of Joseph Jenks II, the oldest child, a son

1. Joseph III, born 1656, died 1740, at Providence. Known as the "Governor."

He married Martha Brown the grand-daughter of Chad. Brown and Obediah Holmes, the two first Baptist ministers, the first at Providence and the second at Newport. She was the mother of all of his nine children. He had a second wife, Alice, widow of John Carter, daughter of John and Sarah Whipple. No issue by her.

The names of his children were , as will be seen later.

His record in Austin is:

1681, Freeman

1688, August 6th, ratable estate, three acres of planting land, an orchard, three cows, a heifer, and a mare.

1691 to 1708, Deputy to the Assembly.

1698 to 1711 Speaker of House of Deputies.

1707 to 1711 Major of the Mainland.

1708 to 1712, Assistant or Magistrate.

1715 to 1727 Deputy Governor.

1727 to 1732 Governor of the Colony.

1719, he deeded to his son-in-law William Turpin and wife Catherine forty acres of land, for love and affection.

1720, July 7th, he was appointed Agent in England, on account of the refusal of Connecticut to stand to and comply with the bounds between the two Colonies, as settled by the Commissioners of both, at Stonington, in the year 1703, and also, of the further difference between this Colony and Massachusetts.

He was authorized to draw bills of exchange on the General Treasury, for the sum of 700 pounds sterling, if he shall need or require so much. He to be allowed 60 pounds sterling a year and expenses, and also 30 pounds to furnish himself with for the voyage.

He and the other Agent, Richard Partridge, sub-

He and the other Agents, Richard Partridge, sub-

60 pounds sterling a year and expenses, and also 60 pounds

if no small need or require so much. He to be allowed

Colony and Massachusetts.

He was authorized to draw bills of exchange on

1700, and also, of the further difference between this

by the Commissioners of both, at Stonington, in the year

comply with the bounds between the two Colonies, as settled

on account of the refusal of Connecticut to stand to and

tion.

and wife Catherine forty acres of land, for love and affec-

1727 to 1732 Governor of the Colony.

1708 to 1712, Assistant or Magistrate.

1698 to 1711 Speaker of House of Deputies.

1691 to 1708, Deputy to the Assembly.

1688, August 6th, rateable estate, three acres

sequently memorialized the King as to the Connecticut controversy, praying formally that : "They may not hereafter be molested, as they have hitherto been, to their very great prejudice.

His son, Dr. John Jenks, who accompanied him to England, died there of the small-pox contagion, 1721.

1721, he exhibited to the Assembly his accounts of disbursements of the Colonies' money, during his Agency, amounting to 300 pounds, 16 shillings, and it was approved and voted, that he draw thirty pounds, allowed him as a gratuity, out of the General Treasury, for his good services done the colony during his agency.

1726, January 10th, he was appointed by the Assembly one of the four Commissioners, to meet Commissioners from Connecticut, to settle line of partition of the two colonies.

1727 he wrote a letter in behalf of the General Assembly, to King George II, thanking him "For continuing unto us the great enjoyment of our ancient charter privileges, grea in their nature, but far greater by being suited to the circumstances of this, your Majesty's Colony; or rather in that we, your Majesty's subjects, have had our birth, growth and improvement under the same". He appraises him of "A regular and beautiful fortification of stone built at Newport, with a battery where may be mounted sixty guns."

of stone built at Hanover, with a battery where may be
one piece, drawn and improvement under the same".
or rather in that we, your Majesty's subjects, have ing
ag to the circumstances of this, your Majesty's Colony;
eges, first in their nature, but far greater by being suit-
1757 he wrote a letter in behalf of the General
two colonies.
one from Connecticut, to settle line of partition of the
1758, January 10th, he was appointed by the
vices done the colony during his absence.
quantity, out of the General Treasury, for his good ser-
and voted, that he drew thirty pounds, allowed him as a
1762, he wrighted to the Assembly his accounts

1727 to 1732 he was continuously Governor of Rhode Island, and had to live at Newport, as all Governors did, by the law. He was granted one hundred pounds to pay his expenses for removal. In 1732, although urged to continue as Governor, he refused to stand in another's place, saying that as his mental faculties were weaker, he felt that later on, he might not insist that he should continue when he was unworthy of doing so.

His second wife, Alice, died 1736. Her will left her property to her children by her first husband, Dexter. Inventory, two hundred and one pounds.

1740, the Governor died, August 25th. He was deemed to die intestate. "By reason of his insanity of mind". And his son, Nathaniel was appointed as administratory. Inventory of his estate, one hundred and twenty-four pounds, namely books, 15 pounds, two cows, flask, tobacco-box, wafer-box, two canes, wearing apparel 84 pounds 15 shillings. This was an honest official who had served his colony all his life, and in the highest station in its gift, yet he left so small an estate, an estate to be proud of in an official.

He left nine children, each named for some ancestor or kinsman, namely Joseph, Obediah, Catharine, Nathaniel, Martha, Lydia, John, Mary, Mother. These names are representative names in the Jenks, Brown and Holmes Genealogy.

2. The second child of Joseph Jenks II was Elizabeth III, born 1658; died 1740. She married Samuel Tefft, who was born 1644 and died 1725. They had ten children, who may be looked for in Austin's Genealogical Dictionary for further information, as will be the case in the daughters of this family. The names seem to be duplicated in each family and much confusion would take place, were we to give them.

3. Sarah Jenks III born 1660, died 1730, married Nathaniel Brown, son of John and Lydia Bucklin Brown. They had eleven children.

4. Major Nathaniel Jenks III, fourth child and second son of Joseph Jenks II, born 1662; died 1723. Married Hannah Bosworth, of Swansea, November 4th, 1686.

As this is your line of descent, importance should be paid to it. Their children were four in number, namely: Johnathan, Nathaniel, Jr., Hannah, Elizabeth.

Nathaniel, Jr., is your line. This Major Nathaniel III was next younger brother to the Governor; was freeman 1690, Captain, 1709, and 1712 to death, Major.

1709 he was a deputy to the Assembly.

1711 he and his brother Joseph were appointed to build a bridge at Pawtucket.

1723, will proved. To wife Hannah, and son, Nathaniel, Jr., the homestead, dwelling house, land at Attleboro, all right in the forge, smith-shop on east side

Attleboro, all right in the Corps, multi-shop on east side

Methuenel, Jr., the homestead, dwelling house, land at

1758, will proved. To wife Hannah, and son,

build a brig to at Dartmouth.

1711 he and his brother Joseph were appointed to

1700 he was a deputy to the Assembly.

Freeman 1690, Captain, 1703, and 1712 to death, Major.

anial III was next Voucher prother to the Governor; was

Methuenel, Jr., is your line. This Major Meth-

ncth.

number, namely: Johnathan, Methuenel, Jr., Hannah, Milne-

should be paid to it. Their children were four in

Married Hannah Bosworth, of Swansea, November 4th, 1686.

As this is your line of descent, importance

and second son of Joseph Jenks II, born 1688; died 1752,

4. Major Methuenel Jenks III, fourth child

They had eleven children.

ried Methuenel Brown, son of John and Lydia Bradlin Brown.

were we to give them.

3. [illegible] 1681, [illegible]

ceded in each family and much confusion would take place,

Tuft, who was born 1644 and died 1728. They had ten

of river. saw mill, corn-mill. All at Pawtucket. To wife, Hannah, use of half of this to death.

To daughter Elizabeth Jenks, fifty pounds.

To son Johnathan thirty pounds.

To two grandchildren, Johnathan and Mary, ten pounds each.

To daughter, Hannah Capron, five pounds.

Inventory, two hundred pounds.

5. Esther, third daughter and fifth child of Joseph Jenks II, married Samuel Miller, of Nehoboth, as mentioned previously, and she left children, as mentioned.

6. The sixth child and third son of Joseph Jenks II, namely Ebenezer III, married Mary Butterworth, of Swansea, March 4th, 1695.

Ebenezer was born 1669 and died 1726. His wife was born , and died later than 1726. She was a daughter of John and Sarah Wheeton Butterworth, of Swansea. They had in all fourteen children, as many of them will appear from time to time in this history, their names are given.

Sarah, born 1695, Ebenezer, 1699, Daniel 1701, Phoebe, 1703, Rufus, 1704, Rachael, 1706, Mary 1708, Joseph 1711, Mercy, 1712, Benjamin, 1714; Freelove, 1717, and Noah, 1717, twins, and Josial, 1720. This last Josiah is he who has caused some confusion in the genealogy, but search reveals that he left no children.

Austin's record of Rev. Ebenezer Jenks III:

1719 he is ordained pastor of the first Baptist Church in Providence, and he remained such until his death, 1726.

October 17th, administration to his widow, Mary. Inventory One Hundred and fifty pounds, namely: two oxen, five cows, three calves, a mare, nine sheep, a weaver's harness, stays and looms, books, etc.

7. The seventh child and fourth daughter of Joseph II, was Joanna III, born 1702, and married 1692, and died 1756. She married Major Sylvanus Scott, grandson of Richard Scott and his wife, Catharine Marbury Scott, who was a sister of the famous Ann Marbury Hutchinson (see elsewhere). The great age to which this Joanna lived, who saw her daughter Joanna marry Judge Daniel Jenks, son of Ebenezer and his daughter Rhoda, her grand-daughter marry Nicholas Brown, and as it is likely that the wealth of the Scott family thus descended through the Jenks family, into the Brown family, thus founding the famous mercantile house of Brown & Ives, which continues to this day as the most successful mercantile family in the State of Rhode Island.

From a book entit ed: "New England Judged", by George Bishope, 1703, published in London, it appears that Richard Scott's wife was present, when a Quaker's ears were cut off for that crime, in Boston, 1658. She pro-

tested vehemently, and was punished in Boston, "with ten cruel stripes, with a three fold, corded, knotted whip, and though some of you knew her father, and called him Mr. Marbury, and knew her as a mother of many children, and of unblemished life, yet ye whipped her for all of that, and moreover told her; you are more likely to have a law to hang her if she came thither again". To which she answered: "If God calls us, woe be to us if we come not, and I question not but Him whom we love will make us not to count our lives dear unto ourselves, for the sake of his name."

To which your Governor, John Endicott, replied: "And we will be as ready to take away your lives as ye shall be to lay them down."

Her daughter, Patience, eleven years old was sent to prison. Others also were banished for the Quaker faith.

Richard Scott and wife, Catharine Marbury, had [illegible] children, four daughters and two sons, John and another unknown.

From Apple's Cyclopeadia for her sisters' history.

History of Ann Marbury Hutchinson, sister of Catharine Marbury Scott, and wife of Richard Scott, of Ipswich, a kinsman of your ancestor Ursula Scott Kimball, who will appear in the Prince Genealogy.

The Rev. Francis Marbury, father of these sisters,

was a highly connected minister, originally of Lincolnshire, later of London. His daughter Ann married about 1612, William Hutchinson, of a very distinguished Lincolnshire family, and cousin to Col. John Hutchinson, prominent in the Civil War. She came to Boston 1633, with her sister, Catharine.

Governor Winthrop says she brought two "dangerous errors", "first that the person of the Holy Ghost dwells in a justified person; second that no sanctification can help to evidence to us our justification."

She gathered in Boston on Thursdays, after the lecture, the women of Boston, and so became a type of the Western Woman, two hundred and fifty years ahead of time. She certainly upset things in Boston, and as bearing on this history at the time, Anthony Dike, who arrived in Boston, bearing urgent despatches, asking for help for the Connecticut towns, to save them from Piquot Indians, found all Boston in uproar, about Mrs. Hutchinson's pet theory. The agitation was thus fraught with danger to the infant colonies, and on this eve of the Pequot war, 1637, a company of militia was found unwilling to march, because its Chaplain was held to be "under a covenant of works". When things had come to such a pass, it was thought to be high time to put Mrs. Hutchinson down. She was tried for heresy and sedition and banished from the Colony, with many of her following of Antinomians.

in a justified person; accord that no ascertainment can help to evidence to its own justification."

She [illegible] in Boston on Thursday, after the lecture, the woman of Boston, and so become a type of the

She currently upset things in Boston, and as leading on

Dixie History at the time, Anthony Dike, who arrived in

Connecticut towns, to save them from Puget Indians, found

all Boston in uproar, about Mrs. Hutchinson's pet theory.

colonies, and on this eve of the Pequot war, 1637, a cere-

Creighton was held to be "under a covenant of works".

for honour and position and banished from the colony, with

many of her following of Antinomians.

She and her husband and fifteen children removed to the Island of Aquidneck, where it is claimed she bought for forty fathom of wampum, and founded the town of Portsmouth, while Coddington founded Newport.

After the death of her husband, about 1643, she removed to what is now called Pryer's Neck, New York, after one of her followers a man by the name of Throgmorton. About that same time the Indian War broke out and her entire family of fifteen, with the sold exception of a little daughter, were killed by the Indians. The daughter was afterwards ransomed by the Dutch.

Lady Moody from Swampscot removed at the same time to Gravesend, where she was saved by the same fate by the bravery of her followers..

Mrs. Hutchinson's death was considered by the Massachusetts authorities as a judgment of God against her for her heresies. Her eldest son, however, Captain Edward Hutchinson was a very prominent and useful citizen of the colony and was killed in the Indian War, 1675 at Brookfield, Massachusetts. A descendant of his, Thomas Hutchinson, was the Royal Governor of Massachusetts up to 1774, when he fled into England and died there about 1780, having written a history of New England, which has been considered a standard work. He is supposed to have been the man who carried Governor's manuscript history of Plymouth to England.

Richard Scott's daughter, Mary, who had been in prison as a Quaker in Boston, married Christopher Holder, 1660. He was a representative Quaker, who had suffered all manner of torture for his faith.

She died 1665 and left two children. Hannah, another daughter, married in 1667 Walter Clark, and she died 1681. They left five children. Patience, another daughter who was mentioned as imprisoned in Boston, at the age of eleven, married Henry Moore, and they left six children. One son left no issue. The oldest child, a son John, married Rebecca . The tradition is that he was shot by the Indians. Roger Williams writes to John Winthrop and says: "John Scott is shot, at Pawtucket Ferry, 1676.

In 1660 Roger Williams alludes to Mrs. Richard Scott, in a letter to Governor John Winthrop of Connecticut she says:

"Sir, my neighbor, Mrs. Scott is come from England and what the whip at Boston could not do, converse with Friends in England and their arguments have, in a great measure, drawn her from the Quakers, and wholly from their meetings.

Richard Scott, it is claimed, was the first Quaker in Providence. His son, John, who married Elizabeth Winton, of Hempstead, left six children, who married and had children. The sixth child, Major Sylvanus Scott, youngest and last child of John, and grandson of

all manner of torture for his faith.

She died 1665 and left two children. Hannah, another daughter, married in 1667 Walter Clark, and also

age of eleven, married Henry Deere, and they left six children. One son left no issue. The oldest child, a son John, married Rebecca . The tradition is

that he was shot by the Indians. Roger Williams written to John Winthrop and says: "John Scott is shot, at Pawcatuck [illegible]."

In 1660 Roger Williams alludes to Mrs. Richard Scott, in a letter to Governor John Winthrop of Connecticut, as such:

"Sir, my neighbor, Mrs. Scott is come from England and what the ship at Boston could not do, converse with friends in England and their arguments have, in a great measure.

Richard Scott, it is claimed, was the first Quaker in Providence. His son, John, who married Elizabeth Wotton, of Hempor, left six children, who married and left children. The sixth child, Major Sylvanus Scott, [illegible] and first child of John, and grandson of

Richard, married Joanna Jenks, as mentioned, and their children and descendants figure throughout the history of the family of Jenks, as it proceeds.

This Richard Scott was from Glemsford, Suffolk County, England, and, by certain unquestionable documentary evidence, is acknowledged by the Scott family of Scott's Hall, Kent County, England as a relative of that ancient family, and of kin to the Scott families of Essex and Suffolk. This should be borne in mind, as regards kinship to your Ursula Scott, of Ipswich, who will appear in your Prince genealogy as sister of Thomas Scott, of that place. Thomas Scott and family and his sister Usurla and family, came direct from England to Ipswich, New England, as did Richard Scott..

Richard Scott appears to have been the richest colonist in Rhode Island. His wealth seemed to consist largely of ready monty, and at his death he left the largest estate, while Benedict Arnold of Newport, left the second largest estate in Rhode Island, but his wealth was mostly in land.

Major Sylvanus Scott, at death, left an estate of 3,604 pounds, 10 shillings and 6 pence, in taxes and money. Administration to his widow, Joanna, 1742.

Their daughter Esther married Thomas Sayles.

Sarah married Hopkins. At the death of the widow her inventory was 2,214 pounds. They had eleven children. This large space has been given to a daughter

from the fact that her children intermarried so considerably with the Jenks family in later years.

We now return to the list of Joseph Jenk's II children.

His eighth child, a daughter, Abigail III and fifth daughter of Joseph Jenks II, married Thomas Whipple, son of Thomas Whipple and wife, Mary Harris Whipple, and they had eleven children.

9. The ninth child of Joseph Jenks II, and his fourth son, was William Jenks III, born 1675, died 1765, October 2nd. He married first Patience Sprague, daughter of Johnathon and Mehitable Holbrook Sprague, and they had ten children. His record is :

1715, taxed 14 shillings, 6 pence.

1720, granted land at Blackstone River.

1727 to 1738, Deputy to the Assembly.

1731, a member of a Boundary Commission between Massachusetts and Rhode Island, and a Commissioner of War in the French and Indian Wars, 1745 to 1760.

1731, allowed 100 pounds sterling by the Assembly to build a bridge, at Pawtucket.

1734, Judge of the Inferior Court of Common Pleas for County of Providence.

1739, Appointed by the Assembly to rebuild the bridge at Pawtucket.

1739, Deputy for Smithfield.

1740, Commissioner on a Boundary Commission

1765, Inventory of 12 pounds, 8 shillings and 6 pence. Presented by Johnathan Jenks and widow Mary. Stephen Jenks a witness, testified that he was in his right mind and capable of making the will.

10. Mary Jenks, tenth child of Joseph Jenks II married her own uncle, Daniel Jenks II, of Lynn, for his second wife., and by her he had one daughter, Mary. This Daniel Jenks II was a very industrious builder of mills, all over the State of Rhode Island. He was a son of Joseph Jenks I, of Lynn, by his second wife, Elizabeth. He had married a wife before coming to Rhode Island, and had several children by her. His family, however, seem to have settled in a different part of the state and we hear little of it.

Judge William Jenks III appears to have officiated at weddings in almost every instance.

To understand the improvement of mills by this family of Jenks, for be it known that until they built mills in America, it was the custom to saw lumber by one man standing in a saw-pit below, while another stood above him, and so they drew a saw back and forth by hand.

This way of sawing lumber is still in use in many parts of England. And in making wheat into flour and corn into meal, a mortar and pestle were used. The introduction of mills by this family of Jenks became so general that the former American custom rapidly disappeared.

and capable of making the will.

10. Mary Jenks, tenth child of Joseph Jenks II married her own uncle, Daniel Jenks II, of John, for his second wife., and by her he had one daughter, Mary.

This Daniel Jenks II was a very industrious builder of

he had married a wife before coming to Rhode Island, and had several children by her. His family, however, seem to have settled in a different part of the state and we hear little of it.

Judge William Jenks III appears to have officiated at weddings in almost every instance.

To understand the improvement of mills by this family of Jenks, for be it known that until they built mills in America, it was the custom to saw lumber by one man standing in a saw-pit below, while another stood above him, and so they drew a saw back and forth by hand.

This way of sawing lumber is still in use in many parts of England. And in making wheat into flour and corn into meal, a mortar and pestle were used. The introduction of mills by this family of Jenks became so

Appleton's Cyclopaedia says: "Joseph Jenks, Inventor, born in Colebrooke, near Bromely, County of Gallop, 1602, on the Welch border, near the Severn River. He died in that part of Lynn, now called Saugus, 16th of March , 1683, aged eighty-one. He was induced to come from Hammersmith, London, 1646, as a Master Mechanic, to establish the iron works, the First Foundry and Forge in the Colonies.

We leave out the mention of his various inventions as we have given them before.

It is said his chief aim in coming to America was to forward his own inventive faculties. A copy of the Pine Tree Coinage, produced by him for the Colony is a pine tree in the centre, 1652, and the word "Massachusetts" around the tree, and the reverse has the date, 1652 and XII which means twelve pence, and that was the coinage used for a very great period.

The Commissioner of Patents of the United States, 1844, pronounced the first improvement of scythes by him of the greatest utility and advantage in mowing, and it had not been improved upon until the machines of the present horse drawing order were made.

In 1667 he sought Colonial aid to establish wire drawing machinery. He was the projenitor of all who bear the name in the United States.

His son, Joseph II, born in Buckinghamshire, 1632, died in Providence, 1716, aged 84.

1808, died in Providence, 1710, aged 84.

the name in the United States.

drawing machinery. He was the protagonist of all who bear

In 1697 he sought Colonial aid to establish wire

more drawing order were made.

not been improved upon until the machines of the present

the greatest utility and advantage in moving, and it had

The Commissioner of Patents of the United States,

used for a very great period.

XII which means twelve pence, and that was the coinage

around the tree, and the reverse has the date, 1682 and

tree in the centre, 1682, and the word "Massachusetts"

was to forward his own inventive faculties. A copy of the

It is said his object in coming to America

as we have given them before.

We leave out the mention of his version & inventions

the Colonies.

establish the iron works, the first foundry and forge in

March , 1688, aged eighty-one. He was induced to come

he died in that part of Lynn, now called Saugus, left of

About 1647, he followed his father to Lynn, and removed to Pawtucket about 1670 and built the first house there. All of his sons and married daughters built houses there, and he was the founder of machine manufacturing, now so important to Pawtucket and all surrounding cities.

He bought the Falls of the Blackstone River. He was an Assistant in the Rhode Island government.

His son, Joseph III was a land surveyor at first, and was engaged in surveying the boundaries between Massachusetts , Rhode Island and Connecticut, for many years.

He was a member of the General Assembly from 1679 to 1693, Clerk and Speaker in succeeding years. Commissioner on all the boundary Commissions during his life.

Was Rhode Island Agent in London, 1720 to 1725. Lieutenant Governor, 1717 to 1725, and Governor 1727 to 1732.

He was a giant in stature, being seven feet, two inches in his stockings, and well built up in his figure.

Judge Daniel Jenks was son of the Rev. Ebeneezer, born 1701.

In 1763, the Rev. Mr. Stiles, a Newport Congregational Minister, had been authorized to draw up a plan for the foundation of a Baptist College, but on its submission to the Assembly at Newport, Judge Daniel Jenks exposed a plot of the Congregationalists, who had inserted eight out of twelve of the Managing Committee, so as to control the

of twelve of the Managing Committee, so as to control the
plot of the Congregationalists, who had incurred eight out
the foundation of a Baptist College, but on its subsidence
In 1763, the Rev. Mr. Stiles, a Newport Congrega-
Judge Daniel Lewis was son of the Rev. Nehemiah,
indoss in his stocking, and well built up in his figure.
He was a giant in stature, being seven feet, two
Lieutenant Governor, 1717 to 1728, and Governor 1727 to
Commissioner on all the boundary Commissions during his
to 1695, Clerk and Speaker in succeeding years.
He was a member of the General Assembly from 1679
ommetta, Rhode Island and Connecticut, for many years.
His son, Joseph III was a land surveyor at first,
so important to Newtonites and all surrounding cities.

college. The bill was thrown out and Judge Daniel Jenks was empowered to draw up the charter for the college of Rhode Island for Baptists, which he did, and the bill was passed 1764, and the first class was held at Warren, 1766, but owing to the liberality of the Brown family and Judge Daniel Jenks, Mr. Brown's father-in-law, it was established and the first building constructed in Providence, 1770.

In 1804, the name was changed from the College of Rhode Island to that of Brown University. Nicholas Brown gave it in his life time alone over $100,000.00

The only member of the Jenks family mentioned in Appleton's Cyclopaedia, in 1800, is that of Hon. Thomas A. Jenks, statesmann of Rhode Island, who, in 1868, introduced and carried in Congress, the first general Civil Service Law, and also a National bankrupt law. These were his principal services.

Ancestry of Judge Daniel Jenks.

Rev. Ebeneezer Jenks, father of Daniel Jenks, married March 4th, 1695, at Swansea, Mary Butterworth, daughter of Samuel Butterworth. Samuel Butterworth appears first at Weymouth, Mass., as a freeman, 1640. In 1643 he appears at Rehoboth, with the colony of Weymouth people who had migrated with the Rev. Mr. Samuel Newman.

John Butterworth, probably his son, appears with him here at the same time.

In 1663, this John Butterworth was one of the founders of the Baptist church of the Rev. John Miles, who

came to America from Swansea, Wales, in 1663, bringing some Welch with him, and he sometimes held his services in the Welch language.

His wife was Ann Humfrey, who was a daughter of Colonel John Humfrey, of Lynn, Mass., and his wife was the lady Susan Humfrey, a daughter of the Earl of Lincoln, by his wife Elizabeth Knyvet.

By each of these lines came the Plantagenet blood of the Royal Line of England. The Eyres de Clinton were descended from that Countess of Salisbury, executed in the time of Henry the Eighth, called then the last of the Plantagenets.

Elizabeth Knyvet was from the Yorkist blood of the Plantagenet line, by the marriage of the first Duke of Norfolk, slain on Bosworth Field, with a Princess of the Blood Royal. King Richard III made him a Duke 1483, and by that right the family of Norfolk hold the Premiere Dukedom of England.

The Americans are interested in this line of descent generally, from the fact that not only the very great interest which the Countess of Lincoln took in New England, but also that Sir Ferdinand G. Gorges was also descended from this same Duke of Norfolk. Hence the Gorges family and the Lincoln family were cousins, and performed a great part in the early history of New England.

The connection of this genealogy with the Rev.

performed a great part in the early history of New England.
Gorges family and the Lincoln family were cousins, and
descended from this same Duke of Norfolk. Hence the
England, but also that Sir Ferdinand O. Gorges was also
great interest which the Countess of Lincoln took in New
by that right the family of Norfolk hold the Premiere
Duredom of England.

The Americans are interested in this line of
descent generally, from the fact that not only the very

the Plantagenet line, by the marriage of the first Duke of
Norfolk, also on Bosworth Field, with a Princess of the
Blood Royal. King Richard III made him a Duke 1483, and

time of Henry the Eighth, called then the Lark of the

By each of these lines came the Plantagenet blood
of the Royal Line of England. The Eynes de Clinton were

John Miles and his Baptist church at Swansea, as well as the Baptist church at Providence and in Newport, with the genealogy of the Jenks family, will appear by a perusal of a history of the Baptist denomination in America, written by the Rev. David Benedict, the pastor of the Baptist church at Pawtucket, Rhode Island, published in 1813, in two volumes of about 1200 pages. This history gives a complete sketch of the founding of this church, and the material which appears in this genealogy has been drawn not only by the writer but by other genealogists from that history, and as Mrs. Alice Dike Miller informs us that her ancestors had written a history of the Baptists, which had been borrowed by Mrs. Benedict at some time, and never returned, we may say that the return comes now, from the fact that we are enabled by that history to give not only a better genealogy of the Jenks family, but its connection with the Baptist church, which seems to have been of the greatest importance to each.

The genealogical connection of this village of Swansea with the different lines of ancestry will appear as we progress. The following will interest the husband of Jessie Scott Dike Williams. So when we say that in the history of Lynn, the family of John Humfrey occupies a very large part of thet history, it may be interesting to follow him for a moment.

Colonel John Humfrey, in 1641, having met with financial reverses in America, returned to England with his

family. His daughter Ann married first a Mr. Palmes, perhaps a brother of that Major Palmes, of New London, who married a brother of John Winthrop, Jr., and was prominent in New England history in the Philip War, and in the French and Indian War as Major Palmes, of New London.

The writer discovered something which may not be known in history elsewhere, in connection with this family, and may explain the desire to remain in temporary obscurity. In looking up the genealogy of the Pelham family, he found a record of "Humfrey Pelham", an eminent musical composer, time of Charles II; in the "History of National Biography of England", under the name Humfrey Pelham, it says, a nephew of Colonel John Humfrey, who was "Sword Bearer at the great trial of the King, Charles I, at Westminster Hall, 1649." In the procession of the King to the court-room in Westminster Hall, it would appear that Colonel John Humfrey bore the sword of Justice before Judge Bradshaw, so it is evident that when the restoration took place, all those who participated in any way in this trial went into hiding. Hugh Peters hid in vain at Southwark, London. He was taken, tried, and by false testimony convicted, 1660, and executed in October. Our Harry Vane was also captured and executed in 1662.

As Colonel John Humfrey saw these executions, he doubtless went into hiding. It is said he died about this time.

So we find, in 1663 the arrival of the Rev. John Miles, who had married the widow of Mr. Palmes, namely this Ann Humfrey Palmes, who had a daughter, Susanna Palmes, by her first husband. She and her child came with the Rev. John Miles and his children.

From Benedict's History of the Baptists, we find that Rev. John Miles had established the first Baptist Church in Wales, at Swansea, 1649, but on the disestablishment of the non-conformist churches, in 1652, he came to America, bringing his church records, and some of his Welch congregation.

With the advice and consent of Plymouth Colony, he established himself at Swansea, 1663, having in his congregation the family of James Brown, whose wife was a Howland of our line of ancestry, and Captain Thomas Willett, who is famous in history as the first English Mayor of New York City, but who after being Mayor, returned to this Swansea and died here. His wife was a sister of James Brown, and from them are descended all the distinguished family of Willett in America.

Owing to the protection of such distinguished men as Captain Thomas Willett and James Brown, this church was not molested by Plymouth Colony, and, as will appear from time to time, played an important part in the genealogical history of your family.

Mr. Miles was a man of great erudition, and like

Mr. Miles was a man of great erudition, and like

history of your family.

not molested by Plymouth Colony, and, as will appear from

as Captain Thomas Willett and James Brown, this church was

Owing to the protection of such distinguished men

family of Willett in America.

Brown, and from them are descended all the distinguished

Swansea and died here. His wife was a sister of James

New York City, but who after being Mayor, returned to this

who is famous in history as the first English Mayor of

land of our line of ancestry, and Captain Thomas Willett,

organization the family of James Brown, whose wife was a New-

With the advice and consent of Plymouth Colony,

Church in Wales, at Swansea, 1649, but on the disestablish-

that Rev. John Miles had established the first Baptist

Byron Beneficte's History of the Baptists, we find

the Rev. Samuel Newman, his neighbor, at Rehoboth, did teach Latin, Greek, Hebrew, in addition to the ordinary studies So we may esteem that an intellectual life existed in these two places, Swansea and Rehoboth, which fully equalled, if it did not exceed, that in any other town at this period.

After Mr. Newman's death, Mr. Miles preached once in two weeks in his church at Rehoboth, showing the kindly feeling which existed between the Baptists of Swansea and the independents of Rehoboth, at this time.

Mr. Miles built a strong house, which stands to this day, and is known as Miles Blockhouse. The writer has visited it. It stands near a bridge, over a river called Palmer's River, and at this exact point commenced the Philip War. During that war, this blockhouse was constantly occupied by the Collonial troops.

The church has been removed some little distance from this bridge and the fourth church now stands on the foundations now occupied by the first. This is known as the Fourth Baptist Church in America.

In the history of the Baptist Church and the Jenks family, the thread of the Brown family makes it necessary to give a short sketch of that family, which we will do later on.

As he founded the first church in Providence, 1642, we may esteem that Obediah Holmes, who founded the Second church in Newport, after having suffered in body

in Boston, for his faith. and as Obediah Holmes for a time was connected with Mr. Newman's church at Rehoboth, his history seems to bear a part in the church history of that place, for he is mentioned as leading out a certain number of Mr.Newman's church members and that he formed temporarily a Baptist church in Rehoboth, which was later transferred to Newport..

Miles Blockhouse is about three miles from the present City of Warren, and about ten miles from Providence, and here, as we shall show, his step-daughter, Susanna Holmes, married Mr. Samuel Aver , of New London, Conn., on the 25th of October, 1686. Her history may be seen henceforth in the Williams-Walsworth Genealogy, which comes down to Dr. George Williams, the husband of Jessie Scott Dike.

Mr. Nathaniel Jenks III married here November 4th, 1680, Hannah Bosworth, and this is your line of ancestry. But the Rev. John Miles was dead at this time. We have this record in Swansea:

"Mr. John Miles, pastor of this church, died February 3d, 1682/3."

We have mentioned that in Lynn there is extand a deed of property in the possession of Newhall, the historian, of the property of John Humfrey, there deceased by this Ann, last surviving child---1682. This entry occurs in the records of Swansea:

"Mrs. Ann Miles, deceased, 17th day of December,

[illegible]

[illegible] Mr. Newman's church members and that he formed temporary [illegible] history seems to bear a part in the church history of that place. For he is mentioned as leading out a certain number

[illegible]

Miles Bloodmouse is about three miles from the present City of Vernon, and about ten miles from Providence, and here, as we shall show, his step-daughter, Susanna Holmes, married Mr. Daniel Ayer, of New London, Conn., on the 25th of October, 1680. Her history may be soon [illegible] in the Williams-Walworth Genealogy, which comes down to Dr. George Williams, the husband of Jennie Scott Dike.

Mr. Nathaniel Yeoke III married here November 4th, 1694, Hannah Bowerth, and this is your line of descent. Just the day, John Miles was dead at this time.

We have this record in Swansea:

"Mr. John Miles, pastor of this church, died February 3d, 1681/2."

We have mentioned that in Lynn there is extend a deed of property in the possession of Newell, the historian of the Society of Olden Industry, there deeded by this Ann, that marvelous child---1682. This early occurs in the records of Swansea:

"Mrs. Ann Miles, deceased, 17th day of December,

1693. The name is spelled both Miles and Myles, in the records, and this closes the career of she who was born Ann Humfrey, daughter of Col. John Humfrey, as mentioned.

Another entry, which is of importance to this family, follows:

"Captain John Gorham was buried the 5th day of February, 1675/6. As he was your ancestor, and died here from wounds which he received here in the Great Swamp Fight, December 19th, 1675, this entry is of interest. Whether he died in Miles Blockhouse, or in that of Mr. James Brown, his brother-in-law, we know not. The writer could not find his place of burial, in fact the burial place of the earliest inhabitants is difficult of identification.

The following entry covers the death notice of our common ancestor, both of Dike and Scott families:

"Deceased the 21st December, 1687, in her eightieth year, Mrs. Elizabeth Howland, widow of John Howland, of the Mayflower. At her death there were but two passengers of the Mayflower remaining alive. Whether she belonged to the Baptist faith, as her daughter Mrs. James Brown did, we know not.

This entry is of Mrs. Dorothy Brown, wife of Mr. John Brown, deceased, January 27th, 1673, in her ninety-eighth year. She was the mother of James Brown and the wife of Captain Thomas Willett, an ancestor there-

and the wife of Captain Thomas Willett, an ancestor there-

Anne Humfrey, daughter of Col. John Humfrey, as mentioned.

"Captain John Gorham was buried the 8th day of February, 1678/9. As he was your ancestor, and died here from wounds which he received here in the Great Swamp

Whether he died in Miles Bloodgoods, or in that of Mr. James Brown, his brother-in-law, we know not. The writer could not find his place of burial, in fact the burial place of the earliest inhabitants is difficult of identification.

The following entry covers the death notice of our common ancestor, both of Dike and Scott families:

eightieth year, Mrs. Elizabeth Howland, widow of John Howland, of the Mayflower. At her death there were but two passengers of the Mayflower remaining alive. Whether she belonged to the Duplat faith, as her daughter Mrs.

Mate entry is of Mrs. Dorothy Brown, wife of

fore of all of that family, as mentioned previously.

Savage says of Obediah Holmes, as connected with Rehoboth, and indirectly of this church at Swansea:

"Obediah Holmes, of Salem, was from Preston, Lancashire. Was pervert in faith and excommunicated. Went to Rehoboth first, then to Newport, preacher 1652 to 1682. Died aged 76. He had a part in the settlement of New Jersey. His son, Obediah Holmes was a proprietor and a judge in New Jersey. He had a son in Newport who lived to the age of 95, 1770. Of his descendants, 1790, they were estimated at five thousand.

As we have observed the marriage here of Nathaniel Jenks III, 1680, and of Esther Jenks, who married a Miller of this place, so Ebenezer Jenks married here March 4th, 1695, Mary Butterworth, daughter of John and granddaughter of Samuel Butterworth. John Butterworth married here September 4th, Hannah Wheaton, daughter of Robert Wheaton, and their child, Mary Butterworth was born 20th of October, 1677 and married Ebenezer Jenks, on March 4th, 1695, and they were the parents of those fourteen children we have mentioned.

Before leaving Mr. John Miles, we might mention that his son, Samuel Miles went into England, obtained his degree at the University, was ordained in England and returned to Boston, 1683, and became the first Rector, of the first Episcopal Church in New England, namely, King's

Chapel, Boston, and on a visit to England, in 1705 he received from Queen Anne, a communion service for that Chapel, which still remains.. He died, 1725, in Boston.

To return to the ancestry of the name of Jenks, the son of Major Nathaniel Jenks III and Hannah Epworth Jenks, was Captain Nathaniel Jenks, Jr.,IV, known as Junior throughout life, to distinguish him from his cousin, Nathaniel Jenks IV, son of Joseph Jenks III, the Governor, by his wife, Catharine Scott, daughter of Major Sylvanus Scott.

Nathaniel Jenks, Jr., IV, your ancestor, son of Major Nathaniel III, married Lydia Arnold, 1722/3, daughter of Eleazer Arnold, Jr., and Sarah Hawkins, his wife, who was a daughter of William Hawkins and Lydia Ballou Hawkins, his wife. This Hawkins ancestry will appear again, for Captain Stephen Jenks V, son of this Nathaniel IV, will marry another Sarah Hawkins, a grand-daughter of the William Hawkins here mentioned, thus making a double Arnold and Hawkins descent, as will appear in the separate genealogies of those two families. Repetitions have here been indulged in to avoid confusion.

"From Arnold's Vital Statistics of Providence:

"Among the death records is that of Major Nathaniel Jenks III, [illegible], died 1735, son of Joseph Jenks II. His son, Nathaniel Jenks IV, also continued in the same work in Pawtucket as his ancestors, died 1741, and Stephen,

called Captain Stephen Jenks V, who continued in the same line of work as his ancestors, only more importantly, died 1800, at Pawtucket.

Colonel Eleazer Jenks VI, son of Captain Stephen V, was a Colonel in the Revolutionary War, rising from Ensign, 1775, through all the grades to Colonel, 1778, and so continued to the end of the War. His regiment was the First Rhode Island Militia and during the three to four years occupation of Newport, by the British Army, the services of this Regiment were in continual demand. His death notice is under those of the Providence Journal in Arnold's Statistics Volumes 2 to 3.

"Colonel Eleazer Jenks, in his seventy-sixth year at Pawtucket, September 28th, 1822.

Also this notice in Providence Journal: "Silence Jenks, widow of Colonel Eleazer Jenks, aged 75, October 11th, 1826, and of other deaths of your immediate family, is that of Mrs. Margaret Jenks, widow of Isabod V, in her 79th year, 1821. Her husband was a brother of your ancestor Captain Stephen V. He was born 1731/2, son of Nathaniel IV.

The death of Moses VI, son of Stephen V, took place 1820, at the age of 68.

Jerahmeel VI died at the age of fifty-nine at Pawtucket, June 15th, 1821, son of Captain Stephen V, was born 1762. These death notices are placed here as coming from Arnold's Vital Records, Volumes 2 and 3, and are of

Dermmeol VI died at the age of fifty-nine at
Dynde 1800, at the age of 68.

The death of Moses VI, son of Stephen V, took
Dermmeol IV.

Her husband was a brother of Jonn
rs that of Mrs. Margaret Jenks, widow of Isabod V, in Mar
75th year, 1881. Her husband was a brother of Jonn
Jenks, widow of Colonel Hiezer Jenks, aged 75, October
vices of this Regiment were in constant demand. His
death notice is under Diocese of the Providence Journal
Years occupation of Newport, by the British Army, the ser-
so continued to the end of the War. His regiment was the
V, was a Colonel in the Revolutionary War, rising from
Ensign, 1775, through all the grades to Colonel, 1778, and
1800, at Pawtucket.

interest as being the names given by Mrs. Alice Dike Miller, as from her mother, in a list given to the writer, which he had to clear up by the aid of these statistics., namely Icabod, by the death of his widow we have made his record. We have given the death of Moses VI, son of Captain Stephen V, and nephew of Icabod V, of Jerahmeel,VI, another son of Captain V, and lastly, of Colonel Eleazer VI, and his widow, Silence. This name Silence was in Mrs. Miller's list, but her name for the Colonel was given as Josiah, and this we had to clear up by a search of the record, which has proved that his name was Eleazer, and not Josiah, and that Silence was not a daughter, but was the mother of Sarah, your line of ancestry, and we have discovered, from Mrs. Ivey's list that Charlotte was a daughter of this Silence by her husband Colonel Eleazer, and that she married Luke Hitchcock, late of New York, at North Providence. And then we find that another child of Colonel Eleazer was Stephen, who married and had another Stephen, and here are the two names which Mrs. Miller gives, as Stephen the younger and Stephen the youngest.

The Josiah given us by her, as her mother's grand-father, we find to have been a certain Josiah IV, son of the Rev. Ebeneezer III, born 1720, who married his own cousin, Martha IV, a sister of Captain Stephen V, of your immediate line. She was born 1724 and married Josiah, her Cousin, 1742. They seem to have had no children and

he died very soon, for we find the record of his widow's marriage, 1745/6, to Abraham Scott, another cousin of hers and son of Major Sylvanus Scott, and as we will show later in a letter from Mrs. Ivey, that she probably never had any children by either husband, and that the name Josiah was probably in her mother's mind from some reason or another it got written down in Mrs. Miller's list as that of her maternal grandfather, when in reality, the name was Eleazer, which we shall show. No Josiah but this single one appears anywhere in the record of the Jenks family in Brevidence.

We now give a list as taken from Arnold's Vital Records, Volume 2 and 3, of the children born to Captain Nathaniel Jenks IV, and wife, Lydia Arnold:

1. Martha, born 1724, married first Josiah Jenks, 1742, and secondly Abraham Scott, 1745, as just mentioned.

2. Stephen V, known as Captain Stephen, born 1726, married 23d of November, 1746, to Sarah Hawkins, daughter of Elijah and Hannah (Arthur) Hawkins, of same Hawkins family as mentioned in the Arnold Genealogy, which will follow,

It was this Eleazer , a family name, which came to the Jenks family, and was given by Captain Stephen V, to his son, Eleazer VI, in honor of Eleazer Arnold, his maternal grand-father, as will appear in the Arnold Genealogy. The name Stephen itself came to the Jenks family from the

Arnold family, as will be seen in the Arnold Genealogy, your first Arnold ancestor in America was Thomas Arnold, of Watertown, and Pawtucket. His brother William, had in addition to Benedict Arnold, who will appear frequently, another son, Stephen, of Pawtucket, and this Stephen was honored in the Janks family by our Stephen V.

3. The third child of Nathaniel Jenks IV, Lydia, born 1728, married at North Providence, Christopher Brown, and they had children. Lydia Arnold, the first wife of Nathaniel Jenks IV, died, 1728. But in 1730, he married Bridget Blake. By her he had four children, namely

4. Joanna, born 1730, who married Daniel Branch, and we find in Benedict's History of the Baptists, 1813, that a descendant of this marriage was then a young Baptist clergyman, pastor of the church at Providence.

5. Icabod V, who married Margaret Bagely. She died 1821. We have given her death notice.

Icabod was born 1730, and was one of those names in the list of Mrs. Miller, as his brother Stephen had been, and his brother-in-law Josiah had been.

6 & 7. James and Jemimah V, twins. James removed to Lookville, New Jersey, and his descendants may be found in New York and New Jersey at this day.

Captain Nathaniel Jenks IV, father of the foregoing, died 1741, and he appears to as his ancestors did, to have continued as proprietor of the Works in Pawtucket.

Pawnbroker.

His name is mentioned in the local records as serving in many ways in public office and Nathan and Nathaniel, Jr., the two cousins, are so often confused in the early records that it is difficult to properly credit them in the public service.

The children of Stephen Jenks V, and known as Captain Stephen, by his wife, Sarah Hawkins, married November 23d, 1746, from the vital records we have:

1. Eleazer VI, born March 31st, 1747, married Silence Shaw. He is the Colonel and your ancestor.

2. Nathaniel VI, born June 3d, 1749.

3. Moses VI, born September 14th, 1751. Married Lois Tingley, of Rehoboth. He died 1820.

4. Stephen VI, born March 31st, 1756. Married Sarah Arnold, 1775.

5. Benjamin VI, born September 2nd, 1758.

6. Jerahmeel VI, born July 18th, 1762. Died 1821. These six names are all that are registered in the vital records as children of Captain Stephen V, and in this list we find the names of Moses, Stephen and Jerahmeel, three of the names mentioned in Mrs. Miller's list.

Colonel Eleazer Jenks VI, son of Captain Stephen V, married Silence [illegible], and they had children, as mentioned in the will of the Colonel,

1. Charlotte, who married August 24th, 1806, at North Providence, Luke Pitcher, and they had children.

Among them was one Charlotte Hitchcock, who appears to have married an Edward P. Miller, and through the Miller family we have fortunately been enabled to completely identify the Sarah, daughter of this Colonel Stephen, who is your ancestor..

To return to the other children of Colonel Eleazer, as in his will,

2. Stephen VII, who was a Colonel of Militia, at Pawtucket and was married and had James, Maria, Emma, Mary Tiffany, Annie D., and Stephen.

3. Eleazer VII, who married and had: Williard, Samuel, Edward, Olive, Amelia, and Hezekiah. And now we place as ,

4. Sarah, who should have been properly 1, as explained elsewhere. This Sarah, Mrs. Ivey decides was the eldest child of Colonel Eleazer, and Mrs. Miller says was born about 1770 and died about 1838. She married James Prince, of Kingston, Massachusetts, about 1800, at North Providence, and their children were:

1. Phebe Ann VIII, born 1802, who married Albyn Valentine Dike, at Providence, about 1820.

2. Frances, who married Shackelford, and they had a large family of children, born in Providence, names not given.

3. James Prince VIII, only son who was graduated at Brown University, studied law, removed to South

Carolina, where he practiced for a time, but soon died, and was buried there. His friends in South Carolina erected a monument to his memory and sent expressions of their love and affection for him to his family in Providence

I will mention here that another James Prince, a cousin of James, who married Sarah Jenks, and had visited Phebe Ann Jenks, in Providence and furnished her with that coat of arms of the Prince family, which she treasured so much, died in Boston, and as the death notice appears in the Providence Journal, we may esteem that such notice was placed there by this Phebe Ann Prince, out of love and affection for her Boston cousin.. This notice is as follows:-

"Died, 1821 at Boston, James Prince. He was United States Marshall there."

Phebe Ann Prince VIII, born 1802, daughter of James Prince and Sarah Jenks VII, daughter of Colonel Eleazer Jenks VI, and his wife Silence Shaw, married at Providence, Rhode Island, about 1830, Albyn Valentine Dike and of this marriage were ten children born, namely five sons and five daughters.

1. Oscar D. Dike IX, born about 1822, who married and had children.

2. Henry A. Dike IX, born about 1825, who married and had children.

3. James Prince Dike IX, born about 1827, who

3. James Prince Duke IX, born about 1827, who married and had children.

and of this marriage were ten children born, namely five married and had children.

James Prince and Sarah Jenks VII, daughter of Colonel Ebenezer Jenks VI, and his wife Eliene Shaw, married at

"Died, 1821 at Boston, James Prince. He was

placed there by this Phebe Ann Prince, out of love and Providence Journal, we may esteem that such motive was

count of arms of the Prince family, which are treasured no

Phebe Ann Jenks, in Providence and furnished her with that

I will mention here that another James Prince, a

was named in honor of his grandfather, James Prince.

The writer will remark at this time that that was one of the clues to the identification of Sarah Jenks, from the fact that one of her nephews named his son James Prince Jenks.

And now the writer desires to state an important fact, which is that Mrs. Alice Dix Miller is unable to furnish the exact date of the births of these children--her brothers and sisters, showing how important it is for you as a family to at once complete, by a careful correspondence, the dates of marriages, births and names of the entire list of descendants uncompleted in this genealogy.

Some one person in the family should be instructed in this respect, and by a little care and attention, this genealogy can be completed to the present time.
The writer was not felt called upon to take this question upon himself, as it might be a matter of delicacy on his part and can be better fulfilled by some person who is fully qualified and has the time to gather all these particulars.

It is essential that this should be done at an early date, for, as the present generation passes away, and as the family become more and more dispersed, the difficulty increases.

We now return to No. 4, of the list of children.

We now return to No. 4, of the list of objects.

It is essential that this should be done at an early date, for, as the present generation passes away, and as the family records more and more dispersed, the difficulty increases.

Some one person in the family should be interested in this respect, and by a little care and attention, this genealogy can be completed to the present time.

The writer has not felt called upon to take this question upon himself, as it might be a matter of delicacy on his part.

Now the writer desires to state an important fact, which is that Alice Dike Miller is unable to furnish the exact date of the births of those children--her brothers and sisters, showing how important it is for you as a family to at once complete, by a careful correspondence, the dates of marriages, births and names of the entire list of descendants enumerated in this genealogy.

The writer will receive at this time that was one of the clues to the identification of Sarah Dunks

4. Frederick Valentine Dike IX, born about 1831, married and had children.

5. Camden Crosby Dike, born about 1832, married and had children.

6. Helen Josephine Dike, born about 1834, married and had children.

7. Sarah Alice Dike IX, born about 1836, married and had children.

Ella Adelaide Dike IX, born about 1837, who died unmarried.

And a daughter Helen and a daughter Ann, who died in infancy, thus making in all ten children, and nine generations, including Joseph Jenks I, of Lynn.

Joseph Jenks II, of Pawtucket

Major Nathaniel Jenks III of Pawtucket.

Captain Nathaniel Jenks, Jr.,IV, of Pawtucket.

Captain Stephen Jenks V, of Pawtucket.

Colonel Eleazer Jenks VI, of Pawtucket.

Sarah Jenks Prince, of Providence.VII

Phebe Ann Prince Dike VIII and the ten children born from her generation IX. Their children are of the generation X and there are children in generation XI.

In the generations which have been given here, from the Jenks side, that family seem to have gained one generation over the Dike family, as Albyn Valentine Dike was but the seventh generation, including Anthony Dike of

the Ann, 1623, who died at Cape Cod, 1638.

Phebe Ann Prince was eighth generation in the line of the Jenks family, but only sixth in the line of the Prince family of Hull. She was, however, in the tenth generation from and including Elder William Brewster of the Mayflower. Seventh from and including Philip De la Noye, or Delano, of the Fortune, 1621. Ninth from and including George Morton, of the Ann, 1623, father of Secretary Nathaniel Morton, of the Ann Ninth from Anthony Thatcher, John Alden, John Howland, of the Mayflower, Moses Tibbons of the Ann, Thomas Clark of the Mayflower, etc. We have not here given the more recent generations from the other branches.

The writer here adds, the list of ancestry, as sent by Mrs. Ida A. Beede, Central Falls, Rhode Island, which comes from the hands of Captain Stephen to her and from her since his death, namely,

1. Joseph Jenks, born 1602, died 1683.

2. Joseph his son, born 1632, died 1717. married Esther Ballard and settled in North Providence. He had four sons and six daughters.

3. Nathaniel, born 1662, died 1722. He married Hanna Bosworth, had four children.

4. Nathaniel, Jr., Born January 4th, 1702, died December 13th, 1741, married Lydia Arnold first, and had in all seven children.

December 17th, 1747, married Hyde Arnold Tiret, and had issue

4. Benjamin, Jr., born January 4th, 1703, died

died young Bowworth, and four children.

He had four sons and six daughters.

5. Joseph his son, born 1688, died 1714.

6. Joseph Jenks, born 1689, died Feb.

from her minor his death, namely:

The eldest Hyde Arnold, the first of another, an

branches.

have taken the more recent descriptions from the other

John Alden, John Howland, of the Mayflower. Moses Simmons of

George Morton, of the Ann, 1623, Father of Secretary Bath-

or Dutch, of the Fortune, 1621. Ninth from and including

Mayflower. Seventh from and including Philip De la Noye,

of the Jenks family, but only eight in the line of the

the Ann, 1623, ...

5. Stephen, born 1726, died 1800, married Sarah Hawkins. Had six children in all.

6. Eleazer, born 1747, died 1822. He was grandfather of Mrs. Beede, who gives this genealogical memorandum. She was the daughter of Eleazer's son, Stephen,

. . . . .

Copy of a letter from Mrs. Lucy A. Ivey, 63 Rutolph Street, Melrose Highland, Mass.

"My dear Mr. Scott,

I have been away for about ten days--spent a day digging through Pawtucket wills, etc., I have found no mention of your Sally, though, "Aunt Charlotte Hitchcock seemed to be in evidence. I found no reference to any children of Josiah, and I do not believe Martha had any -- as she seems to have been supported by her brothers, being called Martha Scott. She married secondly, March 3d, 1746, Abraham Scott. Her brother, Captain Stephen Jenks mentioned her in his will as sister Martha Scott. As to children of Colonel Eleazer Jenks, I find mention in wills and settlements of but the three, namely Stephen, who married and had seven children, Eleazer, who married and had six children, and Charlotte, who married Luke Hitchcock, "late of New York", 1806. The will of Colonel Eleazer is dated December 7th, 1820, probated October 19th, 1822. It names Widow Silence, daughter

Charlotte Hitchcock, children of son Stephen, his widow to be executrix. The witnessed are George Jenks, Mary Trarice, and Esek Esten.

The will of widow Silence Jenks gives everything to Charlotte Hitchcock, December 11th, 1826. Probate record at Providence, A 5061. Administration of estate of Luke Hitchcock, June 1st, 1815, to Charlotte Hitchcock, who signed bonds with Eleazer and Stephen, her brothers. Estate insolvent.

Edward F. Miller (probably a son-in-law) was appointed administrater. The estate of Charlotte Hitchcock was probated 1830 by Providence probate record.

You see how all these things fit and work together. Edward F. Miller was one of the witnesses of Silence Jenks' will also. I don't see why Sally Prince is never mentioned. I did not have a chance to examine the Providence wills myself, but a friend of mine from New York was there and I asked her to look up Eleazer, Silence and Charlotte Hitchcock. But what we have, together with the statement as to Aunt Charlotte and the "Cousin Miller", I think prove beyond question that Sarah, who married James Prince was a daughter of Colonel Eleazer.

Another point, Stephen VII, son of Colonel Eleazer VI, named a son, James P. (probably Prince.) He had a daughter, Maria, who died unmarried, 1862. Of her will the witnesses were: Louisa Miller, Charlotte

her will the witnesses were: Louisa Miller, Charlotte
He had a daughter, Berta, who died unmarried, 1892. Of

Another point, Stephen VII, son of Colonel

Prince was a daughter of Colonel Weaver.

I think prove beyond question that Sarah, who married James
the statement as to Aunt Charlotte and the "Cousin Miller",
and Charlotte Hitchcock. But what we have, together with
York was there and I asked her to look up Weaver, Silence
the Providence with myself, but a friend of mine from New
is never mentioned. I did not have a chance to examine

together. Edward K. Miller was one of the witnesses of

You see now all these things fit and work

book was produced 1830 of Providence Probate Record.

Estate involved.

signed bonds with Eleazer and Stephen, her brothers.

at Providence, A 2021. Administration of estate of

rise, and Mark Weston.

be executrix, ... was double venue, Mary

Hitchcock Miller.

Mrs. Alice Dike Miller's faint memory was all right. The Hitchcock is there as per record, and the Louisa mentioned in her letter also appears in this will. She was somewhat tangled as to the original emigrant and the Salem end of it. You see she also remembers cousins of the name of Shaw, doubtless the children of Silence Shaw's brother. Undoubtedly Sarah was the eldest child of Colonel Eleazer Jenks' family of children. I feel as though I should like to extend congratulations on the result of our work---it looked rather hopeless at first, but has come forth from the darkness beautifully---I think we are rather clever, don't you?

(Signed) Cordially yours,

Lucy A. Ivey.

May 8th, 1903."

. . . . . .

We give here the list of children born to Stephen Jenks, Jr., VI, son of Captain Stephen V and brother to Colonel Eleazer VI, of your line. These children are all first cousins of Sarah Jenks of your line. This Stephen VI married Mercy, daughter of Joshua Arnold, of Smithfield, They were married 1775 and had:

Arnold, born 1776, married Mary Healy, 1801.

Sarah, born 1778; died young.

Mrs. Alice Dike Miller's faint memory was all

Stephen, born April 1780, died 1785.

David, born 1782.

George, born 1785.

Sabra, born 1788,

Nathan, born 1791, died 1801.

Lydia, born 1793, and Linden, born January 7th, 1796.

Alvin, born 1798,

Jerahmeel, born 1800.

Goodrich, in his History of Pawtucket, page 75, says that of Colonel Stephen Jenks VII, the business, after his death was carried on by his son, Joseph VIII, and by Joseph T. Sisson. This Colonel Stephen Jenks VII, was son of Colonel Ebenezer Jenks VI, your ancestor. Hence this Joseph VIII was Thomas Ann Prince's second cousin. The business, however, is still carried on by this same family.

Goodrich mentiones on page 173, the death of Mr. Alvin Jenks VII, under date of 1856. This Alvin was in the list of Stephen VI, just given. Goodrich says also:

"Down Jenks Avenue stands the machine shops of Alvin F. Jenks VIII and Stephen Jenks VIII, lineal descendants of the founders of Pawtucket. Also the stores of Failes, Jenks & Company, and other firms of the same name, but the generations which are now mentioned are those of the ninth

and tenth generation.

From the History of Smithfield, and from the Centennial Celebration of North Providence and Pawtucket Village:

"I judge that Colonel Eleazer Jenks continued the business and his sons Colonel Stephen and grandsons Stephen and Joseph continued the business to this generation"

The part now known as "Central Falls", on the Blackstone River, was so called by Stephen Jenks VI, 1820 son of Captain Stephen Jenks V, who built works here as early as 1763, when he forged bolts and other ship irons, although he made ship anchors at Pawtucket.

It seems from this history of Smithfield, that here was the building in which he manufactured the muskets used by the Rhode Island militia during the Revolution, and the firm of Stephen Jenks and sons here manufactured tens of thousands of muskets for the United States Government during the war of 1812--1815. There appears a record of their buying a church building, of the Universalist Church Society, and removing it to Central Falls, 1828, for use as a factory building. And although it was only a universalist church, yet it was their undoing, for I find that the ancient firm which had furnished arms in all the great wars from Colonnial period down, went into assignees' hands about this time, and this may account for the sad catasthrophe mentioned in the History of North

Providence Centennial, 1865, of the exhuming of the bones of the ancient Jenks family and their being taken without ceremony to the Mineral Springs Cemetery, 1851, and the unfortunate destruction of the headstone there spoken of, including that of Governor Jenks. This failure of the ancient firm may have involved the ownership of the land on which were the graves, and unfeeling creditors probably turned out even the bones of the dead, let alone the persons of the living, and that probably accounts for the seeming sacrilege mentioned in the North Providence History.

There is mentioned in the History of Smithfield, that Eleazer Arnold, Stephen Jenks Fifth's grand-father lived near where is now the Bleachery, of the [illegible] Sayles family, and near the ancient Quaker church still standing on land granted to it by this Eleazer Arnold. This is the Eleazer who gave the family name to Colonel Eleazer Jenks.

It would appear from this history that for several generations the firm name of Stephen Jenks and Son was the most prominent manufacturing firm engaged in the valley of the Blackstone River, manufacturing all kinds of hardware, especially ship hardware, as well as arms of all kinds, anchors and anchor chains, ships-bolts, etc. They had trip hammers at Smithfield and at Pawtucket. This celebration of 1865, when the name of Central Falls was taken for the first time for use, seems to have been

was taken for the first time for use, seems to have been

presided over by Stephen Jenks VI.

The name of Jenks seems to run through these local histories continuously, as the most name mentioned in them.

From the Centennial of North Providence, 1865. From the address of the Rev. Massena Goodrich:

"Tradition represents that Joseph Jenks came to the neighborhood of Pawtucket Falls about the year 1665. His first purchase of land, the authentic deed, was dated, October 10th, 1671. Joseph Jenks was in our limits then two centuries before this time engaged in iron manufacturing. He was the father of several men, who became eminent in the business and political affairs of the infant colony. The title of assistant, or the equivalent to Senator of to-day, is always added in old writings to the name of the first Joseph here. He was the second in the genealogy, and of his four sons, Joseph was Governor of Rhode Island, Nathaniel had the title of Major, Ebenezer was a minister and William was a judge.

Every one of these sons built houses which stood as land marks in the village of Pawtucket. The old stone chimney of the house on Mill Street was enlarged from the Joseph Jenks, Sr. house. Old residents remember the date, 168- (the last illegible). Dr. C. F. Manchester occupies the house once the residence of Governor Jenks.

Old chronicles inform us that in the year 1676,

presided over by Stephen Jones VI.

Captain Pierse, with fifty English and a like number of friendly Indians was slain near Pawtucket Falls by a hostile band of Indians. The account is known as Pierse's fight, March 26, 1676, wherein fifty-two English and eleven friendly Indians were killed, while the opposing force of Indians lost 140 killed. An idea can be formed of the desperation of the fight, from the fact that 63 English and 20 friendly Indians fought in a ring, back to back, for two hours, against overwhelming odds, and with a result, of only eleven surviving whites. The Rev. [illegible], writes to the Rev. John Cotton, of Boston, an account of this action. There was also a fight near here in July 1675, soon after the commencement of the Philip War, near Philip was flying to the uplands, via Seekonk and Pawtucket. Some thirty of his men were slain in an attack made on their rear in this vicinity, which they avenged in their ambush of Captain Pierse, these two were from Weymouth, and the friendly Indians from Cape Cod.

On page 21 of this Centennial of 1863, through the kindness of General Olney Arnold, whose ancestor, the following copy is taken:

"Died at Pawtucket in North Providence, on Sunday, November 16th, A. D., 1800, Captain Stephen Jenks, in the 74th year of his age. He was descended from a long line of respectable ancestors, and he left a disconsolate widow, and sixty descendants to the fourth generation.

He was a kind husband, an indulgent parent and an

obliging neighbor The widow, the orphan, and others in distress, were partakers of his benevolence. He was a zealous patriot of 1775 and impartially presided at most of the public business of his town. During his last sickness he was exceedingly calm, and perfectly resigned to the will of God.

The historian adds: I have been permitted to read two or three manuscript letters of Captain Stephen Jenks, written in 1799, giving an extended genealogy of his family.

The title of Captain, which he bory through life, came from his service during the French and Indian Wars, 1755 to 1763.

Concerning Governor Joseph Jenks, Goodrich says of a coat he ordered from England, a mistake was made and a clock sent, which is now owned by Mr. Alden Sibley, and is making time as accurately now as it did a century and three quarters ago.

It is to be regretted that no monument marks the spot where the body of either Governor Jenks or his father was laid. The Governor was buried and probably his father also, in a cemetery just South of Read Street, the Southern part of Read Street, indded, and formerly consisted of a part of that cemetery. For some cause, Governor Jenks body was exhumed on June 2nd, 1851. Other skeletons are said to have been disinterred at the same time, and after a brief period, were transported to the "Mineral Springs

Cemetery". From some strange neglect, the original grave-stones were not reset, and reports say that they lay around till broken in pieces. It were perhaps unprofitable, at this late day to inquire who were at fault in this desecration, but it seems sad, that after these earthly remains had been lovingly laid away, and committed to the earth amid tears, rough hands should tear the bones from their resting place. Long since contemporaries, and children had passed away, so that no one knoweth their sepulchre. Happily Dr. Benedict, in his History of the Baptists has preserved the inscription which was on the tomb-stone of Governor Jenks. It is here subjoined.

"In memory of the Honorable Joseph Jenks, Esquire, late Governor of the Colony of Rhode Island, deceased the 15th day of June, A. D., 1740, in the eighty-fourth year of his age. He was much beloved and honored in life and lamented in death. He was a bright example of virtue, in every stage of life, He was a zealous christian, a wise and prudent Governor, a kind husband, a tender father, a good neighbor, a faithful friend. Beautiful in person, with a soul truly great..

There is much in the early history of Pawtucket concerning the Jenks family, always spelled in modern history J-E-N-K-S, but invariably in the ancient histories, J-E-N-C-K-S.

From pages 25 to 34, are accounts of this family,

imaginative in some instances, but including generally facts which have been given in this record.

In the tax list of the City of Pawtucket, 1878, appears some twenty-five different tax-payers of the name of Jenks, and some pay on considerable estates.

We must esteem that the genealogy given by Mrs. Reede, the direct descendant of this Captain Stephen is that genealogy mentioned in this history.

We now come to the problem which Mrs. Alice Dike Miller's list presented, and from her pen we had:

"I never asked mother anything about the ancestors on the mother's side until her last sickness; and a few days before her death. I wrote down exactly what she told me. The relatives on that side we never met, after we left Providence. I know that Henry Miller, of Boston, was my cousin, he was one of a large family of Millers, and was connected with the Miller Piano Factory in Boston, and was my second cousin. His mother was my mother's own cousin. Her name was Louisa, and her oldest daughter was named Charlotte Hitchcock Miller, probably from her grandmother. I put the name Hitchcock in parenthesis, because I am not sure. It comes like a faint memory, but I do remember mother had an Aunt Charlotte, of whom she was very fond, but I never saw her. I'll write on another page just the words as I had them from mother.

The Jenks that settled in Salem, she could not remember his name. Mother said: "Mrs. Benedict" in

Providence came and got a book from her, written, I think, by her grandfather Jenks. It was a History of the Baptists, and mother said this History of the Baptists contained the history of her ancestors.

Colonel Jenks, mother's grand-father, was the oldest Baptist anywhere there. I told mother that if ever I went to Providence I would look this book up. I have copied mother's statement to me. She was too tired to tell me all the names. I asked her the name of her grand-father, and she said Josiah, but in her weak state, she could easily have made a mistake. I put it in parenthesis above the line, also the number of children--13.

I probably asked mother questions. After she had mentioned "Silence", I am sure the Charlotte must have been Charlotte Hitchcock, and one daughter was Mrs. Robbins' mother.

I remember too, cousins of the name of Shaw, who were distant relatives. There was no mistake about the Colonel in the Revolution being my mother's grandfather, for her mind was as clear as could be. I wrote rapidly while she told me and she could only give me some of the names of the children, and her own mother's name was one. Then I suppose I asked her grand-father's name, which could easily have been mistaken, as Josiah was the last name she had given of the four brothers. I hope I have made this clear.

Copy of mother's statement of the Jenks family:

"Five brothers came from Wales. One settled in Salem; four settled in Pawtucket, named Icabod, Stephen, Jerothmel, and Josiah. And Josiah was mother's grand-father and he was a Colonel in the Revolution and had thirteen children. Among them Moses, Stephen, Jeremel, and daughters, Sarah, mother's name, Charlotte, Silence."

The writer has given here what a proposition he had and how hard a nut he had to crack. In the absence of any official information in the "vital statistics of Providence", consisting of twelve large volumes, I was able to make up all the generations in full, to that of Colonel Eleazer Jenks. His marriage, the name of his wife, nor the dates of the birth of his children nor anything about them appears, save only the list of Stephen VII, but fortunately, as the Providence Journal had preserved its records from 1820 to 1829, only, thanks to that short list, it included the death notice of Colonel Eleazer, his widow Silence, and the other family notices given previously.

The writer was given the name of a Mrs. Lucy A. Ivey, of 63 Botolph Street, Melrose Highlands, Mass., as interested in the genealogy of the Jenks family, and she sent me a list she had received from a Mrs. Beede of Central Falls, Rhode Island, and that list included the name of the wife of Colonel Eleazer, and of his three children, Charlotte, Stephen and Eleazer, but no mention of Sarah whatever

appeared in the vital statistics anywhere, or in the local genealogy of the family.

The writer went over fourteen volumes of Arnold and fifteen volumes of the Records of Providence by its own officials, and found the name Josiah but once, and he the son of the minister, and the record of his marriage to his own cousin, Martha, but no record of any children., and this genealogy as worked up answers the difficulties presented by Mrs. Alice Dike Miller's list.

We have the names of the four brothers from Wales who settled in Pawtucket. We find that that Icabod was a son of Nathaniel IV, and the Stephen in that list was another son of Nathaniel IV, and Josiah was the son-in-law of that Nathaniel IV, and the Jerrothmel in that list was a grand-son of Nathaniel IV.

The names given as among those of the thirteen children, namely Moses, Stephen appear as sons of Stephen V, also Jeremel, which is a corruption of Jerelmeel, another son of Stephen V.

Then the three daughters as given by Mrs. Miller, namely, Sarah, Silence, Charlotte, resolve themselves thus Silence is the mother and Sarah and Charlotte the daughters, as we have proved.

The delay and trouble on the part of the writer in this search was from the fact that he started with the name Josiah, and as there was such a name of Josiah, it

involved him in a tangle, which, fortunately, has been cleared up. And this ancient family have been traced, without a flaw in their record, from the first landing at Lynn, to the present generation in Pawtucket and elsewhere.

Under date of May 16th, the writer has a letter received from Mrs. Alice Dike Miller, as follows:-

"Your very interesting letter has been received. I am very sorry I cannot give you any dates. I can only guess at them. The name of Maria Jenks is very familiar to me, and Louisa, Charlotte and George Miller, the witnesses to her will, were my second or third cousins. As I remember the Shaw family, the father was Oliver Shaw; he was blind, and I think, a musician. There were also Clarks, who were our cousins. When mother told me her grandfather had thirteen children, it was in answer to my question of 'How many'. She had already mentioned six as the children of her grandfather, the Colonel. She gave the name of Sarah, or Sally, and I supposed she was the oldest. Sally Jenks Prince was living at Providence at the time of her death, which must have been about 1838. Her husband, James Prince, died some time before. She must have had some property, for mother attended an expensive school, and her brother, Uncle James, attended Brown University and studied law, and

grandmother Prince and grandfather Prince, both helped Dr. Sears through College, but Dr. Sears paid it back again. If she had means, she would not have been mentioned in the other wills.

Albyn Valentine Dike, and Phebe Ann Prince were married about 1830. I think Phebe Ann was born about 1802, and Frances Jenks Prince, two years later, and James Beale Prince still two years later. None of these dates are certain, I am sorry to say. I can refer you to Charlotte Dike Wiley for further information."

And so closes the direct line of genealogy.

Mrs. Miller has mentioned Benedicts. We find in the Lenox Library, two volumes, a History of the Baptist Denomination in America, twelve hundred pages, which included the history written by her ancestor, and that has probably formed a large portion of this genealogy, and doubtless Benedict drew a large amount of information for his history of the Baptists from these manuscript histories given him by the Jenks family, as mentioned in Mrs. Miller's letter, and elsewhere, we shall give genealogical records from that history, which seems to have devoted considerable space to the Jenks family and the Brown family, in fact the author makes that statement in his history, showing that he acknowledges his debt to these histories for his information. This will be fully set forth when we arrive at those genealogical records drawn from

Benedict's History of the Baptists.

We now commence giving a sketch of the collateral lines of ancestry. The most interesting of all of these in your family comes from the marriage at Swansea, and perhaps a Baptist marriage of Hannah Bosworth, a daughter of Benjamin Bosworth and granddaughter of the famous Secretary Morton, of Plymouth Colony, a nephew of Governor William Bradford, and a son of George Morton, known as the author of Mourts Relation, 1622, in London, the earliest book concerning Plymouth Colony.

Governor Bradford's History, of 1647 is the second book on that subject, and of course, the most prized. But for information, Secretary Nathaniel Morton's History, "New England Memorial" published 1669, and to these three books, the students of those times are indebted almost wholly for their knowledge, for without their writings there would be small record indeed. So this marriage of Major Nathaniel Jenks III, in Swansea, in 1666, carries your line of ancestry through Hannah Bosworth, back to the very heart and soul of Plymouth Colony.

The Prince line of genealogy embraces a much larger number of Mayflower descendants, and Plymouth ancestry but these three historians make it particularly interesting, for an intellectual view of those times.

The following pages will embrace a complete sketch of the ancestry of this descent.

ANCESTRY OF HANNAH BOSWORTH OF SWANSEA, WHO MARRIED THERE NOVEMBER 4TH, 1666, NATHANIEL JENKS III, OF NORTH PROVIDENCE, SON OF JOSEPH II.

Austin's record mentions that Hannah Bosworth is said to be a daughter of John Howland, by the Howland Genealogy.

The writer will explain here, so as to avoid all complication: your kinswoman, Hannah Howland, married Johnathan Bosworth, an uncle to the Hannah Bosworth, of your direct line, hence there were two Hannah Bosworths at Swansea, at this time. One was your ancestress, the daughter of Benjamin Bosworth, and Hannah Howland Bosworth, who had married Johnathan, a brother of Benjamin.

John Howland in his will, and his wife also in her will, mentions this daughter Hannah Bosworth, but the Hannah Bosworth we have now in mind is a daughter of Benjamin.

From Lincoln's History of Hingham:

"Edward Bosworth embarked for New England in the "Elizabeth Dorcas", 1634, and "being sick unto death and ready to die", as the ship neared the port of destination, "was carried on deck that he might see the Canaan, the promised land". His decease occurred shortly after and his remains were interred in Boston.

Of his family, I know but little. The diary of the Rev. Peter Hobart, of Hingham mentions Edward, the

father, and the sons Johnathan, Benjamin, Nathaniel. Johnathan and wife Susanna soon removed to Swansea. This shows that this Johnathan married for his second wife Hannah Howland, daughter of John Howland of the Mayflower.

Your line comes through Benjamin Bosworth II, brother of this Johnathan just mentioned. He had a grant of land at Weary-all-Hill (Otis). He removed to Hull, 1660, and died there Fifth of November, 1682. Freeman, 1666.

In the settlement of his estate, his son, Benjamin III, your ancestor and heir, sold of Hull, son-in-law and husband of Elizabeth, born 1638, settled the estate. Nathaniel II, the third son and youngest had land granted at Nantasket (Hull), 1642. He died there 1693. He had a daughter, Mary, who married John Lobdell, and this John Lobdell may be the ancestor of your near kinsman of Wilmington, Delaware, your near kinsman of that name in Wilmington should read kinsmen.

This Mary had a brother, Nathaniel, who was an only son.

Hobart mentions in his Church Record altogether sixteen children of the name of Bosworth, baptised by him.

Benjamin III, son of Benjamin II, son of Edward I, married the 27th of November, 1666 Hannah, daughter of Secretary Morton, of Plymouth Colony. They had Hannah, born 31st of December, 1668, his only child by her, and

Geometry Moore, of Plymouth County. They had Thomas,
Benjamin III, son of Benjamin II, son of Edward I,
only son.

Thomas Moore had a brother, Nathaniel, who was an
Washington should read Kinsman
Washington, Delaware, your near kinsman of that name in
John Dobbell may be the ancestor of your near kinsman of
had a daughter, Mary, who married John Dobbell, and this
at Wantage (Mill), 1062. He died there 1090. He
Nathaniel II, the third son and youngest and land granted
husband of Mistress, born 1090, settled the estate.

In the settlement of his estate, his son, Benjamin
1060.

1060, and died there Fifth of November, 1088
of land at Wantage-Hill (Ohio). He removed to Mill,

your direct ancestor by her marriage, 1680, to Major Nathaniel Jenks III.

Benjamin Bosworth married for a second wife, 16th of November, 1671, Beatrice, widow of Abraham Joslyn, and she is said to have been killed by the Indians at Lancaster, 1676, in Philips War. He died at Boston, 1700, after living at Marlborough and Stow.

Nathaniel Bosworth, the younger brother of this Benjamin, freeman, of Hull, 1680, married a sister of this Hannah Morton. Thus it appears that two sons of Benjamin Bosworth II married two sisters, daughters of Secretary Nathaniel Morton, namely, Nathaniel Bosworth, born 1649, married Elizabeth, daughter of Secretary Nathaniel Morton, 7th of December, 1670. She died 6th of April, 1673, and was buried two hours before Governor Prence,"says the record with great honor".

Nathaniel Bosworth had a second wife, Mary, and most of his children are by her. He had nine children in all. It seems then that both of Secretary Morton's daughters who married Bosworths died very soon.

Another daughter of Secretary Morton married Joseph Prince, brother of your direct ancestor of the Prince family. Thus there were three daughters of this family directly connected with your line.

This complication of ancestry in the Morton family and in the Howland family with the Bosworths shows the necessity of great care in reading ancestral records.

ANCESTRY OF NATHANIEL MORTON, SECRETARY OF PLYMOUTH COLONY
AND GRANDFATHER OF HANNAH BOSWORTH.

. . . .

He was the son of George Morton, whose name is mentioned frequently in the records of the church at Leyden, in Holland, previous to the immigration. He acted as their agent in London for many years, and came to Plymouth with his wife and children and with his sister-in-law, Alice Southworth, a widow, who came at the invitation of Governor William Bradford, to be his second wife. They all came in the Ann, 1623, the same ship that brought Anthony Dike and many others of your ancestors

George Morton, as will be seen elsewhere married Julianna Carpenter, 1612, daughter of Alexander Carpenter, of Wrentham, England and sister of Alice Carpenter, who married Edward Southworth. These marriages were at Leyden, Holland, long before the Mayflower sailed.

Governor Bradford married this widow Southworth, immediately on her arrival, 1623, and as George Morton died in 1624, Bradford, having no child in America, took our Nathaniel Morton, his wife's nephew into his own house and treated him as his son.

George Morton, by wife Julianna Carpenter, had four children, Nathaniel, John, Patience, and Ephraim. John was an early settler at Middleborough, Mass. Ephraim was born on the passage over in the Ann.

Elphrath was born on the journey over in the Ann.

John was an early settler at Middleborough, Mass.

(George Morton, by wife Julianna Delpumbar, had

married like as his son.

in 1682, Bradford, having no child in America, took our

immediately on her arrival, 1623, and as George Morton died

Wrentham, Shipland and sister of Alice Carpenter, who

Anthony Dike and many others of your ancestors

all came in the Ann, 1623, the same ship that brought

Governor William Bradford, to be his second wife. Mary

Alice Bourbourth, a widow, who came at the invitation of

with his wife and children and with his sister-in-law,

their agent in London for many years, and came to Plymouth

in Holland, previous to the immigration. He acted as

mentioned frequently in the records of the church at Leyden,

He was the son of George Morton,

He became a man of some considerable distinction in the Colony. He was for many successive years a member of the Council of War, and with John Bradford, the Governor's only son by his first wife, represented the town of Plymouth in the great and general court holden in Boston, 1692, after the union under the new charter. From him have descended many eminent men.

Patience Morton, his sister married John Faunce and was the mother of Thomas Faunce, known in Plymouth history as elder Thomas Faunce, and was successor to Secretary Nathaniel Morton, in his post of Town Clerk, after Morton's death.

Nathaniel Morton was twelve years old when his father died. He was admitted freeman in 1625, and the same year was married to Lydia Cooper. In 1645 he was chosen clerk or Secretary of the Colony Court. He was sworn into the office of Town Clerk in 1673. His wife died in 1673. His second wife, who survived him, was Ann Templar, of Charlestown, a widow. He had eight children, all by his first wife. Two sons who died in infancy and six daughters. All the daughters were married in his lifetime. Two of them, Mercy and Elizabeth died before him, and Elizabeth, the wife of Nathaniel Ingworth, of Hull had "honorable burial", as mentioned in the Plymouth records. Probably some special mark of regard. The four surviving daughters Remember, Lydia,

Council of War", and with John Dredger, the Governor's only son by his first wife, [illegible] in the great and general court holden [illegible] the union under the new charter. Both him have deceased many eminent men.

[illegible] History as elder Thomas Bayne, and was successor to Secretary Nathaniel Morton, in his post of Town Clerk, after Morton's death.

Nathaniel Morton was twelve years old when his father died. He was admitted Freeman in 1652, and the same year was married to Lydia Cooper. In 1656 he was [illegible] died in 1693. His second wife, who survived him, was Ann Tomalar, of Charlestown, a widow. He had eight [illegible] infancy and six daughters. All the daughters were married in his lifetime. Two of them, Mercy and Elizabeth died before him, and Elizabeth, the wife of Nathaniel Bosworth, of Hull had "monorable burial", as mentioned in the Plymouth records. Probably some special mark of

Hannah, and Joanna, were married to Abraham Jackson, George Ellison, Benjamin Bosworth III, and Joseph Prince II, of Hull.

Thatcher says in his History of Plymouth:

"That he had seen with his own eyes in the hands of Nathaniel M. Davis, Esquire, an original deed, executed by the four daughters, and their husbands, dated April 6th, 1692, and was of the homestead, in which Secretary Morton wrote the New England memorial and the church records and performed many useful labors for posterity. Here in the goodness of his heart, the venerable man contemplated the providence of God towards his exiled brethren of the Leyden Church."

It was evidently the earnest desire of Mr. Morton to leave a correct history of the New England Colonies for the benefit of future generations, and his station in life enabled him so to do. The first edition of the "Memorial" was published in 1669 and commended to the reader by the Rev. John Higginson and the Rev. Thomas Thatcher, and printed by Samuel Green, of Cambridge. This John Higginson is our old friend, who wrote the long letter of commendation of Anthony Dike, and Thomas Thatcher was your kinsman, as will appear in the Thatcher genealogy. The memorial has been the source of resort for all succeeding writers on the same subject.

The Rev. Thomas Prince speaks of it as his

source of information in compiling his chronology of New England. It is to be remarked here in passing that these three daughters of Nathaniel Morton who married into your family all resided at Duxbury with their husbands. And it is remarkable that of the New England historians, your ancestry and your kin embrace such a notable line commencing with George Morton, author of Morton's Relation, William Bradford, author of that famous book, Nathaniel Morton, author of the New England Memorial, Thomas Prince, author of the New England Chronology, Thatcher, the author of the History of Plymouth, so much quoted here, and particularly in the Prince genealogy, and Arnold, the author of Arnold's Vital Statistics of Providence, also author of the Colony and State of Rhode Island, and the Rev. Henry M. Dexter, who has written so much history of Church and State, also the author of Young's Relation and many more whom we might mention, who seem to be of your kin.

So that the early history of New England depends upon those writers and the knowledge which we have here given you of your ancestors, comes from such sources.

Nathaniel Morton died at the age of 73, having sustained the office of Secretary forty years and Town Clerk six years. His nephew Elder Faunce succeeded him in the position of Town Clerk, and your kinsman, Nathaniel Clark, of the Clark line of ancestry, succeeded him as Secretary of the Colony, and more will be told of this

Appleton's Cyclopaedia of Biography says:

William Bradford, Colonnial Governor of Plymouth Colony, born at Austerfield, Yorkshire, England, March, 1588, died in Plymouth, Mass., ninth of May 1657. He inherited a yeoman's freehold, was seriously and religiously inclined from childhood, and joined the "Puritan Separatist Church, established 1606, by William Brewster at Scrooby Manor, nearby, in Nottinghamshire, thereby drawing upon himself the hostility and contempt of his neighbors.

The religious company, being threatened with persecution, resolved to emigrate to Holland. In the Autumn of 1607, Bradford and the other principal members of the society, made an agreement with a Dutch Captain, to embark at Boston, but the skipper betrayed them to the magistrates, who committed some of them to prison, sent the rest to their homes. After several months of confinement, Bradford escaped in the Spring of 1608, and joined his companions in Amsterdam, where he apprenticed himself to a silk weaver, a French Protestant. When he came of age, he sold his land in England and engaged in business on his own account, in which he incurred losses, removing with the rest of the Company to Leyden, about 1609. He was eager and active in promoting the schems of emigrating to an English Colony. A Patent was obtained with the assistance of Sir Edward Sandys, then Treasurer of the Colony of Virginia, and on the fifth of September, Bradford

embarked in the Mayflower, with the first hundred Pilgrims at Southampton. Obliged by stress of weather to put in at Plymouth Harbor, they signed a Compact of Government, November 11th, 1620, before landing, according to which Carver became the Governor. On his death, 21st of April 1621, Bradford was elected to fill his place and was continued in office each year, by the suffrage of the colonists. His authority was restricted at his own request in 1624, by a Council of five, and in 1623 by a Council of seven. In this Council he had a double vote.

One of his first acts was to send an embassy to confirm the league entered into with the Indian Sachem, Massasoit. His friendly relations with the Indians were continued until the outbreak of the Philip war.

In 1624, the English adventurers in London, who had supplied the capital for the establishment of the Colony, relying on the profit of the fur trade for their returns, owing to some murmuring among them, and hostility on the part of some, they were bought out, and eight of the most enterprising of the emigrants, for a six years monopoly of the trade, engaged to assume all the liabilities of the Colony. In that list of eight, may be found the names of three of your ancestors, namely, Elder William Brewster, John Howland, and John Alden.

In 1629 a charter was obtained from King James I, through the New England Council, a band of noblemen who received from the king a grant of all the land between

forty and forty-eight degrees North latitude. This was the first real charter obtained by the Colony.

In 164[illegible] Governor Bradford conveyed to the General Court this title, as before that, it stood in his name. For one period of two years, and one period of three years, he refused to act as Governor, but was returned for every other year until death. Governor Bradford married in Leyden, 1613, Dorothy May, who was drowned in Cape Cod Harbor, December 7th, 1620. On the 14th of August, 1623, he married Alice Carpenter, a widow of Edward Southworth, a lady whom he had known in Holland, and who came out to be married to him. He left one son by his first wife in England when he came, who did not arrive in Plymouth until 1629, and eventually died in Norwich, Connecticut, childless, leaving his property, which was very considerable to his half brothers and sisters.

Governor Bradford by his second wife left two sons and a daughter. His house remains to this day in good preservation. He had some acquaintance with Latin and Greek and a slight knowledge of Hebrew. Was well read in philosophy and much time was spent in literary composition.

"A Diary of Occurrences" covering the first years of the colony, from the landing at Cape Cod, on November 9th, 1620, till the eighth of December, 1621, was written by him in connection with Edward Winslow, published in London, 1622. His other production of his pen was pub-

London, 1858. No other production of his pen was pub-

of the colony, from the landing at Cape Cod, on November

"A Diary of Occurrences" covering the first years

read in philosophy and much time was spent in literary

and dress and a slight knowledge of medicine. Was well

sons and a daughter. His home remains to this day in

Governor Bradford by his second wife had two

his half brothers and sisters.

less, leaving his property, which was very considerable to

England when in come, who did not survive in Plymouth until

married to him. He left one son by his first wife in

Leyden, 1613, Dorothy May, who was drowned in Cape Cod Bay-

either year until death. Governor Bradford married in

he refused to act as Governor, but was returned for every

lished in his lifetime, but he left some manuscript books in verse: "Some Observations of God's Merciful Dealings with Us, in the Wilderness." It was published in fragmentary form in the collections of the Massachusetts Historical Society in 1794, and in the proceedings of the society for 1870, was printed entire.

"A Word to Plymouth" was first printed entire in the same volume.

"A Word to New England", and "Of Boston in New England", appeared in 1838 in the Massachusetts Society collection.

"A Memoir of Elder Brewster" was copied with other of William Bradford's writings in the records of the first church at Plymouth, by Secretary Nathaniel Morton. Many of his writings were reprinted in Alexander Young's "Chronicles of the Pilgrim Fathers, from 1602 to 1636." Printed in Boston, 1841, which contains also the fragment of his letter book, which was rescued from a grocer's shop in Halifax, during the Revolutionary War.

Copies of his letters were printed in the third volume of the first series of the Massachusetts Society's Historical Collection, but the most valuable of all his works was: "History of Plymouth Plantation", including a History of the Society from its inception in 1602, till the time when it departed for America in 1620, and its history in Plymouth down to 1647. This manuscript folio volume of 270 pages disappeared during the American Revolution

and is supposed to have been taken by the British soldiers, who used the old South Church of Boston, where it was deposited, or to have been carried away by Governor Hutchinson, in 1774.

In 1855, Samuel G. Drake, of Boston, identified passages from a manuscript history of Plymouth in the Fulham Library of the Bishop of London, and it was quoted by Samuel Wilnerforce in his "History of the Protestant Church in America, 1846, with portions of the fragmentary history printed from the first church of Plymouth. The search was made in England by Drake, and the manuscript history by Governor Bradford was found complete in Governor Bradford's handwriting in the Fulham Library, London.

On a black page was the book plate of the "New England Library, of the Rev. Thomas Prince", from the cabinet of which in the Old South Church, the volume had disappeared.

The history of the transmission of this volume from London to Boston was the especial honor of the American Minister, Mr. Bayard, and a ship of war. Its reception in Boston and its position now in a glass case beneath the great dome of the State House at Boston, makes it a volume of romance as well as history.

Nathaniel Morton early became Bradford's assistant in the management of public affairs. Almost all the records of Plymouth Colony are in his handwriting.

records of Plymouth Colony are in his handwriting.

He read extensively and took great pains to note down the incidents of the early days of the colony, which he published in the New England memorial..

He also wrote "A Synopsis of the Church History of Plymouth", 1680, which is in "Young's Chronicles of the Pilgrim Fathers. He was the author of numerous verses, in commemoration of the virtues of the Pilgrim.

A fifth edition of "Mourt's Relation", 1845, is dedicated to the Hon. Marcus Morton, who continues on the Bench an illustrious name, and is a worthy descendant of a good man, who was associated with the Relation,and its sponsor to the British Public near two centuries ago, by his friend and kinsman, John Kimball Wiggin.

The Rev. Henry Martin Dexter, D. D., in an introduction to the fifth edition of this Mourt's Relationsays:

"I wish I knew more of George Morton. It is not for want of journeyings often that I do not. He arrived at Plymouth in the Ann, 1623, bringing with him his wife, Julianna and his five children.

George Morton lived less than a year after his arrival. His son, Nathaniel says of him:

Mr. George Morton was a pious, gracious servant of God, and very faithful in whatever public employment he be trusted withal, and an unfeigned well-willer, and according to his sphere and condition, a suitable promoter of the common good and growth of the plantation of New Plymouth

A fifth edition of "Henry's Relation", 1848, is
bonor an illustrious name, and is a worthy descendant of a
good man, who was associated with the Solution and its
friend and kinsman, John Kimball Wiggin.

The Rev. Henry Martin Dexter, D. D., in an intro-
not for want of journeyings often that I do not.
wife, Julianna and his five children.
arrival.
Mr. George Morton was a pious, gracious believer of

laboring to still was discontent that sometimes would arise amongst some spirits by occasion of the difficulty of these new beginnings, but it pleased God to put a period to his days soon after his arrival, not surviving a full year after his coming ashore. With much comfort and peace he fell asleep in the Lord in the month of June, Anno, 1624.

Going back to England, we find him active in London, 1621, 1622, acting in some capacity for public service for the Leyden and Plymouth people. The next earlier trace of him is in a letter of John Robinson, from Leyden, to John Carver, in England, under date of Fourth of June, 1620, in which Mr. Robinson mentions incidentally that Mr. Weston "would come to George Morton, and inquire news about things, as if he had scarce been some accessory unto it."

Probably Weston came to George Morton , as he was an agent sent over from Leyden, and was officially in England at this time.

Going back eight years, we strike the dDutch record of the marriage in Leyden, 15th of December, 1612 of Edward Pickering, merchant, from London, with Mary Stowers., and with George Morton present as a witness. Five months earlier we reach the record of the marriage of the man himself, as follows:

"George Morton, merchant, from York, in England, accompanied by Thomas Morton, his brother, and Roger Wilson, his acquaintance, with Julianna Carpenter, accom-

[illegible] by Alexander Carpenter, her father, and Alice Carpenter, her sister, and Anna Robinson, her acquaintance. The bans were published sixth of July, 1612. The marriage took place, 25th of August, 1612.

As to connection with any Yorkshire family, the only Morton missing there is George of a Roman Catholic family, very eminent at Bawtry, near to Scrooby Manor, namely that of Anthony Morton Bawtry.

There were also Mortons in the adjoining county of Nottingham. It seems that this Henry Martin Dexter the eminent historian and author of religious books was a descendant of Morton's, hence the loving care of this, his study of the two authors, his ancestors.

In addition to this, Julianna Carpenter, and Alice Carpenter, her sister, it appears that a John Cooper, of Scituate, 1634, married in that year Priscilla, sister of Governor Bradford's second wife, and of George Morton's wife. She was the widow of William Wright. She died in Plymouth, 1689, aged ninety-two, and Davis, in his Land Marks of Plymouth, says Richard Cooper, her grandson married in Plymouth, 1693.

Savage says that John Cooper and his wife had no children, but this record of Davis proves to the contrary.

Nathaniel Morton married for his wife, as did one of his brothers, a sister of this wife, Both were Coopers, and in the absence of any other Cooper family in

Plymouth. It seems reasonable to believe in the absence of further testimony, that Ann Cooper, who married Ephraim Morton, and Lydia Cooper, who married Secretary Nathaniel Morton, were daughters of John Cooper, by his wife, Priscilla, a sister of Alice, the second wife of Governor William Bradford, and Julianna, the mother of these Mortons.

Thus three sisters, daughters of Alexander Carpenter, appear in this connection. It is singular that this is not clearly set forth by these historians who wrote so much of others and yet left this family connection somewhat in the dark.

Elsewhere will appear a record of families of New England descent, who came from Hesset, in the County of Suffolk, in England, and these Coopers seem to have come from there.

In the Williams Genealogy, a widow, Judith Cooper, married Isaac Williams, son of the first Robert Williams, of Roxbury, as his second wife. She died about 1725. At the time of her marriage she was a resident of Plymouth Colony.

The widow of George Morton, Julianna, married, secondly, Manassah Kempton, and died the nineteenth of February, 1665, aged eighty-one..

As all the children of Governor Bradford who left descendants were from his second wife, Alice, it thus makes all Bradfords your kinsmen, as well as the descendants of the two sons of Alice Bradford, by her first husband,

Edward Southworth. These two young men were born in Leyden, and came over later to Plymouth, where they became influential citizens..

In the Great Swamp Fight, December 19th, 1675, Major John Bradford commanded the Plymouth troops. He was badly wounded and carried the ball in his body to the end of his life. He was Deputy Governor of Plymouth from 1682 to 1692, and died, 1704. He had many children, of whom several removed to Connecticut, and inherited their half-brother John's estate, at Norwich, Conn.

As it is impossible for anyone to say, from what ancestral line the strongest characteristics come, so it is a question of interest to know all lines of ancestry, for such a study is like a composite picture.

In this respect it is a pleasant thing to say that in this genealogy of the different lines which have combined, there appear in nearly every one of them, some person or persons who have made a mark in the history of the past and where historical censure has appeared, it has been more a result of religious bigotry, than of any merited opprobrium in the individual, from any act of his own.

The Baptists, your ancestors, suffered much in the early period, and your Quaker kinsmen suffered also, but those sufferings in this late day appear to the world meritorious, and have resulted in the complete religious toleration which the united States enjoy to-day.

JENKS V.

. . . .

In the Lenox Library there is a very elaborate family tree, given officially from the Herald's Office, London, 1875, to Horation C. Somerby, the eminent genealogist. This tree, translated into English, so as to be read, is as follows:-

Ynir, King of Guentland, second

Cadwallader, King of the Britons, who dwelt at Abergaveny Castle. Married Nesta, daughter of Justin Gurgan, King of Glamorgan.

The Arnolds are of ancient Welch origin, according to a pedigree registered in the College of Arms, London. Are descended from Ynir and Cadwallader, of the Twelfth Century, Kings in Wales.

From an English record we have this:

It is generally stated in the United States of America that General Benedict Arnold was of low origin. This pedigree is to show that from Parish registers and wills, it goes back eight generations before Thomas Arnold and William, his brother, came to New England, from Chesselborne, County of Dorset, 1635. They were the sons of Richard Arnold, Esquire, Lord of the Manor, as his forefathers were.

From Austin's Genealogy of Thomas Arnold, page 240:

He came to America, in Ship "Plain Joan", 1635,

TERMS V.

. . . .

ogist. This tree, translated into English, so as to be
read, is as follows:-

Gudmallader, King of the Britons, who dwelt at

Gurgan, King of Glamorgan.

The Arnolds are of ancient Welsh origin, according
to a pedigree registered in the College of Arms, London.
Are descended from Ynir and Gadmallader, of the Twelfth
Century, Kings in Wales.

Even an English record we have this:

It is generally stated in the United States of
America that General Benedict Arnold was of low origin.
This pedigree is to show that Both British regiments and
mills, it does back eleven generations before Thomas Ar-
nold and William, his brother, came to New England, from

of Richard Arnold, Esquire, Lord of the Manor, as his fore-
fathers were.

Even Austin's Genealogy of Thomas Arnold, page

settled in Watertown. His brother William settled in Pawtucket. These two brothers, Thomas and William, Austin says here, were sons of Thomas, who was son of Thomas, who was son of Richard, who was son of Thomas, who was son of Roger, who had the grant of the manor of Chesilbourne Dorset.

Thomas Arnold, of Watertown, 1635, married Phebe Parkhurst, daughter of George and Susanna Parkhurst of Watertown, who brought from England his children, George and Phebe.

George Parkhurst married Sarah, daughter of John Brown, and became ancestor of that noted family.

John Parkhurst, grandson of the first George, married Abigail, daughter of Edward Garfield, of the same family as President Garfield..

Thomas Arnold was freeman of Watertown, 1640.

George Parkhurst was freeman of Watertown, 1643.

1648 Thomas Arnold bought thirty acres of land from George Parkhurst.

1651, fined twenty shillings on account of his religious opinions. He was a Baptist.

1654, fined five pounds for absence from Church.

1655, he resold to his father-in-law George Parkhurst, the thirty acres of land, which he bought in 1648.

1655, fined ten pounds for abstaining from Church.

1649.

Parkhurst, the eighty acres of land, which he bought in

religious opinions. He was a Baptist.

1683, signed twenty affidavits on account of his

from George Parkhurst.

1688 Thomas Arnold bought eighty acres of land

George Parkhurst was freeman of Watertown, 1649.

family an prominent derived..

Parkhurst, grandson of George, of the same name,

Joan Parkhurst, grandson of the first George,

Brown, and become successor of their noted family.

and Phebe.

Parkhurst, daughter of George and Susanna Parkhurst of

Parkhurst

man of Bolton, who had the right of a house of Representa-

From 1661 to 1669 appear several sales of property. He probably removed to Rhode Island, about this time.

1672 he was a Deputy in the "General Court".

1672, member of the Town Council

1685, June 29th, he having died, in September, 1674, by an agreement of the heirs, he having left property by word of mouth at death, it was agreed by widow, Phebe, and Richard, the eldest son, Thomas, John and Eleazer agreeing, also sons of the deceased, and Elizabeth Comstock, a daughter, five instruments were drawn up and signed in settlement of his estate.

"Whereas, the said deceased, Thomas Arnold, did, by word of mouth, leave his mind with his wife and children how they should divide his estate of lands, goods, and cattle amongst them, after his decease.

The aforementioned persons, all and every of them, the same do hereby endeavor to propagate and perform, to the best of their understanding and abilities, etc.

To Phebe, the widow, the lot of William Fenner, with orchard, to revert to Thomas, at her death.

To Phebe, also land to East of Moshassuk River. Said home lot at her decease, going to her son John.

To Phebe also, all household goods, two cows, nine swine, at her disposal.

To Elizabeth Comstock, twenty pounds sterling.

To Thomas, a house lot in town, two other lots, a meadow, a tract of fifty acres, and rights of commonage.

To John, three lots, an orchard, a piece of land of seventeen acres, a share of meadow, etc.

To Eleazer, fifty acres at a place called "World's End", a fifteen acre lot, three shares of meadow.

To John and Eleazer, an equal share in certain land.

This Eleazer Arnold is your line of ancestry, and from him came the name of Eleazer, to Colonel Eleazer Jenks VI.

To Richard Arnold, the eldest son, all the rest of the lands.

1687 his widow was taxed six pence.

Susanna married John Farnum.

Richard married Mary Angell. This Richard was a public man.

1671 to 1708, he was Deputy and Assistant.

1685, on a Committee to congratulate King James II.

1708, on a Committee of Narragansett Lands. He lived at Woonsocket. . In his will, his sister Mary Steere, twenty-five pounds.. Slave boy, Toby, to be free at twenty-five.

Thomas, brother of Richard, freeman 1672. He remained at home in the Philip War, "who staid and went not away, was entitled to a share in the disposition of

the Indian captives, whose services were sold for a term of years. This means that certain citizens of Providence remained throughout the Philip War, defended themselves against the savages and were thus rewarded by the magistrates. This will appear in other lines of ancestry.

Eleazer Arnold, of your line, born 1651, died 1723, married Eleanor Smith, daughter of John and Elizabeth Smith. She died after 1723, at Providence. He was of the Town Council, a Deputy and a Justice of the Peace, 1705.

John Smith, father of his wife, was known as the "Mason", to distinguish him from the "Miller". He was made a Freeman, 1670, and died, 1685. He sold his house to Samuel Comstock, husband of Elizabeth Arnold, a sister of our Eleazer Arnold.

Eleazer Arnold, Jr., third child of this marriage, born _____, died 1712, married Sarah Hawkins. She died 1722. She was daughter of William Hawkins and Lydia Ballou (Hawkins). They had five children.

The fifth child, Lydia, is your line of descent, born 1700. She married 1722/3, Nathaniel Jenks, Jr., IV/ son of Major Nathaniel Jenks III. This ancestry of Arnold and Hawkins will appear again when Captain Stephen Jenks V, a son of the foregoing couple will marry another Sarah Hawkins, 1748, granddaughter of this William Hawkins, mentioned previously.

Hewkins", mentioned previously.

Stephen Jenks V, a son of the forthcoming couple will marry another Sarah Hewkins, 1746, granddaughter of this William

against the savages and were thus rewarded [illegible]

treies. This will appear in [illegible]

Eleazer Arnold, of your line, born 1683, [illegible]

1722, married Eleanor Smith, daughter of John and Elizabeth Smith. She died after 1722, at Providence. He was of the Town Council, a Deputy and a Justice of the Peace, 1706.

John Smith, father of his wife, was known as the "Mason", to distinguish him from the "miller".

He was made a Freeman, 1670, and died, 1688. He sold his house to Samuel Comstock, husband of Elizabeth Arnold, a sister of our Eleazer Arnold.

Eleazer Arnold, Jr., third child of this marriage, born _____, died 1712, married Sarah Hewkins. She died 1722. She was daughter of William Hewkins and

. . . . .

In 1638 he received a grant of land. This was the year of the first settlement, but his name does not appear on the original twelve signers. But in 1640, he signs, with thirty-eight others, "An agreement for a form of Government, which was the foundation of the civil government of Rhode Island.

1645, he bought of Hugh Bewett, his home share of land.

1655, Freeman.

1673, he deeded to his son William, two house lots and the housing thereon, six acres of land and some meadow.

1676, he was one of those who staid and went not away in King Phillips War, and so had a share in the disposition of the Indian Captives, whose services were sold for a term of years..

1683 he deeded to his son Edward certain rights in land between Pawtucket and Pawtuxet Rivers, that he had bought twenty years before, of John Sayles.

This William Hawkins died 1699. The date of the death of his wife, Margaret, is not given, nor her family name..

William Hawkins, son of the foregoing, died 1722. He married 1672, Lydia Gardner, widow of Joseph Gardner, and daughter of Robert Ballou, and Susanna, his wife.

In 1678 he was a Deputy to the Assembly, also 1700, 4, 6, and died 1722. He left a will. Their fourth child, Sarah Hawkins, married, as before mentioned, Eleazer Arnold, Jr.

The first born child, William Hawkins III, brother of the foregoing Sarah Hawkins, married Elizabeth Arnold, sister of Eleazer Arnold II, and in another generation, namely 1746, a granddaughter of this Elizabeth Arnold, and her husband, William Hawkins III, namely, another Sarah Hawkins, will marry Captain Stephen Jenks V, as before mentioned.

The name of Lydia came to the mother of Stephen Jenks V, from Lydia Ballou, wife of William Hawkins II, and mother of Sarah, who married Eleazer Arnold II. She was daughter of Robert Ballou, and Susanna, his wife, of Portsmouth, Rhode Island.

1643 this Robert Ballou was granted a lot in Portsmouth, he using his trade for the benefit of the town.

1668, his will was proved by his wife, Susanna, executrix, William Brenton, Nicholas Easton, and son-in-law George Gardner, and friend William Vaughan, as overseer.

He mentions grandchildren, and cousins, William and Henry Ballou.

George Gardner died 1677, and William Hawkins II, 1722. By this wife, Lydia, he has three sons, William, Stephen and John, and as mentioned, this son, William Hawkins III will marry Elizabeth Arnold, as mentioned, and

their grandchild, Sarah Hawkins, will marry Captain Jenks, 1746. His will, proved 1725, to his two grandsons, Elijah and Joseph, sons of his son William III, deceased, all the remaining part of household farm not disposed of by deed, being north side of West River, consisting of two houses, barn, orchard, etc., and other lands to them, as being what I had intended for my son, William, deceased, who had married Elizabeth Arnold.

This is a second line of ancestry of both the Arnolds and Hawkins, which is completed when Sarah married Stephen Jenks V.

The will of the son, William III was made 1712. He died ten years prior to his father. His will leaves his estate to his widow, Elizabeth.

In 1758, July 17th, her will mentions grandson William Hawkins, as an executor to daughters Elizabeth Man, and Naomi Angell, also daughter Ruth Hopkins, and Deborah Wait. But to children of son Elijah Hawkins, nothing, he having had his part.

This Elijah, mentioned here, had a daughter Sarah, who married Captain Stephen Jenks V. This record of the double descent is complete, save only the genealogical record of the mother of Elizabeth Arnold, here mentioned, wife of Joseph Arnold, brother of Eleazer mentioned as the father of Lydia, mother of Stephen V. Her mother's name was Mercy Stafford, daughter of Amos and Mary Burlin-

game Stafford. She was born, 1694, and died 1753. Her husband, Joseph Arnold was born , and died 1746, November fourth.

The Stafford ancestry here mentioned was through Stafford of Warwickshire, England, who came to Newport, R. I., later to Warwick, R.I. He appears first at Plymouth, Mass., 1626, and built a mill there. It is said the first mill in America for grinding corn. It may be observed here that your ancestors had a singular desire to pass through Plymouth Colony.

In 1638 he appeared at Newport, as one of the first thirty-eight inhabitants there and had a grant of land of seventeen acres.

1647 witness to a will of John Walker.

1652 at Warwick, a freeman there at that date.

His son, Samuel Stafford, married Mercy Westcott, daughter of Stukely Westcott, who was one of those banished with Roger Williams from Salem. So here you have an ancestor, Stukely Westcott, who was at Salem when Anthony Dike was there, was a member of the Salem Church, and was mentioned by Hugh Peters, in the Excommunication launched against the supporters of Roger Williams theories, and he is the only ancestor mentioned in the list of twelve who signed the first compact of civil government at Providence, although William Arnold, your kinsman, signed it. But in the contract of civil government of 1640 at Providence,

The names of William Hawkins, and John Smith, as well as Stukely Westcott, are mentioned, and as we have shown that Thomas Stafford was in the first company at Newport, 1638, you have [illegible] a right to call yourselves the founders of Providence plantations and Rhode Island.

This Samuel Stafford, by wife Mercy Westcott, had a son, Amos Stafford, who married Mary, daughter of Roger and Mary Burlingame, and their daughter, Mercy, born 1694 and named in honor of grandmother Mercy Westcott, married Joseph Arnold, a brother of that Eleazer Arnold, and from each of those Arnolds you are descended .

The family of Burlingame was founded in America by Roger and Mary _____. Roger died September 1st, 1717. Mary, his wife died later. He is mentioned first at Stonington, Conn., later at Warwick, R. I., and Providence, namely 1654 at Stonington; 1660 at Warwick; 1671 at Providence. Served as an Assessor in Providence.

In 1690 a Deputy from Warwick to the Assembly.

1698, of the Town Council.

1715 his will is proved. Mentions his daughter Mary, who married, 1689, Amos Stafford. She died 1760, and his death occurred about the same time.

They left seven children, who married into the families of Lippitt, Westcott, Potter, Arnold, Olney, Whipple, etc.

Stukely Westcott, born in England 1592, died in Warwick, R. I.1677. His wife's name is unknown.

Warwick, N. I.1677. His wife's name is unknown.

Bunsaly Westcoott, born in England 1655, died

families of Dippitt, Westcoott, Potter, Arnold, Olney,

ter Mary, who married, 1689, Amos Stafford. She died

1700, and his death occurred about the same time.

1715 his will is proved. Mentions his daugh-

1698, of the Town Council.

1690 a Deputy from Warwick to the Assembly.

1671 at Providence. Served as an Assessor in Providence.

Providence, namely 1664 at Stonington; 1680 at Warwick;

first at Stonington, Conn., later at Warwick, R. I., and

Jan, 1717. Mary, his wife died later. He is mentioned

by Roger and Mary _____. Roger died September

and from each of these Arnolds you are descended.

The family of Hutchins was founded in America

had a son, Amos Stafford, who married Mary, daughter of

Roger and Mary Hutchinson, and their daughter, Mercy, born

1694 and named in honor of grandmother Mercy Westcott,

He appeared first at Salem, prior to 1637. He had a house lot and a family consisting of eight persons. He was a freeman that year..

1638 he was exiled by order of the "General Court of Massachusetts Bay Colony". He and eleven other heads of families removed to Providence, R. I., and joined with Roger Williams at that place.

1639, July first, he and his wife are alluded to in a letter from Hugh Peters of the Salem Church to the Church at Dorchester, as having had the great censure passed upon them in this our church. They and certain others wholly refuse to hear the church, denying it and all the churches in the Bay to be true churches."

As mentioned before, this was because of the action taken at Salem, 1629, when the church there and subsequently all the other churches as formed, were so founded on the "independent plan, first originated by William Brewster's church at Scrooby, 1606.

Stukely Westcott was one of the twelve original members of the Baptist Church organized at Providence, 1639, and one of the twelve original planters of 1638, and in 1640, one of the thirty-eight who signed the compact of government.

1648 he removed to Warwick.

1651 to 1660 he was a Commissioner.

1663 Assistant to the General Court.

1839 he was exiled by order of the "General

Synod of Dwellers removed to Providence, R. I., and joined

the Church at that place.

1839, July first, he and his wife were allowed to

in a letter from High Peters of the Italian Church to the

Church at Portsmouth, as having had the great ceremony

passed upon them that in this our church. They and certain

others wholly refuse to leave the church, denying it and all

the churches in the Way to be true churches."

motion taken at Exeter, 1839, when the church there and sub-

Timothy Westcott was one of the twelve original

members of the Baptist Church organized at Providence,

1639, and one of the twelve original planters of 1638, and

in 1640, one of the thirty-eight who signed the compact

of government.

1641 to 1650 he was a Commissioner.

1654, the Town Council met at his house.

His eldest child, a daughter, "Damaris", married 1640, Benedict Arnold, a nephew of your first ancestor in America, Thomas Arnold. This Benedict Arnold was founder of the family at Newport, the builder of the Stone Windmill spoken of elsewhere, who, at his death, left, second only to Richard Scott, the largest estate in the Colony of Rhode Island.

We find from the copy of an original deed of Pawtucket Falls to Joseph Jenks, Jr., or II: "Know all men before whom these presents shall come, that I, Abel Potter, inhabitant of Moshanticut, in the Colony of Rhode Island and Providence Plantation, have sold unto Mr. Joseph Jenks, inhabitant of the Town of Providence, in the said Colony, sixty acres of land, more or less, which was formerly laid out to my wife's grandfather, Mr. Ezekiel Holliman, lying near Pawtucket Falls, running westerly and northerly by a three score acre lot, laid out to Mr. Stukely Westcott.

Signed and delivered in the Twenty-fifth year of Our Sovereign Lord, King Charles II.

Signed by Abel Potter, (his mark)

Rachael Potter, his wife, consenting.

Warwick, this fifteenth of April, 1672.

Joh n Green,

Assistant.

Warwick, this fifteenth of April, 1678.

This is the original deed of Pawtucket Falls, and is given here to show the connection of Stukely Westcott with that place.

Robert Westcott, a son of Stukely, left by wife, Catherine, four children, Amos Westcott, one of whose married in succession two daughters of Elizabeth Stafford, sisters of that Samuel, who married your ancestor, Mercy Westcott.

Mercy Westcott Stafford, bore her husband, Samuel Stafford, nine children.

The second child, Amos Stafford, was he who married Mary Ellingame, and thus we complete this ancestry, save only that Sarah Hawkins, who married Captain Stephen Jenks V, through her mother, leads us into another line of ancestry.

Her father, Elijah Hawkins, married Jemima Esten, widow of Henry Esten, who died 1730. She was probably his cousin, Jemima, and her name was probably Jemima Martin.

The Esten ancestry is as follows:-

Thomas Esten, born in 1612 in Hertfordshire, England, died at Providence 1691. His wife, Ann, died 1686.

1635, he came from Hertfordshire to Rhode Island. He is called then, "The Welchman", living by the highway that goeth to Pawtucket.

1668 he signs his name as Thomas Estance.

His wife signs hers as Ann Thomas, her maiden name.

This name, by modifications, is now spelled Esten.

His daughter Jemima married John Martin, 1671, and their granddaughter, Jemimah, married her cousin, Henry Esten, and secondly, Elijah Hawkins, and their daughter Sarah, is she who married Captain Stephen Jenks V.

Of the Esten family, it appears that Cornelius Esten, a brother of the Henry mentioned, married in succession two daughters of the Rev. Ebenezer Jenks, namely Sarah Jenks, 1726, and Rachael Jenks, 1736, and he sold for sixty pounds sterling, 1730, the share of the Rev. Ebenezer Jenks' estate to his son, Ebenezer, their brother-in-law.

This Ebenezer Jenks was killed in the French and Indian War, while serving as a Captain in a Rhode Island Regiment, 1758.

In Benedict's History of the Baptists, mentioned elsewhere, Esek Esten is mentioned as having given the author a genealogy of the Jenks family, from which extracts will be given later.

It appears that this Esek Esten has very carefully written many details of the Jenks family, which otherwise would have been lost, and it also shows that Dr. Benedict, in his history had obtained from him a great amount of information, concerning the Baptist denomination, which runs so pertinaciously through these genealogies.

run so conspicuously through these genealogies.

With regard to the ancestry of Silence Shaw, from lack of absolute evidence, we must esteem that she was a descendant of that family. She settled in Rehoboth, where so many of your ancestors originated.

Savage Genealogical Dictionary, says of John Shaw, of Rehoboth, that he had Priscilla, 1680, and Ann, 1682, and several other children. He probably removed from Weymouth before 1676 to Rehoboth, as his record at Rehoboth commences about the end of the Philip War.

Arnold's Records mention a large number of that name.

John Shaw, of Weymouth and Rehoboth, was the ancestor of many eminent men of the name of Shaw, as is shown in Savage and other records.

Savage says: "Whatever doubt we may have of the identity of the two John's of Weymouth, it is an indisputable fact, that the Rev. John, great grandson of Abraham, first ancestor of all these Shaws, was a graduate of Harvard College, 1720. This Rev. John Shaw had four sons, who were also of Harvard College, and all four were ministers, namely, Rev. Oakes Shaw, Harvard, 1758, was father of the Hon. Lemuel Shaw, of Harvard, 1800. For thirty years Chief Justice of Massachusetts, and he it was to whom "Young's Chronicles" are dedicated.

Another son, the Rev. Bezaleel Shaw, of Harvard, 1762, minister at Marshfield and father of other ministers,

Another son, John Shaw, Harvard, 1772, was father of the late William S. Shaw, the large hearted founder of the "Boston Atheneum". Of this line also was Colonel Robert Gould Shaw, the hero and martyr Colonel of the [illegible] Massachusetts Colored Regiment, "buried with his niggers", whose splendid monument faces the State House of Massachusetts at Boston.

There are many others of the name of Shaw who are mentioned in Appleton's Cyclopaedia and elsewhere.

We might mention our present Secretary of the [illegible].

It is only safe here to say that Silence Shaw, the wife of Colonel Eleazer Jenks VI, was born 1751, and was of this line of Weymouth Rehoboth ancestry.

The writer had so much trouble in establishing the fact of this marriage, that owing to lack of time and opportunity he has not proceeded further in establishing who her father and mother were. That result can be reached, should any person be sufficiently interested. And here is a slight break in this line, which we have not filled at this time. But we are sure that the Rehoboth Records will, if consulted sufficiently, relieve this hiatus in this line of ancestry, which we have so fortunate;y been able to prove without any doubt to have been the wife of Colonel Eleazer Jenks VI.

col.

The following genealogies are not of your immediate line, but are so interwined, and have such an important bearing, that, as Benedict says, in his History of the Baptists, it is impossible to do without having a sketch of their history.

ANCESTRY OF MARTHA BROWN, WHO MARRIED

JOSEPH JENKS III, THE GOVERNOR.

. . . .

Chad Brown, eminent in the history of Rhode Island as the founder of that famous family after whom Brown University is named, and known to-day as the richest family in the State, soon after his arrival in New England, joined Roger Williams at Providence, and his name appears as one of the twelve original proprietors.

It is known that Roger Williams at first was the pastor of the church, but he became a "seeker", that is he claimed that no church had an ecclesiastical authority, and hence the term seeker.

In 1642 Chad Brown appears as the pastor of the first Baptist church. His birth date is unknown, also that of his wife, Elizabeth. He died 1650; she, somewhat later.

His son John came in the ship with his father and mother.

The following is the wording of the compact of 1637, which your ancestor, Pardon Westcott signed, with

Chad Brown, Roger Williams and others.

"We, whose names are hereunder, desirous to inhabit the town of Providence, do promise to subject ourselves in active or passive obedience, to all such orders or agreements, as shall be made for public good of the body, as in an orderly way, by the major assent of the present inhabitants, masters of families, incorporated together into a town fellowship, and such others whom they shall admit unto them, only in civil things.

He was soon after chosen on a committee to complete a list of the first lots situated on the town street. His services in such directions are mentioned by Roger Williams years after in a letter wherein he says: 'The third sort of bounds were of favor and grace, invented, as I think, and prosecuted by that noble spirit, now with God. Chad. Brown'".

1640 he was appointed a Committee with three others in all matters of difference between Providence and Pawtuxet, regarding the division lines, and they reported in July that they had seriously and carefully considered all these differences. "We have gone the fairest and equallest way to produce our peace".

He and thirty-eight others signed in 1640, an agreement for a form of government, and he was on the Committee which drew up the paper.

1642 ordained pastor of the first Baptist Church.

200

1643, he and three others on a Committee in making peace between the people of Warwick and Massachusetts. This is the sad Gorton controversy.

1650 Widow Brown taxed six shillings, eight pence. He was buried in his original home lot, where the court house now stands, and from here his body was removed in 1792 to the North burial ground where a monument was erected to his memory by the town of Providence.

He left a will, as seen in allusions to deeds of his sons. His eldest son, John, married Mary Holmes, daughter of Obediah and Catharine Holmes.

Obediah Holmes born 1607, died 1682, married Catherine , who died later than 1682. They came from Preston, Lancaster County, England, first to Salem, 1639. He had two acres granted him there as the "Glassman", as the manufacturers of glass were called.

1640 he had his daughter Martha baptised, and Obediah, 1644. Samuel, 1642.

1644 he removed to Rehoboth.

1648 became a member of Mr. Newman's church there.

1650 in trouble about religious affairs and attending Baptist meetings. He and eight others removed to Newport and are baptised.

1651, July 21st, he with his neighbor John Crandall and John Clarke were seized at Lynn, they "being representatives of a church at Newport."

At the request of Mr. William Witter, of Lynn, he being a brother in the Baptist Church, they had come, owing to his great age and weakness, he could not undertake so great a journey as to visit their church.

While Mr. Clark was preaching at Nahant, the constables apprehended them and they were sent to Boston and imprisoned. They were tried and sentenced. Mr. Holmes was fined thirty pounds, Mr. Clark twenty pounds, and Mr. Crandall, five pounds, and in default they were to be whipped in public. Mr. Holmes was kept in prison until September and then the sentance was executed upon him, namely thirty stripes. He wrote an account of his sufferings to his friends in London, shortly after his chastisement.

"As the man began to lay the strokes upon my back, I said to the people, though my flesh should fail, yet my God would not fail. He prayed unto the Lord not to lay the sin unto their charge.

"When he had loosed me from the post, having joyfulness in my heart, and cheerfulness in my countenance, as the spectators observed, I told the magistrate, you have struck me as with roses, and said moreover, although the Lord hath made it easy to me, yet I pray God it may not be laid to your charge".

He was advised by friends to make his escape by night, and says: "I departed and the next day after, while

I was on my journey, the constables came to search at the house where I lodged, so I escaped their hands, and was by the good hand of my Heavenly Father brought home to my relatives, my wife and my eight children. The brethren of our towns and Providence, having taken pains to meet me four miles in the woods, there we rejoiced together in the Lord, and such were the tribulations of baptists in those days..

Governor Jenks, who married his granddaughter, has left a written account describing the terrible sufferings which he endured, and all this may be seen in Benedict's History of the Baptists.

This Clark mentioned here was one of the principal men of the Rhode Island Colony and represented it in England for nearly twenty years of his life, was a man of education and refinement, so one can understand the amenities which existed between neighboring New England Colonies at this time.

Mr. Holmes was made pastor of the first Baptise church in Newport, and continued so until his death.

1676, April 4th, in the time of the Philip War, it was voted: "That in these troublesome times and straits in the Colony, this Assembly desiring to have the advice and concurrence of the most judicious inhabitants, if it may be had for the good of the whole, do desire, at their next meeting, Mr. Benedict Arnold and Mr. Obadiah Holmes

John Brown, born 1630, died 1706, son of Chad Brown, married [illegible], daughter of the foregoing Obediah.

1655 he was freeman.

1661, he and two others received a deed on behalf of Providence from an Indian Chief for a tract of land.

1662, moderator of town meeting, and commissioned to build a bridge. Also to levy a rate to send Mr. Clark to England.

1663 and 1664 Deputy to the General Court.

1665, Assistant.

1666, took out oath of allegiance to Charles II, under the new charter.

1672 he sold a lot to his brother Jeremiah, of Newport, which his father Chad Brown had bought of George Rickard.

1672, he sold to his brother James of Newport, their home lot of their father Chad Brown, deceased, which had come to said John by reversion from his mother Elizabeth, "according to my father Chad Brown's, by his will disposed". A reservation of twenty feet square within the orchard, where my father and mother are buried. "This land was sold the same day to Daniel Abbot", and a part of it many generations subsequent was repurchased by John and Moses Brown, and presented to Brown university and built upon by that corporation.

1690, July 6th, he deeded to son James, "for his well being and settlement, and also in consideration of his good obedience and pains, care and diligence, which he constantly hath taken in providing for my family. My three house lots, or home shares of land, lying altogether with my dwelling house, etc., and other land."

Reservation was made to his wife and himself for life, of dwelling in the house, and comfortable maintenance.

1701, he and Pardon Tillinghast, as elders of the church ordained James Clark of Newport, as pastor of the second Baptist church there. This James Brown here mentioned, succeeded the Rev. Ebeneezer Jenks, 1726, as pastor of the first Baptist church, and continued as pastor until death, 1729. He left an estate of 915 pounds. He and wife were buried in the North burial ground.

His sister, Martha Brown, as we have mentioned, married Joseph Jenks, the Governor. He married Hope, Tillinghast, daughter of the Rev. Pardon Tillinghast, who had been associated with him in the church at Providence, and through this christian name of Hope, came that name given to one of the large college buildings of Brown University, and the name of Hope has continued in the family as a favorite christian name to this day, and is now represented by Hope Goddard, wife of Mr. Iselin, the famous yachtsman.

It is likely that the marriage of Governor Jenks to the granddaughter of these two eminent Baptist clergymen had much to do with his personal influence and popularity, although his seven feet, two inches of stature and his personal appearance, of which record is made, yet it is doubtless true that the real, loud feeling at that time was strong in his favor.

He left a book, written by himself, on the Baptist denomination, which later became embodied in Benedict's History.

The union of the Brown and Jenks family, came through the marriage of Rhoda Jenks, daughter of Judge Daniel Jenks and his wife, Joanna Scott, daughter of Major Sylvanus Scott and Joanna Jenks Scott, his wife..

This Rhoda married Nicholas Brown, son of the James Brown previously mentioned, and the interest which Judge Daniel Jenks took in the foundation of the college of Rhode Island was sufficient to influence his son-in-law Nicholas Brown, and that interest descended from Nicholas Brown to his son Nicholas, and his grandson, John Carter Brown, and this interest was so great that this university represents to-day the consecutive descent from Judge Daniel Jenks and through the Brown family to the present time.

Rhoda Jenks Brown's daughter, Hope, married a Mr. Ives, and by that marriage a business combination was formed under the name of Brown & Ives, which has presided over the financial interests of Rhode Island to a greater

over the flourishing businesses of Jesse Isaacs to a Brooklyn
learned under the name of Abram S. Isaacs, which has flourished
in. Isaac, and it that marriage a religious ceremonies was
Isaac Jenks Brown's daughter, Hope, married a
Jew's and thereby one known family to the present time.
following so-dog the consecutive descent from Judge Denfry
Brown, who this ingenuity was to Dyer that this universally
Brown to his son Johnston, the 1st Cranston, John Carter,

of Rhode Island was applicable to insurance his son-in-law
Judge Darryl Jones room in the examination of the colleges
Brown Providence positions, and the interest this
Brown Brown Brown Brown Brown Brown, son of the

Gilmans Brook and Joanna Jenks Brook, his wife..
Henry Evans and her wife, Joanna Brook, daughter of Judge
through the marriage of Rhode Island, a widow of Judge
Ann Brown of the Brown and Jones family, came
Grice's History.

He left a book, written by himself, on the

in his house.

long time that the religious feeling at that time was a
sonal eloquence, or whose record is weak, yet it is deserv-
strongly his seven less, the images of ancient and his per-
ing much so do with his [illegible] intimacy and popularity,

degree than any other in the State.

From a volume, entitled: "A Number of Conspicuous Monuments in the North Burying Ground, North Providence; we have the following epitaphs;--

"Monument to Hon. Daniel Jenks, Esquire, who departed this life 1774, aged 73. Son of Nbenezer Jenks. He descended from a very reputable family, to which his usefulness added increased lustre. He continued a member of the Baptist church forty-eight years, without censure. Forty years he served his country as a member of the General Assembly. Thirty years as Chief Justice. Of great activity in business. He accumulated a plentiful estate."

"His wife, Joanna Jenks, consort of Hon. Daniel Jenks, Esquire, more than fifty years a member of the Baptist church, died 1796, aged 92 years."

"Nicholas Brown, Esquire, an eminent merchant. Died, 1791, aged 62."

"Mrs. Rhoda Brown, wife of Nicholas Brown, Esq. Died 1783, aged 42 years. She was fifth daughter of Hon. Daniel Jenks, Esquire, and Mrs. Joanna Jenks, his wife."

As the first Joseph Jenks of Lynn cut the dies for the pine tree coinage, the following extract from an oration delivered by C. C. Newman, 1860, at Rehoboth may be interesting:

"Of the connecting ideas to the gradual development of our childhood of colonial history, and the final independent union of the Republic".

"First point". On the eleventh of November 1620, "the famous Mayflower compact".

Second point. "In 1652. Through the medium of coinage, the first coin struck in North America at Boston, 1652, was intended as a "Liberty Coin". It was in later times, and for special reasons called the "Pine Tree Shilling", but it was no such thing. It was as bold an effort at a Declaration of Independence as they then dare make, and was emblematical and founded on the Seventeenth Chapter of the Prophet Ezekiel.

The coin was a "Cedar Tree", enclosed in an outer ring, and on the opposite side: "1652, XII pence".

In the inner ring, and "New England" in the outer ring, or between the two rings. This coin was thus struck in the time of the "Commonwealth under Oliver Cromwell, when the restraints of monarchy, were hardly thought of in the colonies. They thought that they were a full grown goodly "Cedar", but they were too fast; the time indicated in Ezekiel's riddle had not yet come.

In a little time Charles II came to the throne, monarchy was restored, and they began to be fearful about their coin:"The King's Commissioners" reported it to him, but knew nothing about the "Riddle of Liberty" contained in it.

The King asked Sir Thomas Temple why they dared to coin money contrary to law. He took some of the coins from his pocket and remarked evasively, that they were coined merely for convenience, not supposing there would be any objections.

The King asked what tree that was. Sir Thomas told him it was "The Royal Oak of Boscobel" (referring to the tree in which Charles hid after the rout of the battle of Worcester, 1651.

The King, smiling said : "They are a set of honest dogs; let them coin their shillings." And they continued to coin their shillings and sent without much alteration, calling it an oak or a pine, as best suited their whim, only keeping out of sight the secret of their "Cedar Tree Coin".

There was wisdom to be learned from this second point. In out threefold idea of the development of American Freedom, they were right in their outer ring of God's ultimate design; in his setting His Eagle, to prop the monarchies of the Old World, and to replant the twigs to grow into republics. But they were too fast again they thought that the small twig plucked from the prophetic

they thought were the words that fell once from the prophet's
to flow into reluctance. But they were too just again
the monarchies of the Old World, and to replant the native
God's vigorous design; in him beating his eagle, to stop
American freedom, they were right in their utmost right of
point. In our threefold idea of the development of

There was wisdom to be learned from this second
only keeping out of sight the secret of their "Outer Zone
calling it an oak or a pine, as best suited their aims,
to coin their abilities and hence without alteration,
done; let them coin their abilities." And they continued

of November, 1087.

the time in which Ghartian hid after the rout of the battle
told him it was "The Royal Oak of Worcester" (referring to

be any objections.

The King called what they met was. Sir Thomas

Then his pocket and remarked evasively, that there
to coin money contrary to law. No book nowa of the coins

in it

but knew nothing about the "Middle of History" contained

:"

top of the Cedar of Lebanon, and developed into the miniature platform of the Mayflower, 1620, had grown into the goodly tree at Boston in thirty-two years, so that it could bear national fruit, and shelter in its ample boughs "All fowls of every wing", or in other words welcome the oppressed of all nations under the protecting shadow.
But such was not the case. The time had not arrived, they had to do more than to wait a little longer. Their emblematic "Declaration of Independence was indeed, the still small Vox Dei, but in his wisdom not "then to be ratified by the Vox Populi, but after a century and a quarter more had rolled away and Divine Providence had so shaped the affairs of men that all was right.

Then came in thunder tones the Vox Dei, ratified in universal acclamation by the Vox Populi, and developed into the remarkable charter of our liberties.

"Third Point." Of the procession from the emblem of the great enigma of human freedom and human rights: "Mayflower 1620"; "[illegible] tree or cedar [illegible] shilling of 1652"; "Declaration of Independence, 1776".

This is that coin, and its history.

. . . . . .

The foregoing oration was made by a descendant of the Rev. Samuel Newman, who was the first pastor of Rehoboth, and shows that the ancestor's wisdom continued to the descendant. The history of Rehoboth says:

the descendant. The History of Mendoth says:

The foregoing oration was made by a descendant of the Rev. Samuel Mendon, who was the first pastor of Re-

. . . . . .

This is that coin, and its history.

of 1652"; "Declaration of Independence, 1776".

emblem of the great emblem of human freedom and human

"Third Point." Of the procession from the

in universal acclamation by the Vox Populi, and developed

Then came in thunder tones the Vox Dei, replied

shaped the affairs of men that all was right.

ter more had rolled away and Divine Providence had so

still small Vox Dei, but in His wisdom not "then to be

that after the Rev. Samuel Newman had published two editions in England of that marvel of a laborious scholar "The Concordance of the Scriptures"never undertaken before or since by any other man.

In 1660, his publishers in England failed and Mr. Newman died in 1663 of a broken spirit at Rehoboth. Some twenty years after his death, the concordance was published in England as the "Cambridge Concordance", and in small capitals in one corner, the credit was given to S. N., but Samuel Newman's work lives and honors him still. A son of his, the Rev. Antipas Newman married a daughter of Governor John Winthrop, of Connecticut, and from that day down the name of Newman has been famous in literary circles.

These local histories of New England have kept the memory of their scholarly pastors of the early days green, among them Samuel Newman and John Miles of Rehoboth and Swansea.

We have taken occasion to notice several times a history of the Baptists as spoken of by Mrs. Phebe Ann Dyke. The following is the title of the book.

A

General History

of the

Baptist Denomination

in

America.

of the

Baptist Denomination

In

and other parts of the World,
By David Benedict, A. M., pastor of the Baptist Church in Pawtucket.

in two volumes

Printed in Boston, 1813.

In Volume 1, on page 398, mention is made of a book written by Rev. John Russell, minister of the Baptist church in Boston, giving an account of the persecutions suffered there. This book was printed in London, 1680, with a preface to it by Daniel Dyke, and other eminent Baptist ministers in England.

On page 399 mention is made that three eminent ministers of Swansea: Job Russell and John Russell and John Mason were grandchildren of this worthy but much despised man. From his also came the Russells of Providence.

The mention of Daniel Dyke in the above quotetion is given as that of an eminent Baptist cleygyman of his time in England, and has the same Christian name as that of Daniel Dyke who witnessed the will of the widow of John Conant, in Dorsetshire. Whether there is any relation between them or not, the writer, of course, knows not.

Page 425 gives a long account of the first church at Swansea, established by John Miles, who brought his church records from Swansea, Wales, says: Plymouth Colony granted the land for the town of Swansea to them and did not persecute them as Massachusetts Colony did.

Gives also a full account of the persecutions suffered by Obediah Holmes and others.

On page 454, it says: that the Magistrates of Boston sent Captain John Underhill to apprehend Roger Williams at Salem, and to carry him on board ship for England, the ship then lying at Nantasket. But when they came to his house found he had been gone three days.. This was in January, 1636/7. Williams fled to Rehoboth or Seekonk , but was obliged by Plymouth colony to go into the Narragansett country, over Pawtucket River, to the Indian place Moshassick, now Providence, about the 20th of March, 1636, last day of the old year, 1636 Old Style.

The eighth of eighth month, 1638, twelve men mentioned are admitted to the first government.

Stukely Westcott was the only ancestor of direct line, but William Arnold, a brother of your Thomas Arnold was one of the twelve. Ezekiel Holliman, whose land at Pawtucket Falls was bought by Joseph Jenks II was another signer. Richard Scott and Benedict Arnold do not seem to have been signers, but were there about that time.

The settlement of Aquidneck, Rhode Island, was as follows:

When the Antinomians, being Ann Hutchinson and her colony, were banished from Boston, Mr. John Clark, aged 29, was asked to look up a place and with the aid of Roger Williams, and the encouragement of Plymouth Colony

chose Aquidneck, and on the 7th of March, 1638, the men, eighteen in number were organized into a body politic. The name of Stafford is apparently the only ancestor of your line.

"It was not price or money", says Roger Williams. "That could have purchased Rhode Island, but 'twas obtained by love. That love and favor which that honored gentleman, Sir Henry Vane, and myself had with the Great Sachem, Canonicus, about the league which I procured between the Massachusetts English and the Narragansett Indian in the Pequot War".

It seems, however, that the Indians in after years obtained in gratuities more than the land would have cost had they been bought outright.

Mr. Gorton's colony was the third colony in Rhode Island and established at Warwick, 1641.

The name Warwick came from the protection given to Gorton and his followers by the Earl of Warwick, after that colony had been temporarily broken up by an armed force of Massachusetts Bay Colony under Captain George Cook, who afterwards became a famous officer of Cromwell's Army in England and died Governor of Wexford, Ireland, 1652. He was a kinsman on the ancestral side of Mrs. Camden C. Dyke and rose in England through the influence of the Rev. Hugh Peters.

The success that Roger Williams had in England, in 1643, in obtaining a special charter for the Colony of

217 Rhode Island , [illegible] Sir Henry Vane, the younger, who was [illegible] at the time of the Pequot War.

1732 a long letter appears in this volume written by your kinsman, the Rev. Peter Thacher, and two other ministers of Boston, to Deputy Governor, Joseph Jenks and others, concerning the establishment of an Independent church in Rhode Island, and a long answer signed by Jonathan Sprague, on page 472:

"Did you not barbarously scourge Obadiah Holmes, fine John Miles, James Brown, and nail up their meeting house, and in the end the letter declined the proposition..

The au thor states: Pawtucket is four miles northeast from Providence, on the road to Boston. For a hundred and forty years past there have at all times resided in this place and vicinity a number of the members of the Providence church, among whom were Ebenezer Jenks, for a number of years pastor of that body, Governor Joseph Jenks, Judge William Jenks, and others, but no provision for a stated meeting until 1795.

In 1804 the author began his labors here. The meeting house stands on a lot given by Nickolas Brown, Esquire. This church has lately furnished Hurvey Jenks minister at Hudson, N. Y. , later pastor of the First Baptist Church in Providence, and four hundred and twenty-five members in the church.

Page 491: [illegible] who [illegible] members, and distinguished patrons of this church and society, those of the Brown and Jenks family deserve particular notice. Others deserve mention, but they have not a connected history.

Page 492: The Jenks family for nearly a century resided mostly at Pawtucket and its vicinity; but they are now widely scattered, in many different states, and not so many eminent men are found among them as formerly. They are all descended from the Hon. Joseph Jenks, Esquire, who was born in Buckinghamshire, England, 1642.

He came to America, tarried a while at Lynn, in Massachusetts and then emigrated to Pawtucket, and erected the first house in that place.

His four sons, Joseph, Nathaniel, Ebenezer and William, were eminent in their day. Each of them built houses in Pawtucket, which are yet standing, and three of them were worthy members of the church at Providence.

Joseph Jenks, who filled many important offices in the Colony, who was a number of years Ambassador to the Court of St. James, on the business of the Colony, and was five years its Governor, and was an active and ornamental member of the Church, whose affairs we have in view.

When solicited to continue as Governor, he said:

"I now perceive my natural faculties abating--- If I shall continue longer in office, it is possible I may be insensible of their decay, and may be unwilling to

resign my post when I am no longer capable of filling it.

His wife was Martha Brown, daughter of Elder James Brown, of Providence, by [illegible] Holloman, who married into the families of the Blakes, Turpins, Scotts, Andrews, Masons, Harendens, and Bucklins.

John studied physics; went with his father into England, where he died of the smallpox.

Major Nathaniel, born 1662, died 1723, aged 61.

Elder Ebenezer, pastor of the Providence Church, died 1726.

Judge William Jenks, the youngest of the family, was a worthy member of the church at Providence, and died 1765, in his 91st year.

Judge Daniel Jenks, a son of Elder Ebenezer, settled in Providence, became a worthy member of the church accumulated a great estate, and was a generous promoter of the Baptist interests in the town. It is said he expended a thousand dollars towards the college and the same sum towards the meeting-house. He died 1774 in his 73d year.

The Hon. Joseph Jenks, a member of the Providence [illegible] Narragansett country, is a grandson of this eminent man. One of his daughters was also the mother of the present Nicholas Brown and Mrs. Hope Ives.

On page 494, in a note: "The house built by Governor Jenks is now owned by his great grandson, George Jenks and Dr. Manchester. In the part occupied by Dr.

Manchester the Governor died. The other part was built while he resided at Newport, by one of his sons. The house built by Rev. Ebenezer, is now occupied by James Mason, Esq.

Judge Williams' house is that near Samuel Slater's and is now owned by Friend Moses Brown, of Providence.

Major Nathaniel's house is now owned by the widow and heirs of the late Isabod Jenks. In this house the first Pawtucket Church covenanted together. It is said that the east end of it is the very house built by the first Joseph Jenks at Pawtucket

From Major Nathaniel descended a numerous family, many of whom are in Pawtucket and vicinity now, and many have removed to other parts. The descendants of the late Captain Stephen and Isabod are all from Major Nathaniel, their grandfather. Of his posterity also is Nicholas Brown, who had lately been appointed as a treasurer by the old Providence Church.

A great number of the descendants of the Governor also reside in Pawtucket. Thus, from the Ancient and Honorable Joseph Jenks, who was one of the Senators or Assistants of the Colony, has descended a most numerous posterity, which it is supposed would (counting them on the male and female lines) amount to eight or ten thousand persons.

Among his grandchildren were ten widows of remarkable character, namely Catherine Jenks. At her house the General Assembly of the Colony was held for many years. She died at the age of eighty-eight.

Catherine Jenks, widow of Captain Nathaniel, died at the age of ninety-six years.

Bridget Jenks, widow of Nathaniel, Jr., lived to the age of eighty-nine.

Experience, widow of Ebenezer, lived to more than ninety.

Joanna, widow of Judge Daniel, died in her ninety-third year.

Rachael, daughter of Rev. Ebenezer and widow of Cornelius Eaton, lived to be seventy-one.

Mercy, widow of Philip Wheeler lived to be eighty years of age and died a member of the Swansea Church.

Freelove, widow of Johnathan Jenks, lived to the age of eighty.

Mercy, widow of Thomas Comstock, lived to ninety.

Patience, widow of Johnathan Olney, Esquire, died at four score.

These ten widows were all first cousins, seven by blood and three by marriage. Were all eminent for piety and most of them members of the Providence Church.

The author mentions that much of this information has come to him from Esek Eaton, son of the widow Cornelius

Esten, before mentioned.

The writer is inclined to believe that Dr. Benedict has made use, in this history, of a large amount of material on Baptist Church history, which came to him through manuscripts furnished him by the Janks family. As we have many quotations in these genealogies from Governor Jenks, it appears likely that he wrote a history of the persecution suffered by the Baptists from the authorities of the other colonies, particularly that of Massachusetts Bay, which seems to have esercized extraordinary severity towards the Baptists, the Quakers, the Antinomians, and perhaps other sects, in which your ancestors were included.

The amount of information which the writer has been able to give you of the genealogy of your family, comes from this record of persecution which has made it a matter of record in so many instances in the local history whose authority has been given from time to time, embracing among the number of your ancestors in this line, the first settlement of Rhode Island, and that detatchment of Baptists who were forced to leave Massachusetts to make the first foundation in Nantucket.

Therefore this volume of Benedict, which is now out of print and therefore difficult for you to reach has been quoted from more freely than would be the case were it a volume that could be readily obtained.

At the outset the writer was confronted with a statement of Phebe Ann Dyke, to her daughter Alice, the mother, James Prince, was a descendant of Governor Prince of Plymouth Colony.

The impossibility of that statement was easily proved, from the fact that although Governor Prince had a very large family, yet he had but one son. That son returned into England, and left, at his death, an only daughter, so that ended that family in the male line.

Another error on her part was that her grandfather was Thomas Prince, and that he married Abigail Kimball. The writer will easily prove that this was a mistake; that his name was Job Prince.

Fortunately the writer came into possession of a package, three, and the following letters, written by the Governor of the Prince Genealogy, and it will prove to the satisfaction of the Prince Genealogy, and it will prove to the writer's mind to a fact in the flesh and blood of the Governor of Plymouth Colony.

"Dear Sir:

Your very welcome and interesting letter came to hand, but came only to hand, but, for want of time, I have not answer must be consequent delayed. In the meantime

. . . .

At the outset the writer was confronted with the statement of Phebe Ann Pyne, to her daughter Alice, that her Father, James Prince, was a descendant of Governor Prence, of Plymouth Colony.

The impossibility of that statement was easily proved, from the fact that although Governor Prence had a very large family, yet he had but one son. That son returned into England, and left, at his death, an only daughter, so that ended that family in the male line.

Another error on her part was that her grandfather's name was Thomas Prince, and that he married Abigail Kimball. The writer will easily prove that that was a mistake; that his name was Job Prince.

Fortunately the writer came into correspondence with Mr. George C. Burgess, No. 2, Magnolia Square, Roxbury, Mass, and the following letters, written by him, will be the skeleton of the Prince genealogy, and it will become the writer's duty to fill in the flesh and blood of history, as the generations develop.

His letters follow:-

"Dear Sir:

Your very welcome and interesting letter came duly to hand, but, for want of time, my answer must be somewhat delayed. In the absence

of just what you have on hand of information, I may duplicate what you have altogether.

If you have read 'Prince's Annals', you know that the immigrant, John Prince, who came to this country in 1633, settled first at Watertown, then at Hingham, and finally at Hull, where he lived and died, the ruling elder of the church, August 10th, 1676.

He was the son of the Rev. John Prince, and Elizabeth Tolderbury, of West Shefford, Berks, England. I have the following, copied from one of the Parish visitations, which purports to give the ancestry of the Rev. John Prince:

'John Prince, son of Richard Prince of Abbey Forget, and Margaret, Manchester,--he was son of John Prince and Elicia Bradley. He was son of John Prince, and Julianna Bodington. He was son of Adam Prince, and Isabella Hunt.'

"Colonel Fred W. Prince, of Hartford, Connecticut, who has given the subject much attention; says, that connection of John, with Richard, is not proven. It was to Richard that coat armor was granted by Queen Elizabeth, 1594, and you will remember that the Rev. Thomas Prince brought home the coat of arms which he was told was borne by this family.

Elder John Prince, the first emigrant in

in America, married Alice Honor, who was the mother of all of his children.

He married secondly, a widow, Anna Barstow.

The Children of John and Alice Honor Prince were as follows:-

John, IIbaptised May 6th, 1638; married Rebecca Bickerow.

Joseph. B. November 20th., 1642, married Joanna Morton.

Elizabeth, B, August ninth, 1644, married Josiah Loring.

Martha, B., Aug. 10, 1645, married Christopher Wharton.

Job II, B, August 2x, 1647, married Rebecca Phippeny.

Samuel, B, Aug. 19, 1649, married Martha Barstow.

Isaac II, I, July 19th, 1654, married Mary Turner.

Thomas, II, B, Aug. 8th, 1656, married Ruth Turner.

Benjamin, died before his father, not mentioned in the will."

The writer wishes to say at this point, that the Joseph above, married Joanna Morton, as mentioned in the Morton genealogy. That Isaac and Thomas, mentioned above, married two sisters of the name of Turner, as will be further developed in the Turner genealogy.

Your ancester of the above list is Thomas, who married Ruth Turner, and their children were:-

Thomas III, B, July 10, 1686. Married Judeth F. Fox.

James III, B., Nov. 23, 1687, married Deborah Robinson.

Ruth, III, B, Mar. 1690, died young.

Benjamin III, B., Feb. 28th, 1695, married Abiel Nelson.

Job III, B., Aug. 1695 married Abigail Kimball, and here we have developed the fact of the marriage of Job, your ancestor, to Abigail Kimball, and this corrects the error of Mrs. Phebe Ann Dike.

The children of Job, and Abigail Kimball Prince, were as follows:-

Thomas IV, B., 1720, married Lydia Delano.

Job. IV, B., 1723, married Elizabath Allen.

Kimball IV, B., May 9, 1726, married Deborah Fuller.

James IV, B., 1729. No marriage known.

Christopher IV, B., 1730, married Molly Foster.

Ruth, IV, B., 1721/2, married Elijah Leach.

James, son of Thomas and Lydia Delano Prince, married first, Eunice Foster, daughter of Thomas Foster, of Weymouth, and his second wife, Mary Morton.

He married secondly, Sally Jenks, daughter of Josiah Jenks, of Providence, Rhode Island.

(The mention here of the name of Josiah Jenks is an error, as we have proved in the genealogy of the Jenks family, and it should read: 'Daughter of Colonel Eleazer Jenks. ')

Mr. Burgess, in his letter, at this point, mentions "If you do not already know it, it may be of interest to you to know that Mrs. Lubh N. Ivey, St. Botolph Street, Melrose Highlands, Mass., is writing a history of the Jenks family and has gathered much material,"

This fortunate suggestion resulted in the writer getting into correspondence with Mrs. Ivey, and her aid he was enabled to clear up the Jenks genealogy, as stated previously in that genealogy.

As will be seen when we arrive at the genealogy of Thomas Clark, that he is held to be the mate of the Mayflower, in Plymouth history.

Mr. Burgess seems to question that and here is what he says:

"With regard to the mate of the Mayflower, it was for many years an accepted tradition, that the grave of Thomas Clark, on Burial Hill, Plymouth, held the remains of the Mayflower, but that is easily disproven.

The inscription on the gravestone is as follows:

"Here lies ye body of Mr. Thomas Clark, aged 98 years, departed this life, March ye 24th, 1697.

It was thought that after returning to England in the Mayflower, he returned to Plymouth and remained there until his death. But, by comparison of above figures, it will be seen that he would have been only eighteen or nineteen years of age when the Mayflower came.

As this Thomas Clark will appear in your ancestry, the writer wishes to say at this point, that the fact that Thomas Clark was but eighteen or nineteen years of age, certainly does not interfere with the tradition from the fact that ships infinitely larger than the Mayflower have been commanded a thousand times by men as young as 18

The Church in East Shefford, where the Rev. John Prince was preaching in 1620, is still standing. I have a fine picture of it copied by one who was my Cousin, John T. Prince, when he visited the place some ten years ago. It is now used, however, only for a mortuary chapel, a new church having been built.

Elder John, of Hull, was interested in fishing, on account of which important industry, Hull was founded.

I can send you a picture of the house in Kingston, where Job and Abigail Prince, and of course, James, lived. It is still in excellent condition.

(Signed,)

George C. Burgess. "

A second letter, from the same writer, says: "You flatter me, when you call me a genealogist. I have to use the words of Newton, 'only picked up a few pebbled on the shore of a vast ocean.' I could, perhaps answer your queries more satisfactorily, if I knew on which side you were affiliated--the Princes, or the Kimballs. However, I will, so far as I can, answer your question;

1. Ursula, or Versula, Scott, who married Richard Kimball, was the dauhter of Henry Scott and Martha Whatlocke, of Rattle's Den Parrish, Suffolk County, England. And, as the records of this Parrish have been printed, you can doubtless find a copy easily in some New York library.

My notes say that Christopher Kimball, was a

son of Richard Kimball, but I have crossed this note out, as a study of the Kimball genealogy convinces me that he was a son of Richard Kimball, himself.

A Cousin of my mother, Captain George Prince, has given a great deal of time to investigating the Prince genealogy, and his grand nephew has now taken up the work with much zeal.

We three, with Colonel Prince of Hartford, Conn., three years ago, formed a sort of Committee, and with the aid of subscriptions from descendants, set up a memorial to the Immigrant, Elder, John Prince, in the old graveyard, at Hull, and as near as possible to the spot where tradition says he was buried.

The Thomas Prince who died at Barbadoes, was the father of Job, and was a sea captain.

Isaac Prince, who married Mary Turner, was also a sea captain. He had children, as follows:-

Alice, 1680, Isaac, 1682, Elisha, 1684, Mary, 1685, David, 1687. He married Eliza Gould.

Jacob, 1690, James, 1692, Joseph, 1694, married Mary Townsend.

Caleb, 1695, Ruth, 1698, Honor, 1701.

The widow of John Tucker Prince, has, in manuscript, quite a full record of this branch.

It will appear in the Turner genealogy that Humfrey Turner had two sons, John, known as and John the younger, and they each ma

families.

Mr. Burgess accounts for this by saying that they were named for two uncles.

Captain Thomas Prince, who married Lydia Delano, died at Kingston, Mass. The gravestone in the old part of the graveyard, says that he died January, 5th, 1768, aged forty-seven years, three months and two days.

The inscription on the Prince memorial stone in the Kingston graveyard, is as follows:

"Thomas Prince, son of Elder John Prince of Hull, and Alice Honer, his wife, born 1658, died at Barbadoes, 1656.

Job Prince, son of Thomas and Ruth Turner Prince, and the first of the family in Kingston, was born in 1695, and died in Jamaica, 1731.

Abigail Kimball, his wife, died September 6th, 1780, in her seventy-seventh year, and is here buried.

Of their six children, Thomas, 1720--1768, Ruth Leach, 1721/ 1794, and Kimball, 1724, 1814, are buried in this church yard.

Job, 1723--1790, died in Boston.

James, 1759, died in North Carolina.

Christopher, 1730--1799, died in Nova Scotia.

Erected by their descendants, in 1894.

This memorial has been photographed by Fish, of Plymouth, from whom copies can be obtained.

I have before me some extracts from the Parish Register, of Rattle's Den, Suffolk County, England. From these, I take the following:

July 25th, 1594, Henry Scott, and Martha Whatlocke married.

Febryary 28th, 1594, Thomas Scott, son of Henry and Martha, baptised.

February 14th, 1597, Ursulaye Scott, daughter of Henry and Martha baptised.

July 20th, 161 , Thomas Scott and Elizabeth Strutt married.

July 14th, 1590, Christopher Strutt and Annie Waller, married.

May 16th, 1594, Elizabeth Strutt, daughter , baptised.

In this same Register is the birth of some of Richard Kimball's children..

Savage's Genealogical Dictionary, says, of Richard Kimball:

"He was brother of Henry, of Watertown. Came to Ipswich, with wife, Ursula Scott, daughter of Henry Scott, and Martha Whatlocke, who were of Rattle's Den, Suffolk County, England.

He came with his brother-in law-,Thomas Scott, each having a family of children. He was aged thirty-nine. They came in the Elibath, with children, Henry, aged 15;

Richard, aged 11; Mary, 9; Martha, 5; John, 3; Thomas 1, and a servant, John Laverick.

He was freeman at Watertown, 1635; removed 1638 to Ipswich. There he had more children, and died, 1675. leaving Henry, Richard, Mary, Thomas, Benjamin, Elizabeth, Caleb, Sarah, and another daughter, wife of John Severn.

He is called by Thomas Scott, a fellow passenter-brother.

It is said two of his sons, Thomas and William, were killed by the Indians, 1675, but I suppose Caleb was one.

Benjamin was of Rowley, 1664. Married Mary, daughter of Robert Hazletine.

Caleb, of Ipswich, 1665, had by wife Hannah: Caleb, Ann, Elizabeth, Abigain, Mary, Robert, and Benjamin.

He was killed by Indians, 18th of September, 1675, with Captain Lothrop's Company, of the "Flower of Essex", at Bloody Brook.

His cousin, Thomas Scott, was slain in the same action.

The names of Ebeneezer, of Rowley, 1691, Ephraim, of Wyndham, 1690, and Abigail, mentioned in Caleb's list of children, are repeated in the list of children of Abigail Kimball, and her second husband Ephraim Everson, whom she married March 15th, 1731/32.

Their children were Ebeneezer, born October 21st,

to Ipswich. There he had more children, and died, 1679.
leaving Henry, Richard, Mary, Thomas, Benjamin, Elizabeth,
Caleb, Sarah, and another daughter, wife of John Severn.

He is called by Thomas Scott, a fellow passenger-
brother.

It is said two of his sons, Thomas and William,
were killed by the Indians, 1694, but I suppose Caleb was
one.

Benjamin was of Rowley, 1686. Married Mary,
daughter of Robert Mansfield.

Caleb, of Ipswich, 1686, had by wife Hannah:
Caleb, Ann, Elizabeth, Abigail, Mary, Robert, and Benjamin.

He was killed by Indians, 18th of September,
1676, with Captain Lothrop's Company, of the "Flower of
Essex", at Bloody Brook.

His cousin, Thomas Scott, was slain in the same

1733; Ephraim, May 12th, 1735; Abigail, January [illegible], 1736/ 37, Richard, January 4th, 1738/ 39; Robert, June [illegible], 1740; Abigail, (again), March 5th, 1741/2.

Another son, Sylvanus, is mentioned in his mother's will.

Abigail Kimball was the daughter of Christopher Kimball, and Sarah Jones, his wife. I do not know where she was born, but she was married in Plympton, Mass.,

Christopher Kimball was the eighth son, of Richard Kimball, of Ipswich, Mass., and of Ursula Scott, his wife.

Christopher Prince, a son, by her first marriage, with Job Prince, removed to Nova Scotia, where he dies. He was a Loyalist, and left Boston during the Revolution. I have some notes on his life in Nova Scothia.

(Signed)

George C. Burgess.

Thomas Kimball, of Ipswich, son or Richard, an early settler of Rowley, was killed by Indians, the third of May, 1676, when his wife and five children, Joanna, Thomas, Joseph, Priscilla and John, were taken and carried into captivity, forty miles into the wilderness. But they were allowed by the Indians to come home, the 15th of June, 1676. This is from Savage.

Whether there is an intermediate generation, the writer is not fully satisfied to say. But, if Mr. Burgess

is right in his [illegible] Christopher [illegible] eldest son of the original settler, then the genealogical line of Abigail Kimball, wife of Job Prince, is complete, save that we do not have the name of the wife of Christopher.

(The only faulty point and loss of a name, which it seems impossible to rectify.)

Before going into the lines of collateral ancestry of the Prince family, the writer wishes to give a sketch of the Rev. Thomas Prince, the chronologist, as he, in his own hand, wrote a genealogical sketch of the family, at his time.

Savage says, of the Rev. Thomas Prince, born May, 1687; Harvard College, 1707, the assiduous annalist, whose service in perpetuating evidence relative to our early history, exceeds that of any other man, since the first generation.

Of written or printed matter, he was a useful collector:

He had a brother, Nathan Prince, Harvard College, 1718, a man of talents superior to his brother's, but of less value to society.

Thomas Prince, usually considered born in Sandwich, was born in Milk Street, Boston, near the Old South Church. With regard to Mr. Nathan Prince:

He was the sixth son of Samuel and Mary Prince, of Sandwich, Mass. He was a man of some experience in

literature. He published two works of importance, one was of ecclesiastical affairs, the other was concerning the administration of Harvard College, 1742.

He seems to have become involved in controversy with the authorities of Harvard College, although he had served fourteen years as tutor, and five years as a fellow of the college, he was forced to resign and then he took up the cause of foreign missionaries. He took orders in the episcopal church and went to Hattan, in Central America, where he preached for many years. He died there 1748, as we hear from this record.

Through Captain Dupee, from Hattan, we are informed that Mr. Nathan Prince, M. A., formerly of Harvard College, born 1698 at Sandwich, Mass., died there the 25th of July last, 1748, as an episcopal missionary at that place.

One of the most valuable documents in the history of the Prince family is by the Rev. Thomas Prince himself. This fact alone stamps it with a value that will be appreciated. It seems to have been prepared by him on the death of his father and appeared in the "New England Weekly Journal, of July 15th. 1728, and we have no knowledge that it has ever appeared anywhere else.

As this is the genealogy of the Prince family, written by a skilled genealogist himself, and of his own family, it is of such peculiar importance that it has been inserted here. This is taken from the Prince chronology

Middleborough, Mass., East Precinct, Friday, July 5th, last Wednesday morning a little after break of day, deceased here, Samuel Prince, Esquire, one of his Majesty's justices of the peace for the County of Plymouth, after about ten days illness of a fever, in the 80th year of his age, being born at Boston, May, 1649 and his remains were decently interred here this afternoon, five of the justices of the County and an ancient captain of the town being bearers. He was the fourth son of Mr. John Prince, Ruling Elder of the Church of Sidi, in New England, who was the eldest son of the Rev. John Prince , Rector of East Shefford, in Berkshire, in England, in the reign of King James I and King Charles I, of whom there was this Remarkable-- That though he was one of the conforming Puritans of those days who greatly longed for further Reformation and had married Elizabeth, daughter of Dr. Tolderbury, D. D., of Oxford, by whom he had four sons and seven daughters that all grew up, yet every one of the children proved conscientious non-conformists, even while their parents lived. But without any breach of unity or affection, and this they continued pretty near together, till the furious and cruel Archbishop Laud incensed them and drove their eldest son, with so many others into this country, in the early times of the Massachusetts Colony, where, though he was a young gentleman of liberal education, having studied at the University of Oxford two or three years; yet thinking he had not made

sufficient progress in learning for the ministry, he applied himself to husbandry. He married Mrs. Alice Homer, by whom he had seven sons and two daughters, and died August 16, 1676, in the 66th year of his age, greatly lamented.

The sons as they grew up took to the sea. John the eldest died at Hull, Joseph at Quebec, Job was lost in the Channel of England, Benjamin died at Jamaica, Isaac at Boston, and Thomas, the youngest, at Barbadoes. (This last Thomas is your line of ancestry)

Samuel first lived at Hull; 1674 he married Martha, a daughter of Mr. William Barstow of Scituate, and by her he had three sons and two daughters. He first went a coasting and then applied himself to domestic trade and merchandize. In 1686, he married Mercy, a daughter of the late lamented Governor, Thomas Hinckley, Esquire, of Plymouth Colony. He removed to Sandwich and by her had seven sons and three daughters there.

Of the first wife, one daughter only, now survives, married to Ezra Bourne, of Sandwich.

Of the second marriage, three daughters and four sons survive with their mother. In 1710 he removed to Rochester, where the chief part of his estate lay. He served as representative in each town for the "Great and General Court" of the Colony.

Since 1692 nineteen times has he served as Deputy in the General Court at Boston, since the consolidation of Plymouth Colony and Massachusetts Bay Colony, under the

new charter [illegible] vigorous and active spirit.

In 1723 he came with his consort to sojourn under the roof of the Rev. Mr. Thacher, pastor of this Precinct, who is married to one of his daughters, and here he made his exit. It may be remarked at this point that this Rev. Mr. Thacher was a kinsman of yours of the line of Thacher, which will appear in your list of genealogies.

In the preface to his Chronology of New England, the editor has this to say of the Rev. Thomas Prince:

"No man that ever lived in New England can be said to have done more for history than the Rev. Thomas Prince. Few, if any, approached him in his time. His literary labors were constant, for half a century, and nothing that now has a literary and historic value missed him. His funeral sermons, almost always contained a partial genealogy of the individual whose decease occasioned them. But his greatest literary labor was his incomparable New England Chronology, which for extreme accuracy was probably never exceeded by any other author. But it was too great a work for its time.

Mr. Prince went into England and remained there [illegible] years, serving as [illegible] other places at Combs, near Ipswicham, in Suffolk, [illegible] previously. While in England Mr. Prince was earnest and inductrious in his researches concerning the genealogy of his family

and returned to New England with the coat of arms of the family of Prince, which may be seen in the first page of his chronology of New England, and is identical with that worked so carefully by Mrs. Phebe Ann Dyke.

Very soon after Mr. Prince returned from England, he became pastor of the Old South Church in Boston, and a colleague of the Rev. Mr. Newall. He was ordained October 1st, 1718, and preached his own ordination sermon, which Dr. Chauncey said no ordinary man could write.

Mr. Prince published his first volume of the chronology in 1736, and this proceeding took place in the House of Representatives at Massachusetts. The House being informed that the Rev. Mr. Thomas Prince was at the door and desired admittance, ordered that Mr. Prince be admitted to the House, and he, coming up to the table, addressed himself to the Speaker.

"Mr. Speaker: I most humbly present to your Honors and your Honorable House, my first volume of my Chronology of New England, which, at no small expense and pains, I have composed and published for the instruction and good of my country."

And from that day to this his Chronology has been the fountain head for all information covering the period of New England Colonial History. He was untiring in his search and walked often days at a time from house to house, making a personal canvass for every scrap of paper which

240 had any bearing on colonial history. It was through his personal solicitation that the Bradford family gave into his care that invaluable manuscript history of Plymouth Colony, written by their ancestor, Governor William Bradford, and it remained in his care in the tower of the Old South Church in Boston, until his death, when it disappeared for one hundred years, only to be returned to this country a few years back, with such enthusiastic ceremonies.

Each year saw one or more of his publications which require more than an entire page to give their titles alone. They are mentioned in Page 8 of the Memoir of Thomas Prince. A revised Psalm Book, with a historical preface was his last work.

He lived long enough to know that it was adopted by his church from this record: "Last Monday, the ninth of October, the Old South Church and congregation, unanimously voted to introduce the Revised Psalm Book, by the Rev. Thomas Prince, on October 29th, 1758." But before that date he was no more..

"Last Lords Day, in the afternoon, October 22nd, died here, much lamented, after a long illness of consumption the Rev. and learned Mr. Thomas Prince, one of the pastors of the Old South Church. He was in his 77nd year. "

The following is the notice of the death of his only son: "On Friday night last, the 30th of September, 1748, died here, much lamented, by those who knew him, of a consumptive illness, Mr. Thomas Prince, Jr., M. A., in

had any bearing on nothing whatsoever. It was already

241

his twenty-seventh year, the only son of the Rev. Thomas Prince. He was a young gentleman of great penetration, solid judgment, and of a sober, pious conversation. His remains are to be interred to-morrow. ". Boston Gazette, October 4th, 1748.

The title of a sermon on the death of Miss Deborah Prince, his daughter:

"The Sovereign God, [illegible] and Blest, both in giving and taking. On Friday, July 20th, 1744, in her twenty-first year, in Boston, delivered at the Old South Church, being the Lord's day after her funeral, with a brief account of the dealing of God towards her, especially in her last illness and passing through the valley of the shadow of death." Published by her Father, 1744.

His sermons are of historical impostance, being interspersed with [illegible] and historical reference, and therefore a worthy study of all students of New England History.

THE GENEALOGY OF THE COLLATERAL BRANCHES

OF THE PRINCE FAMILY.

. . . .

Thomas Prince, son of John, of Hull, was born according to the pedigree, was born 1658, and was youngest child. He married Ruth, daughter of John Turner, of Scituate, and had, Thomas, 1686, James 1687, Ruth, 1689, Benjamin 1693, and Job, 1695.

His widow, Ruth, after his early death, was married to Israel Sylvester, of Duxbury, 1700, and had children by him.

Humphrey Turner, a tanner, arrived with his family in Plymouth, 1628. A lot was assigned to him, 1629, and in 1633 he removed to Scituate. The history of Scituate says he was a useful man, of great enterprise and much engaged in public business.

His descendants are to this day residing on property he left; are now and ever have been leading citizens.

The History of Scituate contains, as does Davis' Landmarks of Plymouth, a fairly complete genealogy of the family. In the following genealogies, the term first-comers, when used, indicates those immigrants who came to Plymouth in the first four vessels, namely the Mayflower, [illegible], the Fortune, 1621, The Ann and the Little James, [illegible].

The term first-comers arises from this circum-

[illegible]stance:

In the year 1624, Governor Bradford conceived the idea of encouraging the personal industry of each inhabitant, and a grant was made of an acre of land to each person resident at Plymouth in that year. and this list is the list known as the first comers.

The idea was successful in every respect..

From a genealogy of the Turner family, the following is extracted:

"Humphrey Turner, came by tradition from Essex, but may have come from Devon, where the name is very common. He was a Deputy in the General Court, and held other civil offices. When he came he brought with him two sons, John, the elder, and John the younger." T

(This double naming of sons and daughters occurred occasionally in ancient times.)

"The two Johns grew up, side by side, married wives and had families and lived to a good old age, and each is mentioned in their father's will."

Humphrey Turner and wife, Lydia Gainer, had, first, John, second, John, Thomas, Daniel, Nathaniel, Joseph, Lydia who married James Doughty; Mary, married William Parker. Humphrey died 1673, at Scituate. His wife died before him.

Both these Johns were on the military roll of Scituate, 1643, at the time of the Indian alarm.

John Turner I married Mary, daughter of Johnathan Brewster, who was eldest son of elder William Brewster, of

the Mayflower. They had children, as follows:-
Joseph, Hannah, [illegible], John, Benjamin, Jonnathan, Amos,
Joseph, Lydia, Ruth, Isaac, Grace, Mary.

This John Turner, the elder, died 1687. His Brother, John Turner, the younger, married Ann James, and had, David, Miriam, Ann, Sarah, Japhet, Israel, Jacob, and Philip.

Mary, daughter of the first John, married 1683, as his first wife, Isaac Prince.

Lydia married, 1675, John James, and secondly, William Burrill.

Ruth, your ancestor, married 1685, Thomas Prince, brother of Isaac Prince mentioned. Thus two of the Prince family marry two sisters of the Turner family.

The intermarriages, which commenced in this generation, continue as Davis' Landmarks of Plymouth will show, from that day to this.

The most respected of all the Mayflower passengers, Elder William Brewster, who came 1620, was born 1563, at the Manor House of Scrooby, Nottinghamshire, on the high road between London and York. This manor house was held as of the Archbishop of York, and in it Cardinal Wolsley made his last stop, when returning from York, at King Henry VIII's command.

William Brewster's father was a tenant, holding the manor from Archbishop Sandys, of York. This Archbishop Sandys was father of that Sandis, who was the

Treasurer of the Virginia Company, at the time that a charter was granted to John Wincob, for the members of the Mayflower Company.

William Brewster was of Cambridge, with Sandys, and the friendship continued through life. When Brewster left Cambridge, he became connected with the Court of Queen Elizabeth, as an under Secretary to Davidson, who served, sometimes as Ambassador and sometimes as Secretary to Queen Elizabeth.. At one time Davidson was Ambassador into Holland, and William Brewster was in his train. Just previous to the time that the Earl of Leicester went to command the English Army in Holland.

The City of Flushing was given as a sort of mortgage to the English by the authorities of Holland, and the keys were placed in the hands of William Brewster, by Ambassador Davidson. Soon after the arrival of the Earl of Leicester in Holland, and his taking command of the English Army there, Davidson, with Brewster in his train, returned to England, and became, in fact, Secretary to the Queen. And now occurred that unfortunate incident, the death of Queen Mary of Scotts, the odium of which Queen Elizabeth threw, by a subterfuge, on the shoulders of Secretary Davidson, by maintaining that her orders were to retain and not execute the orders issued for the death of the Queen. Davidson was dismissed, heavily fined by the queen, but out of the wreck of Davidson's fortunes,

William Brewster, by some influence, possibly [illegible] Sandys family, secured the position of Post Master at Scrooby, in Nottinghamshire.. The position of Post Master at that time was nothing like that understood to-day. His position at that time was to maintain the continuity of the relays of horses which extended from London to the extreme north of the Kingdom, for the rapid transmission of official orders of all sorts, and it was at this Manor that [illegible], such as would now be given perhaps, by a hotel. For in those days there were neither hotels nor letter posts.

Brewster remained at this post until he retired into Holland as an exile, in 1608 or 1609. Some authorities say that in 1602, a church was organized in his Manor House, but certainly it was organized officially in 1606, for the Rev. John Robinson, of Cambridge University, then identified himself with that church and continued there and in Holland until his death, 1625.

Thus was organized the first independent Church in England.. It was not, as many supposed, a "Brownist Church"; it was a Separatist and never affiliated with the Brownists. This church and congregation were to originate a movement which they little comprehended. Like a pebble dropped in the sea, the waves have widened and widened up to the present day, and from this Manor House, came the Church to Leyden. From Leyden to Plymouth, and from

Plymouth to Salem, in 1629.

[illegible], Pilgrim [illegible], left England, in 1630, [illegible] people had determined on a separation of the Church.. [illegible] address seems to warrant that he left England in full love and affection with the Church. But on the arrival of the Colony in Massachusetts Bay, the churches there, as organized, were so organized on the independent or separatist plan, and the Cambridge platform so shows.

When Harry Vane, in 1645, went into Scotland, embraced the covenant, brought it with him to London, where all England, in a fury, took up with the idea, and the revolution of the Covenant followed, the Westminister Assembly was called, with the intention of making all England Presbyterian.

But an event had taken place in New England, and that was the a ociation of these independent churches in a fellowship, the plan of which developed into a closely [illegible] to England by the Rev. Hugh Peters and the Rev. Thomas Welde, who went to represent New England to the Parliament of England, and carried with them this manuscript volume, which was printed soon after their arrival in London, and attracted considerable interest. But it was never dreamed at that time, or at the time of the opening of the Westminister Assembly, that the independent church system originated at Scrooby, carried

into New England, and the Mayflower, [illegible] into a consociation of neighboring churches. Returned into England, as we have said. Yet it came about that before the termination of the labors of the Westminster Assembly, which continued for five years, the Independent Church, through the power of the Army, had become dominant in England, all powerful through the influence of Oliver Cromwell and his officers. The Westminster Assembly was ordered to close its labors and go about its business.

The King was executed and the Independent Party from that time, until the Restoration, continued the influential element which governed England, in religious matters. But it was unfortunate for England, from the fact that the Presbyterian Party became a party of plotters.

King Charles II was called back by them. The revolution failed in England. St. Bartholomew's Day, 1662 came. These Presbyterian plotters were all turned out by the King. Episcopacy was fully restored, with additional powers. All the great educational institutions were denied to the non-conformists and independency and the Presbytery went into a general wreck together.

But the principles of the Independent Church established in the Manor House of Scrooby, failed in as we have said, in England, in America they continued, as the Baptists might say, somewhat too strenuous in the early operation of the Church, yet modified by time and events.

When the American Revolution took place, New England, with the solitary exception of the small Colony of Rhode Island, was entirely of the Independent Church system. The war was precipitated in and near Boston, and for the following seven or eight years, the New England States, although not in the majority of population, yet they voluntarily furnished the largest number of soldiers in the army, and of money and munitions for the conduct of the war.

The triumph of the United States in that war resulted eventually in universal religious toleration, which has reacted in England, in such a way as to give that country the practical benefits of toleration, although the Episcopal Church still remains the Church of State. And this is the grand result which proceeded out of the Manor House of William Brewster at Scrooby. Everlasting honor to him, to those who worked with him, and to the long line of saintly men, brave soldiers, wise statesmen, whose combined action has produced such wonderful results for the amelioration of the ecclesiastical conditions of the world.

And you, as descendants of this worthy man, should feel a pride of ancestry, which is only reasonable, from events of such importance, to you and to all of us.

The statement often heard that the people in Plymouth were generally of the lower class, illiterates, poor in this world's goods and an accident, rather than a result, is not true. The evidence shows conclusively that the Rev. John Robinson a graduate of Cambridge University, a man of experience, of cultivation, the pastor of that Church who led it into Holland, who presided over it there, and who gathered in that little religious company, an intellectual force which has continued to expand in influence from that day to this, shows that he and his people were no ordinary men.

In the University at Leyden, he was received with honor, listened to with respect, and in the religious controversy of that time, between the Arminians and the Calvinists, he played no small part. And Peter's Church in Leyden, honored his remains with sepulchre within its walls, and the writer saw a bronze tablet which has been placed in the tower of that church, which states this fact and that over against this tower, on the opposite side of the street, formerly existed the little church over which he presided, and from which went forth so many of your ancestors, whose names appear in the list of "The first comers at Plymouth." And the compact which they signed in Provincetown Harbor , Professor Goldwin Smith says is second only to Magna Charta in its results to humanity.

and in bearing out this argument that the members of the church of the Rev. John Robinson, of Leyden, were men of superior merit, we have to mention the name of Edward Winslow, who came in the Mayflower, and who during the Cromwellian period, represented, for some years, the interests of the Colony in London, became a confidential adviser of Oliver Cromwell, and when the expedition was sent in 1654/5 to the West Indies, Cromwell, having no confidence in the faithfulness of Admiral Penn and some of the other high officers of the Army and Navy, whom he suspected of correspondence with Charles II, placed our Edward Winslow, of Plymouth, confidentially in the practical command of both army and navy.

The result of that campaign was the capture of Jamaica from the Spaniards, which has ever since remained an English possession, but Edward Winslow died of a fever contracted during the campaign, and Cromwell's pet scheme of transferring the Colonists of New England to Jamaica, failed, largely from the mortality which infected that expedition.

I might mention that your ancestor, Moses Simmons, who came in the Fortune, with his family, came from the Dutch Church, at Leyden, called Peter's Church. (before mentioned) and were received in Plymouth Church fellowship by letters from that Dutch Church, which had been so hospitable to the Plymouth people, when they resided in Leyden.

And thus, through this [illegible] Walloons, and his wife, you have a [illegible] ancestry, which will be duly recognized in any of the Dutch Societies of America, should you care for such fellowship.

Also it may be stated at this point, that another of your ancestors Philip Delanoye, or as now spelled, Philip Delano, was a Walloon, that is to say, a man of French blood, an exile from France, on account of religious principles. He came to Plymouth from the Walloon Church at Leyden, where he had been baptised, 1603. This also will make you eligible in any of the French Societies, should you desire such fellowship.

The foregoing digression was somewhat in a line of argument to show the quality of the people who were the first comers at Plymouth.

We will return to William Brewster. We have shown that he was born a gentleman, which means a man entitled to coat armor. That he was a university man and had served at the Court of Queen Elizabeth, had held the keys of the cautionary town of Flushing, in Holland, and probably, at that time made that acquaintance with people of authority there, which eventuated in the transfer of his little congregation of Scrooby to that country.

Before he removed to Holland he had married a wife, Mary, whose family name has been lost. He came to America, in the Mayflower, 1620, with his two youngest sons, and with the wife of his son, Johnathat, and their son,

William.

Johnathan was born at Scrooby Manor, before the removal to Holland. He came to Plymouth in the Fortune, 1621. His sisters, Patience and Fear, came in the Ann, 1623. Patience married, 1624, Thomas Prence, afterwards the Governor. She died 1634. Fear married 1626, Isaac Allerton, as his second wife. She died 1633.

William Brewster's wife, Mary, died before 1627. Soon after her death, he removed to Duxbury, and there under the same roof, with his son, Love, he died, 1643, "ill only a day."

Wrestling, another son, died unmarried, before his mother.

Johnathan Brewster, your ancestor, was stationed at many of the trading posts which Plymouth maintained among the Indians, and appears in 1635, 6, and 7, at their trading post on the Connecticut River, and from there sent the warning to Governor Winthrop of the danger of the Pequot War. He resided for a time at Duxbury, but removed again to New London, 1648.

He had designs at one time of returning to England. By his wife, Lucretia, whose family name has been lost, he had the following children:

William, born in Holland.

Mary, perhaps born in Holland. Married John Turner, and is your ancestral line.

And the following other children: - Johnathan, Benjamin, Grace, Ruth, Hannah, Elizabeth.

Mary, [illegible] of Johnathan and Lucretia Brewster, married 13th of December 1665, John Turner, of Scituate.

[illegible]:-

Elizabeth, who married Peter Bradley.

Grace, who married Paul Wetherill.

Ruth, died 1677. Married John Pickett.

Johnathan Brewster and his son, William, both went to New London, Connecticut, as did [illegible] and her husband

The Brewsters of Connecticut and New York are from these.

The history of New London, Conn., gives a genealogical sketch of the Wetherell and Pickett family.

The foregoing list is that of the children of Johnathan and Lucretia Brewster.

Love Brewster, brother of Johnathan, married Sarah, daughter of William Collier, of Duxbury. They had Sarah, who married 1656, Benjamin Bartlett. Then they had:

Nathaniel,

Wrestling,

William.

The widow of Love Brewster married secondly Richard Park, of Cambridge, but after his death returned to Duxbury.

The William Collier mentioned above was one of

was one of those whose names appear from the very first inception of the company of adventurers who in London furnished the means by which the Colony was equipped, the vessels chartered and the stock obtained for the outfit of the Colony at Plymouth. His name appears constantly with that of Mr. Hatherly and others, who remained ever faithful to the interests of the Company.

In 1624, as William Bradford mentions in his history, there was for some reason or other a difference of opinion in London as regards a continued support of the Colony.

It was at this critical period that Mr. Allerton was sent into England and made that famous contract which enabled the colonists to purchase for eighteen hundred pounds sterling the indebtedness of the colonists to the adventurers in England. This was to be paid by installments and was fully liquidated 1642 / 3.

In the meantime the Colonists had furnished large sums of money by which to transport their fellow religionists in Holland, and were enabled so to do by the assistance of certain capitalists in London, who continued to Maintain confidence in them.

Mr. Hatherly eventually sold all his right and interest here for a certain sum which he granted to the Massachusetts Bay Colony. William Collier seems to have gone further than others, as one of

an influential adventurers in the first stock of the Plymouth Colony, and later on came to Plymouth and settled at Duxbury.

Richard Park mentioned above, was an influential inhabitant of Cambridge.

Philip Delano, a Walloon, came in the Fortune. He was probably son of Jean and Marie De Launey, and was baptised in the Walloon Church, at Leyden, 1603. He settled in Duxbury, and in 1634 married Esther Dewsbury.

Their children were:-

Thomas, who married Mary, daughter of John Alden.

Mary, married Johnathan Dunham.

Philip II married

This Philip II, son of Philip 1, died 1708, leaving Samuel.

Martha, who married John Marlow.

Jane.

Ebeneezer, who married Martha Simmons, 1699.

This is the line of Prince family.

At this point let us finish with the children of Philip Delano I, after the birth of his son, Philip II came John, Jane, Rebecca, Johnathan, Esther.

Philip Delano I married secondly, Mary, widow of James Gladd, and daughter of William Pontus, and had a son, Samuel, who married a Standish of Duxbury.

Ebeneezer, son of Philip II, mentioned before,

married Martha Simmons, and had Joshua born in 1700, Thankful, 1702, Abiah, 1704.

This Martha Simmons, who married Ebenezer Delano, was descended from Moses Simmons, who came on the Fortune, and Mrs. Camden C. Dyke, in her line is descended from the same man. Hence her children have a double descent widely separated before its reunion.

Moses Symondson, or Simmons, as he is known in Plymouth records, he having had his Dutch name simplified, came, as we have previously mentioned, from Leyden, where he had been a member of Peters Church..

His wife's name and that of the children do not appear on the ship's lists, but it is presumed that his entire family came with him on the Fortune. In that same ship came also your ancestor, Philip Delano, and Johnathan Brewster. He with children, Moses and Thomas, settled at Duxbury. He was one of eight of the original proprietors of Bridgewater, Dartmouth and Middleborough.

His son, Moses Simmons II, by wife Sarah, had John, Aaron, Mary, Elizabeth, Sarah, who all married. He died, 1689.

Thomas, of Scituate, son of the first Moses, had two sons, Moses and Aaron.

Moses Simmons II, of Duxbury, had two sons besides his daughters.

Martha Simmons, daughter of John Simmons and this

brings us back to the Delano line of Joshua, son of Ebenezer, who married this Martha Simmons.

Joshua Delano married Hopestill Peterson, daughter of Johnathan and Lydia Gorham Thacher, of the Thacher family of Barnstable and Yarmouth.

This Lydia Gorham Thacher was born 1685. She was a daughter of John Thacher, by his wife, Lydia Gorham Thacher, of Yarmouth and Barnstable.

Lydia Gorham was daughter of Captain John Gorham and wife, Desire Howland, first born child to John Howland, and his wife Tillie Howland, who was daughter of John Tillie and his wife, who with the forementioned John Howland and daughter Elizabeth, all came as passengers on the Mayflower, 1620, as did the father and mother of Elizabeth Tillie, namely, Edward Tillie and wife.

The death during the first Winter in Plymouth Colony of John Tilley and his wife, and Edward Tilley and his wife, left this Elizabeth Tilley, aged thirteen years without father or mother, or uncle and aunt.

John Howland, at this time was twenty-eight years of age Exactly how soon after their arrival they were married, is not known, but it is supposed that their first child was Desire, a daughter, and the second child John, a son, and in the dividend of cattle mentioned in the year 1627, these two children appear and from the age of this Desire at her death, she seems to have been the first born child.

first born child.

of this Deanie at her death, was deemed to have been [illegible]
in the year 1827, these two children [illegible] from the
child John, a son, and in the direction of gentle manliness
their first child was Deanie, a daughter, and the second
they were married, is not known, but it is supposed that
Deanie at age [illegible] Exactly how soon after their
John Howland, at this time was twenty-eight

Colony of John Tilley and his wife, and Edward Tilley and

The death during the first Winter in Plymouth

Hightower, 1880, on file the Archer and Brother of Mitchell
land and daughter Tilsbury, all owned as homesteads on the

and wife, Deanie Howland, first born child to John Howland,

was a daughter of John Howland, by his wife, Elizabeth Cordon

Edith Elizabeth Cordon Thurlow was born 1888. She

family of Barnstable and Yarmouth.

There is much competition in families as to which was the firstborn child at Plymouth, and this seems to enter into competition in two lines of your ancestry, that of the forementioned John Howland, and his wife, Elizabeth Tilley, and John Alden and his wife Priscilla Mullen.

It is doubtful, however, whether any exact proof ever will be forthcoming. It is sufficient for you to know that as you embrace both ancestries, you can claim with perfect freedom, descent from the firstborn child in Plymouth.

Hopestill Peterson, who married Joshua Delano, before mentioned, was descended from Joseph Peterson, a Swede, who probably as a sailor, came to Plymouth at an early date, not exactly known, marrying a daughter of Mr. Soule, of Duxbury, who came on the Mayflower and married Mary Buckett, who came on the Ann.

By this marriage was a son born, namely, Johnathan Peterson, who married Lydia Thacher, as aforementioned, 1700, and they had John, born 1701; Hopestill, 1703; Johnathan, 1706; Ruben, 1710. The Hopestill here mentioned is she who married 1703, the Joshua Delano born 1700, mentioned in the Delano Line.

The line of Thacher, ancestor of Lydia Thacher,, who was the wife of Johnathan Peterson, was daughter of John Thacher, who was son of Anthony Thacher, of Salisbury, England, who came 1635, to Ipswich, Mass. and suffered the terrible experience of storm and shipwreck and who later removed to Yarmouth

At [illegible] certain mention of Anthony Thacher. He was curate to his brother, - rector, at Salisbury, in England, but becoming imbued with separatist principles he went into Holland and was for some years connected with the Church at Leyden.

He came, 1635, with his cousin, the Rev. Mr. Avery, to Ipswich, Mass.. The Rev. Mr. Avery had a call to preach at the Church in Marblehead.

Mr. Isaac Allerton, of Plymouth, husband of Fear Brewster, [illegible] at Marblehead, in charge of the fishing there, in the interest of Governor Craddock. Mr. Allerton sent his own Pinnace to Ipswich, to carry the families of Mr. Avery and Mr. Thacher, with all their personal effects, to Marblehead.

One of the most terrific storms in the history of New England took place. They were wrecked on an island, since called Thacher's Woe. Mr. Thacher left an extended and fascinating account of this shipwreck, in a letter to his brother in England. No more thrilling account of shipwreck was ever written by pen of man.

Mr. Avery, his wife and all his children were drowned and Mr. Thacher's children also. The bold survivors of twenty-three persons on the vessel were Mr. Thacher and his wife.

Thomas Thacher, his son by a former wife, had taken the journey by land, and escaped with his life.

[illegible] later became the first [illegible] of the [illegible] Church, in which the Rev. Thomas Prince afterward preached, and was one of the most famous divines in Boston.

Anthony Thacher in 1639 settled finally at Yarmouth and with three others was the founder of the town. His son, John born 1639 at Yarmouth, married 1664 Rebecca, daughter of Governor Josiah Winslow. He had eight children by [illegible]. He married secondly, Lydia, daughter of Captain John Gorham, born 1661.

The story is told that at a time while his first [illegible] was still living, [illegible] before her death, [illegible] at the Gorham home, and [illegible], lying on the ground, he picked it up in his arms, saying: "this is my second wife". It proved true; he married her and she bore him nine children, making seventeen children in all. Some records say that he had twenty and that seventeen of his children were married and had large families, "To the blessing of the Cape".

The original house built by John Thacher, 1680 remains to this day in excellent preservation, and John Gorham's house is but a short distance away, and that, too is in excellent preservation. A portion of the Gorham house is now used as a Roman Catholic Chapel.

There are two splendid country residences near these two ancient houses, one occupied by Dr. Gorham Bacon, of New York and the other by Mr. Thomas Thacher, of Boston, a descendant of this John and Lydia. These two families

by way of Scudder...

This being your line of ancestry, it is interesting to make this remark: Mrs. Alice Dike Miller in a letter, mentions that her grandfather and grandmother assisted the Rev. Dr. Barnabas Sears, some time president of Brown University, to pay his way through the University, which he ultimately reimbursed to them. It appears in this genealogy that they assisted their kinsman, without knowing it.

Richard Sears, the first immigrant of that name, came to Plymouth from the Leyden Church, in Holland, and, in 1632, he married at Plymouth, Dorothy Thacher, sister of Anthony Thacher.

It may be also stated as a matter of interest that he was a descendant of the Knyvet family, of Suffolk, England, and therefore a kinsman of the Countess of Lincoln, [illegible]. And he named one of his sons at Yarmouth, Knyvet, in honor of his ancestral family.

He left a large family and if space allows, more mention will be made of him..

John Sears was son of Ralph, of Northamptonshire, England. His father, Ralph, appeared in the early years at Plymouth, and as no record of his death appears, it is

[illegible] Civil [illegible].

His son John, married at Plymouth, 1644, Desire Howland, and had a large family of children. He died a Captain, in the Philip War, from wounds received in the Great Swamp fight, and was buried, February 6th, 1676, at Swansea, as mentioned previously. He was the ancestor of a long line of warline descendants, who made the name of Gorham famous throughout the entire Colonial period.

One of his descendants became, 1790, a Major General in the British Army.

In the French and Indian Wars, 1745 to 1762, the family were especially prominent. Colonel Shubael Gorham commanded a regiment at Cape Breton, and died during the siege of Louisburg. His son, John was commissioned Colonel of the same regiment, was sent into England on a special commission, to represent the conditions of the Army in America to the Court, and he died there.

Several other Gorhams went as officers in the campaign against the Spaniards in Cuba, and were present at the Capture of Havanna, 1762, but nearly all of the Colonial soldiers died of the fevers in Cuba, at that time.

Havanna was returned to Spain at the Peace of 17[illegible] and so their death was so much wasted valor.

The writer wishes to say at this point that a maternal descent from this Captain John Gorham and his wife,

Tillie, of the Mayflower, comes to Mrs. Camden C. Dike, and to her husband, Camden C. Dike, thus:

A daughter of John Gorham, Mercy, married George Dennison, of Stonington, and became ancestor of Mrs. Camden C. Dike. The next child of Captain John Gorham, a sister of the former, Lydia Gorham, born 1651, married John Thacher, and from them was descended Mr. Camden C. Dike, and thus were two lines of descent united, from John Howland of the Mayflower.

. . . . . .

John Howland came to Plymouth, aged twenty-seven. Was mentioned as of the family of Governor Carver, and is supposed by some to have been a kinsman. By will of his brother in London, who left money to his three brothers in New England, John, Arthur and Henry, we know them to have been a London family, and it is probable that he joined the Mayflower from London, as many others did.

At the time that the Colonists purchased from the adventurers in London, the entire indebtedness of the Colony, for eighteen hundred pounds sterling, payable in annual installments, John Howland was one of eight who signed the bonds.

William Bradford, in his History, mentions him frequently. In 1638, he appears to have been the trading

master at the Plymouth trading post, in Maine.. At that time an unfortunate circumstance took place, resulting in the death of a man.

It appears that Lord Brook had a trading company in the vicinity. The vessel of Lord Brook's company came into collision with that of the Plymouth Company, and a man was lost in the process. This occasioned a long controversy between the Colony of Massachusetts Bay and the Plymouth Colony.

John Alden was at one time arrested in Boston, and held for trial, but the Plymouth Colony was completely exonerated and [illegible] men were held to be accountable for the assault.

In 1633, the Governor's Council at Plymouth was composed of seven members. John Howland appears to have been one of that Council..

He died 1680, and his wife died, as we have mentioned previously, 1687, at Swansea. They had in all ten children, and the eldest, [illegible], married John Cornell.

Elizabeth Tillie, the wife of John Howland, was the daughter of John Tillie, and his first wife, who had been, [illegible]. For it is said that he married in Leyden, Bridget Vanderveile, but she could not have been the mother of Elizabeth, according to the date of the marriage..

The Tillie family originated at Hesset, in the County of Suffolk, England.

[illegible] Baxter of Dorset, in a communication to the New England Genealogical and Historical Register, has given a list of names, which embrace a very large number of those who came early to Plymouth and other places in New England, as having been originally of that Parish and a neighboring Parrish. Among these names appear those of Symon Bradstreet, the Gouvernor of New England, the Cooper family, Tillie, Carver, Howe, Bacon, Sampson, and others.

There is a very extensive genealogy of the Howland family, also of the Delano family, issued only as late as 1901, which is extremely voluminous, but the writer will, if space permits, be able to give but a small fraction of the record of those various families.

. . . . . .

To return to the Simmons family, John Simmons, son of Moses II, married Mercy Pabodie, November 16th, 1669. He had land granted him 1686. They had the following children:

John, born September 24th, 1670, married Experience Picknell, 1703.

William, born 1672.

Isaac, 1674.

Martha, born November, 1677. Married to Ebenezer Delano, 1699, as mentioned previously.

William Pabodie, the first immigrant of that name, was a man much employed in public affairs, and of much

responsibility in Plymouth Colony. He married [illegible] Alden, daughter of [illegible] Priscilla Mullins Alden, December 21th, 1644. He died December 10th, 1787, aged eighty-seven. Her death at Little Compton, Rhode Island, is mentioned thus, 1717:

"This morning died here, Mrs. Elizabeth Paybodie, late wife of Mr. William Paybodie, in her ninety-third year. She was a daughter of John Alden, Barnstaple, and Priscilla, his wife, who was a daughter of William Mullins."

John Alden was of Southampton and came in the Mayflower. His wife, Priscilla came also, her father and mother, namely, William and Elizabeth Mullins, from Dorking, County of Sussex, England.

It may be mentioned here that Bradford writes the name Molines, as well as Mullins, and as the term Mr. is always used, in connection with his name, it is probable that he was of the ancient family so prominent for centuries in English history, that of Molines, but which was corrupted into Mullins. If space permits, we shall get later the will, and other information with regard to all these foregoing families.

John Alden arrived in the Mayflower in 1620, then twenty-two years of age. After his marriage with Priscilla Mullins, he removed to Duxbury and built a house near Eagle Tree Pond, where the ruins of his will are still to be seen. He is said to have built a second house in

which his descendants still live. It is in excellent preservation. This farm was one of the best in Duxbury and still remains in possession of his descendants.

His children were: John, Joseph, David, Jonathan, Elizabeth, [illegible]. All this [illegible] to be noticed [illegible] concerns Mrs. Camden C. Dike, and her husband, Camden C. Dike. Her descent comes through the second son, Joseph Alden, and his descent comes through the daughter, Elizabeth, [illegible] noticed.

This makes a compound descent in the case of three of these ancestral lines, namely, that from Moses Simmons, who came in the Fortune, 1621, from John Howland and his wife Elizabeth Tilley, who came in the Mayflower, and from John Alden and his wife, Priscilla Mullin, who came in the Mayflower, 1620.

Of the children of John Alden, his son John settled in Boston, married and had twelve children. He died, 1702.

The second son, Joseph, was an early settler of Bridgewater. He married Mary, daughter of Moses Simmons.

David, the third son, lived in Duxbury, and married Mary, daughter of Constant Southworth, and had many children. It may be mentioned here that this Constant Southworth was your kinsman, a son of Alice Southworth, second wife of Governor Bradford.

[illegible], [illegible], [illegible] ancient homestead of the father. [illegible] 1672, by whom he had four sons, and died, 1697.

Elizabeth, the oldest daughter of John Alden, was [illegible], and she is your line of descent.

Sarah married Alexander Standish.

Ruth married John Bass, of Braintree, Mass. From her are descended the famous Adams family of patrious and statesmen, namely, John and John Quincy, two of the Presidents of the United States, and Samuel Adams, the Patriot Governor of Massachusetts. Henry Wadsworth Longfellow, the poet, and many other eminent men. Down to the present day the name of Alden is famous in literature and art.

Mary, the youngest daughter, married Thomas Delano,

"John Alden was the last survivor of those who signed the compact on board the Mayflower, and his long and valuable life was distinguished for eminent services rendered to the colony. He was assistant to all the governors of Plymouth Colony, except Carver, and occupied that place from the year 1650 to 1686. and in the records of the Quakers appears to have been a rigid judge, and was much spoken of in their books as a persecutor of the sect.

He died September 12th, 1687, aged eighty-eight.

That she survived him is probable, from the fact that a receipt is recorded given the heirs of Johnathan Alden, [illegible] daughter of the latter, as [illegible] the name of Priscilla Alden [illegible]. As there was no daughter of that name, the inference is strong that she was his widow.

The early settlers at Duxbury were buried in an ancient burying-ground but little used at the present day.

The burial place of Captain Miles Standish was established a few years since, and four huge modern twelve inch condemned cannon have been placed at the corners of his burial plot to guard his remains.

In the first two generations monuments are rarely found in New England, but as the son of John Alden has a monument and his grandsons, it is probable that he and his wife were buried in this ancient Duxbury burying ground, and the family of George Soule , who came in the Mayflower and was your ancestor, by the marriage of his daughter to the Swede, Peterson, which, by the way, introduces Scandinavian blood into your veins, through his descendant Hopestill Peterson who married into the Delano family of your line.

Thus in this old burial ground a great number of your ancestral names are to be found. The writer visited it some three years since and is of the opinion that this

is the real burial place of most, if not all, of the early settlers of Duxbury.

From Volume III, Genealogical Gleanings, by Waters, page 854, 855, we have the will of William Mullins of the Mayflower.

"In the name of God, amen: I comit my soule to God that gaveit, and my bodie to the earth from whence it came, alsoe I give my goodes as followeth; viz: forty pounds sterling that is in the hands of goodman Goode, I give my wife tenn pounds, my sonne Joseph tenn pounds, my daughter Priscilla tenn pounds and my eldest sonne nine pounds. Alsoe I give to my children ten all of them, viz: Willm, (only the forty pounds aforesaid excepted in the hands of goodman Goode, which hereafter, viz: all the goods in his owne hands.

To my eldest daughter, I give ten shillings, to be paid out of my sonnes stock. Furthermore that goods I have in Virginia, as followeth, first, to my wife, Alice half my goods, second to Joseph and Priscilla, the other half, to be divided between them. Alsoe I have twenty-five dozen shoes and thirteen pairs of boots, which I give into the Company's hands for forty pounds, at seven years time, if they like them at that rate. If it be thought too deare, as my overseers shall think good, and if they like them at that rate.

At the dividend I shall have nine shares; whereof I give as follows: twoe to my wife, twoe to my sonne

William, two to [illegible] Joseph, and two to my daughter, Priscilla, and one to the Companie. Allsoe, if my sonne William will come to Virginia, I give him my share of land. Furdermore, I give to my twoe overseers, Mr. John Carver, and Mr. Williamson, twenty shillings a peece, to see my will performed, desiring them that they would have an eye on my wife and children, to be a father to them. Allsoe [illegible] hath not so approved himself as I would he should have done.

This is a coppie of Mr. Mullins, his will, of all particulars he hath given.

In witness whereof, I have set my hand.

(Signed) John Carver,

Giles Heale, and

[illegible].

Probate of will in Probate Court, at Dorking, Surray follows, all in Latin, as was the custom at that time.

This will was made before 1620/21 Old Style, for he died on that date, in the midst of the great sickness. Mr. William White died the same day, and Governor Carver died in the following April. Out of 101 passengers who came in the Mayflower, fifty died within a few months of the landing, besides one half the crew of the ship. They died of a consumption of scurvy caused by exposure to the storms of snow and rain, and being obliged to wade in the cold water, both at Provincetown and other places, as well as at Plymouth. At one time there were

but she was [illegible] to care for those who were ill.

Among those of your ancestors who died at the time of this [illegible] were John Tilley and his wife, as well as his brother-in-law and his wife, William Mullins and his wife, his son, Joseph, and his servant man Robert Carter, thus leaving Priscilla alone in the world.

The bodies of those people were buried on a hill just above the famous Plymouth Rock, and that place was used as the burial ground until after the Philip War, When the ancient fort on the high hill above was dismantled, that hill became the future burying place and so continues to the present day. It is supposed that most of the bodies were removed to the new burial place, but some few escaped the removal, and these bodies remain to this day on the ancient spot, and are marked by stone..

John Howland is supposed to have been buried in the new burial ground, and his monument has been erected there by his descendants, but the exact place of burial of the bones of those who perished in the contagion is unknown.

From the Pilgrim Magazine, 1880, we have the following:

"In the month of July, anno domini, 1621, on the twenty-third, a Commission to Sarah Blunden, formerly Mullins, natural and legitimate daughter of William Mullins, late of Dorking in Surrey, deceased, in parts beyond the seas, siezed, etc., for administration of goods, etc.,

and rights of said deceased, according to tenor and effect of will, because he named no executors in due form.

Giles Head, the witness for the will was the Mayflower passenger and Christopher Jones was the Captain of the Mayflower. The will went to England on the return of the Mayflower, in April..

It would appear from this will that Mr. William Mullins was engaged in business in Dorking. That he left his business there in charge of his son on coming to America, and that he left this married daughter there.

The will mentions Virginia twice, he supposing that he was within the Colony of Virginia. The seven years mentioned as time for the Colony to pay for his merchandise was the term on which all the business of the Colony was founded--a seven years term.

It would appear from this will that Priscilla thus coming into the largest part of the estate became, in one way, an heiress, for those times.

Thacher in his History of Plymouth, with regard to John Alden,1686:

"This year died John Alden, at Duxbury, aged eighty-nine years, and believed to have been at his death, the last survivor of the compact of government, 11th of November, 1620. He was born in England, 1597. On his arrival here he resided the first seven years in Plymouth, and owned a considerable tract of land where the

iron works now stand. He afterward removed to Duxbury and took up 165 acres of land in one body, where he spent the residue of his days.

He was for many years deeply engaged in the public concerns of the Colony, being elected an Assistant, 1633, and continued in that office with but little interruption until the time of his death, often acting as Deputy Governor. After Captain Standish's death, he was Treasurer of the Colony. He possessed much native talent; was [illegible] ,--- bold and [illegible], stern, austere and unyielding, of exemplary piety and of incorruptable integrity. An iron nerved [illegible], who could [illegible] live on crumbs. He hated innovations and changes, steadily walked in the way of his youth and adhered to the principles and habit of those whom he had been taught to honor.

From him are descended all of the name in the United States.

John, his youngest son, was much employed in public business in the General Court and in the militia as a Colonel. His descendants were prominent in the Colonial period, serving in the wars as officers and at the outbreak of the Revolution they were patriotic in the extreme. Several of his descendants of that name were Colonels in the Revolution. One was killed at Cherry Valley, New York State at the massacre there. In the female lines the Adams family were his descendants and

it would be difficult to write of all those who became important in the history of our country.

The Alden genealogy is an old book, printed about 1870, but it contains an excellent history of the family.

We will return to the genealogy of the Delano family.

On page 256, the wife of Philip Delano, Jr. was not given, by inadvertance. Her name was Elizabeth, daughter of William and Martha Nash Clark, born and died in Duxbury.

This leads us back to the genealogy of the Nash and Clark family, which should have been given earlier.

Before the departure of the Colonists from Leyden, we find a mention in a letter there, that a pilot had been engaged for the voyage to America, by the name of Clark. We find also several communications which appear in Governor Bradford's letter book, from a Thomas Nash, who seems to have been a prominent member of the church in Leyden. This Thomas Nash's name never appears in America, but the name of Lieutenant, Samuel Nash does appear, as a prominent member of the community, and it is probably that he was a son of the Thomas Nash, of Leyden. He appears in Plymouth as the Sheriff of the Colony, and a Lieutenant in the military.

He lived to a great age and seems to have died at the home of his daughter.

The record in Plymouth of Thomas Clark is as

follows:

He came in the Ann, 1623. Married Susanna, daughter of a widow, Mary Ring, before 1631, when, in her mother's will he is mentioned. They had the following children: Andrew, James, Susanna, who married third of November, 1658, Mehitabel Rehoboth; Children, Sarah, and Nathaniel.

He was representative in the General Court, 1651 and 1655. He married a second wife, 1664.

His son, William Clark married Martha, daughter of Lieutenant Samuel Nash, and with this William lived, Lieutenant Samuel Nash, in his last years and mention of them is made in his last will.

The following comes from the History of Plymouth:

"At Eel River, near Plymouth, March 12th, 1675/6, the house of William Clark was assaulted by a small party of Indians, led by Tatpson. Mrs. Clark and an infant, with eight other persons from other families were killed, and William Clark was scalped.

The Indians who took part in this massacre were executed and others were sold to Bermuda as slaves. The number executed was eleven. This is from Benjamin Church History of the Philip War, and may be found in Dodge History of the Philip War.

On page 206, Plymouth Guide, is the following epitaph: "Here lies buried ye body of Mr. Thomas Clark,

aged ninety-eight years; departed this life March 24th, 1697."

"It has long been supposed that Mr. Thomas Clark was the mate of the Mayflower, but tradition upon this point is not entirely satisfactory. The christian name of the Clark who was mate of this renowned vessel is not mentioned in history..

Thomas Clark arrived in the Ann, in 1623, at which time he was twenty-three years of age, and if he were mate of the Mayflower, was twenty years old when she arrived in 1620.

In a letter signed W. B. to Cushman, that Mr. Thomas Nash had gone with the pilot, and from Mr. Cushman to Mr. Carver, we know that the pilot hired was Mr. Clark, who had been the year before on a voyage to Virginia. So Clark was more a pilot than a mate, although he probably filled both berths.

In Plymouth we find that Thomas Clark's son marries a daughter of Lieutenant Samuel Nash, who was probably a son of that Mr. Thomas Nash, of Leyden, who came as mentioned by W. B., with Clark the pilot, June tenth, 1620..

This Thomas Clark had a son, Nathaniel Clark, who seems to have been named for Nathaniel Morton, and seems to have been brought up by him, and at his death this Nathaniel Clark became his successor, as Secretary of

the Colony. During the regime of Governor Andros, as is known, the charter of the Colonies was withdrawn by Quo Warranto. Nathaniel Clark seems to have identified himself with the Andros party, in the great irritation of the citizens at Plymouth, and had lost their charter.

Clark was arrested and sent for trial to England. At the time of the revolution, when William and Mary came to the throne. But the authorities in England seem to have exhonerated him, as they did Andros.

Clark returned to Plymouth with renewed power and influence, and died one of the wealthiest citizens of the place, January 31st, 1717, in the 74th year of his age.

The question which seemed to irritate the people most in Plymouth was that he received a grant from Andros of Clark's Island, in Plymouth Harbor, so named in honor of the Mayflower, whose mate Clark, on the first Sunday, is said to have been the man who stepped first to the shore. Whether there was any connection between Nathaniel Clark's desire to have that Island and its having been named for his ancestor, it is impossible to say.

By the marriage of Elizabath Clark, daughter of William and granddaughter of this Thomas Clark, we return to the genealogy of the Delano family, where we find that Ebenezer, son of this marriage, by his wife, Martha Simmons, had a son Joshua, as we have shown, born 1700, who married Hopestill Peterson, daughter of Johnathan and

Lydia Gerrish Lancaster.

At that point we drop the Delano genealogy, and [illegible] collateral line, and will now give the children of Joshua Delano and Hopestill Thomp-son, his wife. They had:

Lydia, born 1725. Married Thomas Prince.

Rhoda, born 1731. Married Samuel Winser.

Sylvia, born 1733. Married Charles Foster.

Hopestill, born 1735. Married Abigail Everson.

Bena, born 1737. Married Benjamin Allen.

Martha, born 1739, married Asa Chandler.

Welthea, born 1741. Married Pabodie Bradford.

Joshua, born 1744

Thankful, born 1749.

This Joshua made his will 1751. Names his widow and daughter, Lydia [illegible], Rhoda Winser; sons Hopestill and Joshua .

LYDIA [illegible] DIED AT [illegible], [illegible]. OCT.22, 1809.

[illegible] was born 1726. [illegible] 1745, Thomas Pride., the [illegible] Kingston, [illegible]., August 7th, 1720 and died there January 9th, 1763.

Their children were:

1. Abigail, born November 1st, 1747; married Theophilus Stetson. They had 11 children.

2. Thankful, born April 6th, 1750, married Job [illegible], born in [illegible], 1741. They had fourteen children.

3. Thomas, Jr., Born September 9th, 1756; died unmarried, 1781.

4. James, born August 10th, 1758; married, first 1780 Eunice Foster, and had Polly, born 1784, Thomas 1786, Lydia, 1788. He removed to Providence and married there Sarah Jenks, about 1800, and had Phebe Ann, 1802; Francis, 1804 and James, 1806. This is your line of ancestry.

5. Lydia, born April 6th, 1762, married David Beal. They had eight children.

6. Sylvia, born June 20, 1765, married Stephen Nye Drew. He was born at Kingston, 1761. They had ten children. The foregoing genealogy of this page was communicated by James Prince Ford, of Wilmington, Del. He had made a mistake in using the name Mary Jenks, instead of Sarah. All these are from the Delano genealogy.

So much has been said and will be said of the famous compact, signed in the cabin of the Mayflower, on the eleventh of November, 1620, that the writer has thought fit to put it in here.:

"In the name of God, amen; We, whose names are underwritten, the loyal subjects of our dread Sovereign Lord, King James, by the grace of God of Great Britain, France and Ireland, King; Defender of the Faith, etc.

Having undertaken for the glory of God and the advancement of the christian faith, and honor of our King and country, a voyage to plant the first colony in the Northern parts of Virginia, do by these presents, solemnly and mutually, in the presence of God, and one of another, covenant and combine ourselves together into a civil body politic, for our better ordering and preservation, and furtherance of the ends aforesaid; and by virtue hereof, to enact, constitute, and frame such just and equal laws, ordinances, acts, constitutions and offices, from time to time, as shall be thought most meet and convenient for the general good of the colony unto which we promise all due submission and obedience."

In witness whereof we have hereunder subscribed our names, at Cape Cod, the eleventh of November, in the year of the reign of our Sovereign Lord, King James of England, France and Ireland, the eighteenth, and of Scotland, the fifty-fourth. Anno Dom. 1620."

[illegible] which [illegible] the [illegible], [illegible] Mild.

Of your ancestors who signed, they appear thus:

Mr. William Brewster,

John Alden.

[illegible]

John Howland.

John Tilley.

George Soule.

thus making six of these signers. The prefix of Mr. appears only on the name of Brewster and Mullins, and was a special respect of family or office. Bradford wrote his name without the Mr., and Winslow's name appears without the Mr. So it is probable that Brewster and Mullins were held, for family reasons, in special respect by the people.

At Provincetown Harbor, Cape Cod, where the Mayflower [illegible] and first [illegible], is now a city of some six or seven thousand inhabitants, and here a bronze plate [illegible] on which are inscribed the names of the forty one signers. The same has been done at Plymouth, where, near the famous rock, the names of the signers appear on a bronze plate.

From a History of Old Ord, we select the following:

"In the celebration of the 250th Anniversary of Old Yarmouth, 1639--1889. This is what is said of Mr. Anthony Thacher:

"He was the equal, if not the superior of his pastor. Both in ability and education. He had been with the Colony at Leyden, in Holland and suffered almost as many vicissitudes by land and sea, as the hero of the Odyssey. His letter to his brother, Peter, describing his casting away off Cape Ann, on the Island which has since born his name, is full of pathos, as it is of christian faith.. The full letter, describing the wreck may be seen in a volume by Increase Mather,

Whittier, the poet has told a story of the scene of the wreck in the musical lines of "The Swan Song, of Parson Avery". His cousin she was with him had perished with his eight children. The deliverance of the one was no less a fitting theme for the poet, than the loss of the other. He was one of the most valuable members of this society, faithful in every position, representing the town for eleven years in the General Court at Plymouth.

I must add the name of Richard Bears, the "Pilgrim", as he is sometimes called, whose massive monument of granite stands in the ancient cemetery yonder, and a picture of it hangs in this church.

[illegible], and took up his residence here 1643, settling at East Dennis. For twenty-three years he identified himself with the Yarmouth church. Honored by public office as often as he would accept it, marrying Dorothy Thacher, a sister of Anthony, the descendants in both lines have reason to be proud of their Pilgrim stock. It was of such President Porter spoke, saying:

"Cape Cod has been known for many generations as a nursery of men distinguished for high professional ability, for commercial enterprise, for large hearted philanthropy, and self-sacrificing piety. The neighborhood of the sea, with its suggestions of infinitude, with its restless motion, and its stormy life, with the coming and going of its ships, bringing strange faces and various products, with its stories of adventure and escape, tends to liberalize and emulate and stimulate the mind, and to ennoble the character when it takes a good direction.

ANCESTRY OF RICHARD SEARS.

He came over in 1630, with the last of the Scrooby congregation of Leyden, and landed at Plymouth, [illegible]. It was not until after the decease of his father in 1629 that he felt justified in seeking a home in the new world.

From the tax-rates in Plymouth it is seen that he was a man of large estate. He was descended from an ancient family in Kent, from a Knight Banneret, in the time of Henry VI and VII.

His father, Richard Sears married Ann Bouchier, [illegible] Knyvet, of Ashwellthorpe, County of Norfolk, second son of Sir Edward Knyvet, and thus a cousin of the countess of Lincoln, and from the same descent from the family of Howard, Duke of Norfolk, who married a princess of the Plantagenet blood.

John Bourchier Sears married Marie L., daughter of Philip Lamoral Van Egmont, of Amsterdam, 1585, and had our Richard Sears, 1590, who married at Plymouth Dorothy Thacher, sister of Anthony Thacher, , 1632, and died 1676. His wife died 1680. They had Knyvet, Paul, Silas, and Deborah.

From the son Knyvet, born 1626, who married Elizabeth Dymoke, and died 1686, descended the eminent Sears family of Boston, and from Paul, who married Deborah Willard and died 1707, was descended the Rev. L. H. Sears and the Rev. Barnabas Sears, D. D., President of Brown University. This is from a volume edited by the Rev. Edmund H. Sears, entitled "The olden times", published only for private circulation.

This shows the descent of the Sears family from the very ancient and noble blood of Howard, Dymoke families.

The history of Cape Cod says that every infant of the Thacher family is carried to baptism enwrapped in the scarlet blanket saved from the famous wreck.

The records of Salisbury, England show that the Rev. Peter Thacher, brother of Anthony Thacher was instituted Rector of St Edmonds, Salisbury, England, 1622, and Antonian, his brother was his curate, 1633.

President Chauncey prepared the Rev. Thomas Thacher for the ministry. President Stiles says of him:

"He was the best Arabic scholar in America, and that he compiled a Hebrew lexicon."

He left two sons, Peter and Ralph, who settled in the ministry.

From the Howland Genealogy:

"The Howland family of Plymouth".

John, Arthur and Henry, brothers of Humphrey, who died in London, 28th of May, 1626, and left them eight pounds, four shillings and four pence each, out of a debt due him from Mr. Ruck, of Salem, Mass.

Amice Howland, widow of Humphrey and executrix of her husband was buried at Barking, Essex, 20th of December, 1633. This goes to show the Howland family were a London family.

John Howland appears to have had four acres on Watson's Hill, granted at the time of the one acre grant given to each person who was included in the list since known as "the first comers".

It may be interesting to know the number of persons who came in the first vessels. There were 102 in the Mayflower, 1620. 35 in the Fortune, 1621, and 60 in the Ann and Little James, 1623. These passengers were inclused in the list of first comers. The Colonists felt so desirous of having their companions in Holland come to them that it is said they expended something like five thousand pounds sterling in paying their debts and in fetching from Leyden the remainder of their co-religionists there.

There came 35 families in the Mayflower, 1629 and 60 in the Handmaiden, 1630. The exact number of persons is not known.

In 1624 the Colony numbered 180 persons Up to this time no cattle of any description were here.

Mr. Edward Winslow returned to England in the Ann, in 1625, and returned to Plymouth in the Charity, next year with three heifers and a bull, and this is the beginning of cattle in New England.

In 1627 the cattle were divided among certain families and this is called the dividend of cattle..

We now return to John Howland.

John Howland was an orthodox Puritan to the time of his death. When the Rev. John Cotton was ordained aged Mr. Howland imposed hands. Arthur and Henry Howland however, were Quakers.

At what date John Howland married Elizabeth Tillie we know not, but in 1627, at the division of cattle, he had daughter Desire and son John.

Elizabeth Tillie Howland was a woman of superior natural ability, and lived last with her daughter Lydia Brown, in Swansea, where she died 21st, 12th month, 1687, aged eighty. She was last but three of the Mayflower passengers, namely Resolved White, died 1690, John Cook, 1694, and Mary Allerton Cushman,, 1699.

Her will, dated at Swansea, 17th of December, 1686:-

"being seventy-nine years of age, but of good and perfect memory, thanks be to God, etc."

Mentions sons John, Jabez, and Assue, and sons-in-law, James Brown. Daughters, Lydia Brown, Elizabeth Glasscock, Anna Somerby, and granddaughters, Elizabeth Burgley, Dorothy Brown, Desire Gorham, and grandsons, Nathaniel Howland and James and Jabez Brown.

Desire, her eldest daughter, died the 15th of 10th Month, 1683, before her mother. She married 1643 John Gorham, son of Ralph Gorham.

It is recorded that Desire was the first born, as follows:

Desire Howland married Captain John Gorham, 1643; they removed to Barnstable, 1652.

2. John, died 1652 at Barnstable.

3. Jabez, died at Bristol, Rhode Island.

3. Jesse, died at Plymouth, Minnie Linsey.

3. John, died young or unremarkable.

they removed to Jamestown, 1688.

as follows:

It is recorded that Phebe was the first born,

John (Jr.)m, son of Ralph Dunham.

Mehitabel Howland and Thomas and Esther Stevens.

Patience Hopkins, planning be no dog, etc."

"Early seventy-nine years of age, but of good and

Her will, dated at Dunham, 1689 of Dunham,

1706, and Mary Allerton Cushman, 1680.

passengers, namely Peregrine White, died 1680, John Cook,

aged eighty. She was just out shore of the Mayflower

natural ability, and lived last with her daughter Sarah

he had daughter Desire and son John.

We know not, but in 1627, at the division of cattle,

4. Hope, born 30th of 8th month, 1629; died 8th of 1st month, 1694. She married, 1646, John [illegible], of Plymouth, [illegible], and by this marriage became ancestor of a noted family in American History.

5. Elizabeth, married 1649, married Ephraim Hicks, and secondly, John Dickinson, of Plymouth.

6. Lydia, married James, son of John and Dorothy Brown. They settled at Swansea, and the mother died there.

7. Ruth, married 1664, Thomas, son of Robert [illegible].

8. Hannah, married 1681, Johnathan Bosworth. At this point it may be said that confusion exists as to the ancestry of Hanna Bosworth, who married Nathaniel Jenks III.

Mrs. Beede, of Central Falls, informed the writer that members of the family there had become members of the Colonial Dames in the Jenks family, as descended from Hanna Bosworth, daughter of Benjamin, and probably a neice of Hanna Howland Bosworth, and a descendant of Hath. Morton. The Howland genealogy is also confused at this point, mentioning in a foot note that this Johnathan may mean Nathaniel, but the real fact is that Johnathan was the correct name.

From Savage Genealogical Dictionary we have that John Gorham, son of Ralph Gorham, of Duxbury, was born 28th of January, 1621, at Benefield, six miles from Oundle, in Northamptonshire. Said to have been a descendant of the De Gorrom family, who came into England with William the Conqueror, and is mentioned in Battle Abbey.

He married Desire Howland, 1643, at Plymouth. Their children were:- Desire, born 2nd of April, 1644. The family then removed to Marshfield and there had Temperance, born 1646, Elizabeth, 1648, Jabez, Joseph, 1654, at Barnstable. Henceforth, the home of the Gorhams is at Barnstable. Jabez, born 1656, was with his father in the Philip War, when he was wounded unto death. Jabez attended his father to Swansea, and it was supposed was present at the time of his burial there 1675/6.

Mercy, born 20th of January, 1659, married George Bowman, Jr., son of [illegible] George, of Stonington, of Mrs. Camden C. Dike's line.

Lydia, born 1661, married John Thacher, of Camden C. Dike's line.

Hannah, born 1663. Shubael, born 1667. The date of the birth of the son John is not mentioned, but he became a man of prominence and served as a leading officer in the French and Indian wars..

The daughter Desire, married 1661, John Howe. Babez was wounded in the Philip War.

"Barnstable Records. In the eastern part of the town, on the north side of the road, stands an old house, formerly owner by the Gorhams.

Lieutenant Colonel, John Gorham, son of Captain John, by wife, Mrs. [illegible] died as to his son, Colonel Shubael Gorham, who held as Colonel of the Seventh Massachusetts Regiment, 1745. He willed it to his son, Colonel John Gorham, who succeeded him as Colonel of the Seventh Massa-Chusetts. He died 1752, and left it to another son, Lieutenant Joseph Gorham, who became, 1790, a Major General in the British Army.

On page 229, Vol. 52, is a fac-simile of a signature of Desire Gorham and those of her sons James and John, to settle the estate of her husband, John Gorham, 1675/6.

"Know all men by these presents, that we, Desire Gorham, widow of John Gorham of Barnstable, in the juridiction of Plymouth, and James Gorham and John Gorham, etc. The signature is spelled Desier, and the Gorham name is spelled with a small "g". The sons, however, spelled the name with a large "G".

Captain John Gorham's sons, John and Jabez, were with him in his Company of Indians and English, at the Great Swamp Fight.

In 1696 appears a letter from Lieutenant Governor

Stoughton, to Major Church:

"You are to advise with Captain John Gorham, who accompanies your expedition, and will take the command in the case of your death."

As Lieutenant Colonel he was second in command in the fourth and fifth expeditions in the French and Indian War. His monument is near the Unitarian Church, in Barnstable.

A third Captain John Gorham, had a company of Indians and Rangers, at Annapolis, Nova Scotia, 1744. He was sent later to recruit for the Cape Breton campaign, at Boston. Was made Lieutenant Colonel to his father Colonel Shubael, and at his death, 1746, Colonel, by order of Sir William Pepperell.

His brother Joseph remained in England during the Revolutionary War, and several letters are extant written about the commencement of the War. His commission as Major General in the British Army was dated 1790.

Miss Louisa Low, of Stamford, Conn., owns a beautiful portrait of the wife of Colonel John Gorham, who died 1652, painted by Copley. She died at Gloucester, Mass., leaving a line of Gorhams there.

There is much more in this New England Genealogical Register concerning the Gorhams, especially those who went to Havanna, 1762, and died soon after its capture.

The letters of Major General Gorham are in the Harvard College Library.

The township of German, Maine was set apart at the instance of Colonel Shubael German, as a grant to the descendants of those soldiers who served in the Philip War.

This family seems to have been a favorite family with the genealogists of the New England Genealogical and Historical Society.

FROM [illegible],Jan.1,1898,p 42.

HESSETT CHURCH REGISTER, SUFFOLK,ENG.

. . . . .

"Communicated by the Rector. For families of early Plymouth and New England people, namely Carver, Tillie, Bradstreet, Cooper, Cooke, Fuller, Howe, Williams, etc.

In the Register appears the name of Symon Bradstreet, clerk, [illegible] Bradstreet, the nestor of New England. Of John Newgate, 1633, Richard Williams, the Goodrich family of Weathersfield, Conn.

Elizabeth, daughter of Robert and Jane Carver, baptized 9th May, 1594.

Abraham Church, William Cooke married Margaret, daughter of Tillie. Richard Howe. The name of Carver occurs frequently, here and in the neighboring Parrish of Reyton, where John Carver had a numerous family.

John Howe in will of 1485, mentions wife, Catherine, daughter of Reynold Tilley. Mentions land held, of Richard Tilley, and speaks of Roger Bradstreet, Edmund

Bacon, Sir Walter Rowe. Roger Bradstreet is a witness to a will of Richard Williams.

1450 Rice Bradstreet IV, to Peter Tilley, and Walter Tilley, of Bury St Edmonds will.

The name Anthony Rowse, George Scott, Thomas Cooke, John Bacon, in a will mentions sister Margaret Fuller. The name of Tiller is spelled Tylliett, Tilley Tillet. Johannes Tillet in Ville de Magna Barton.

Will of Elizabeth Bacon, widow of Edward Bacon, Margaret Fuller, wife of Robert Fuller. Rev. Cannon Cooke, in a History of Bennett, speaks of Reynold Tilley, late of Bennet, died before 1466. Rice Bradstreet, will 1459. Peter Tilley will, 1545.

From this list of names, it would appear that this parish was instrumental in furnishing our ancestors of the Tilley line and a great number of others who were prominent in Plymouth and other parts of New England, at the earliest period.

The Tillie genealogy mentions that these Tillie's were descended from the Tillie who came into England with William the Norman, and whose name appears at Battle Abbey, and that they came from that place in Normandy.

A branch of the family removed to Holland, from Normandy, and one of that line, a red haired priest, became the great General Tillie of the Thirty Years War, in Germany, whose monument is to be seen in Munich. He was a general of the Bavarian Army,

It is possible that you may desire to see a list of your ancestors by the Mayflower, which appears to be as follows:-

1. John Howland.
2. Elder, William Brewster.
3. Mary Brewster, his wife.
4. Lucretia Brewster, wife of Johnathan, said to have come with her father-in-law and her son, William. Her name does not appear in Bradford's list, nor does it appear in any list, but the statement is made that she came with William Brewster.
5. George Soule.
6. William Mullins.
7. His wife, Alice.
8. Priscilla, his daughter.
9. John Tillie.
10. His wife, Bridget Vandervelde.
11. Elizabeth, his daughter.
12. John Alden.
13. Thomas Clark, who is said by tradition to have been the mate of the Mayflower.

Of the above list, Lucretia Brewster, Thomas Clark and Bridged Vandervelde, are those who have any doubt thrown by historians on them, as either being your ancestors, or having been on the Mayflower. The doubt will probably never be settled and the discussion may well

...s on this list...

Of your kinsmen on the Mayflower:-

1. Love Brewster.
2. Wrestling Brewster.
3. Isaac Allerton.
4. Bartholomew Allerton.
5. Remember Allerton.
6. Mary Allerton.
7. Joseph Mullins.
8. Edward Tillie.
9. His wife.
10. Henry Sampson.
11. Humility Cooper.

As Isaac Allerton is said to have been a cousin of Anthony Thacher, your ancestor, hence he and his children were your kinsmen. We have here in all twenty-four possible ancestors and kinsmen, out of the 102, and some say that Governor Carver and his family were also kinsmen,, and from the Nesset record given, the Fullers and others may have been kinsmen also.

Of those who came in the Fortune, 1621, of your ancestors were:-

1. Johnathan Brewster.
2. Philip De La Noie, or Delano.
3. Moses Simmons, or Symondson.
4. Wife.

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]:-

[illegible]

[illegible], [illegible] and [illegible], [illegible], [illegible] and [illegible] family, [illegible], [illegible] in [illegible] family.

or eight.

Keith Brewster and Mary Brewster.

making six ancestors and three kinsmen on the Ann.

The Delano genealogy is headed this way:-

Philippe De la Noie

Founded in 1621

American family of

Delano

Son of Jean de Lannoy

and Marie le Mahieu.

Lannoy is a village of ancient Flanders, now in the Department of the North, France, not many miles from Lille Tourcoing and Roubaix.

The title of nobility proceeding from that place, namely, de la Noie, is very ancient and if you desire to see the tremendous labors of the genealogists of the Delano family in pursuing the ancestry through this family of de la Noie for Philippe, it may be done by visiting any large library of reference where this very large volume will probably be found.

In it the descent from the Emperor Charlemagne and a Kinship with [illegible]

On page 550 Guelph Prince of the Scyrri, to Philippe de la noy, A. D. 476.

As to his proof of a connection between our Willis of Boston and the Lemmy family, I have not examined, but the antiquity of this genealogy is exceeded by a typewritten genealogy of eleven pages in the Jenks family, which carries the family of Jenks 150 years B. C., so that in these two genealogies you have all the antiquity you want. One is a French genealogy and the other is a Welsh genealogy. The writer knows nothing as to their value or [illegible], but it is interesting in the way of genealogy.

A brief sketch of your descent from these Mayflower ancestors may simplify this genealogy, thus:

Thomas Prince II, married Ruth Turner, daughter of Mary Brewster, who was daughter of Johnathan, who was son of Elder William Brewster, of the Mayflower.

Job Prince III married Abigail Kimball, daughter of Christopher and wife Ursula Scott, of Ipswich.

Thomas Prince IV, by wife Lydia Delano, gives you descent from John Alden and Priscilla Mullins, of the Mayflower, through their daughter, Elizabeth, who married William Pabodie. Their daughter Mercy, married John Simmons, and their daughter Martha, married Ebenezer Delano, 1699.

Your descent from John Howland and his wife,

Elizabeth Tilley, is through their daughter, Desire, who married John Gorham, whose daughter, Lydia married John [illegible], who [illegible], married Joshua Peterson, and their daughter Hopestill, married Joshua Delano, of your line.

In the case of John Simmons, who married Mercy Pabodie, the name of his mother, the wife of Moses Simmons II seems to be unknown to the records, and that, I think, is a solitary instance in this Plymouth ancestry.

The descent from George Soule, and his wife Mary Bucket, is through their daughter, Mary, who married Joseph Peterson, father of Johnathan.

The wife of Thomas Clark was Rebecca Ring, daughter of a widow Ring, who came to Plymouth with several children.

The Delano genealogy says that Philip Delano I married Hester Dewsbury, 1664, and that she was of a Gloucestershire family, and was entitled to a coat of arms. It also says that the Pabodie family were entitled to coat armor.

The genealogies of the Howland family, Delano family, Alden family, may be seen at libraries of reference particularly valuable is the history of Duxbury. There are several Plymouth histories;- Davis Landmarks of Plymouth contains genealogies of every family., Savages Genealogical Dictionary is of the greatest value.

From a Volume, "The Valentines of [illegible]."

The ancestor of the New England Valentines, [illegible] knowledged that when the writer of this work first commenced his researches into the history of the first ancestor of the New England Valentines, he had but few and slender materials for his work. All the history of the English Valentines as given in the last chapter, was to him then unknown. He knew what his father, Gill Valentine, Esq.,(in his eighty-sixth year) had told him, viz, that his great grandfather's name was John, and that he lived in Boston, "only this and nothing more." Next he consulted "Savage's Genealogical Dictionary, and learned only that John Valentine was now frozen in Boston May 13th, 1675. Soon after he found an old document verified before John Valentine, "Notary and Tabellion Publick for Massachusetts Bay, dated 1706. Even the "old Lynde Bible" so often referred to in these pages, and so famous as an heir-loom in the family, simply told this only of him--"My father, John Valentine died February 17[illegible], " and even this was probably written by his son Thomas years after the death of his father, and from recollection only, as there is a mistake in the year. When the writer found the genealogy of the Valentine family written by General E. W. Pierce, he thought he could say, "Eureka," but, this document only said of him, "Of John Valentine I learn nothing more than that he was the husband of Mary Lynde, of Boston, son of Thomas Valentine of Frankfort in Ireland, and father of the family hereinafter to be described." And these data, meager as they were, have been found to be erroneous in two important particulars, viz, his parentage, and the date of his death.

But what may not be found out by patient and careful research? Poring over the volumns of the New England Genealogical Register, the writer stumbled upon the following, taken from the private "Diary of [illegible] Prudden Stansted." "1724--February 1--On [illegible] Mr. Valentine, ye

1772--Mr. Valentine, the Lawyer, hangs himself in a [illegible]
[illegible] the after noon they find him." The jury brought in "Non [illegible]
[illegible] was a mystery. Could the individual whose tragical demise is thus recorded be an ancestor? Probably not, for among the Valentine families even the oldest persons could not recall any tradition that their ancestor had been a lawyer--much less had hanged himself! Moreover, some of the proud, fastidious ones thought it was useless, (or worse) to pursue the investigation any further, for the idea that the ancestor could be both lawyer,(a rara avis in these days,) and a suicide, (also then more rare than now), and no record or tradition of these facts be found among all his descendants, was simply absurd--impossible! But the writer more intent on reaching the truth, than serving, or sparing a family pride, kept up the search for a full year, and, is well satisfied with the result of his pains. In the "Massachusetts Historical Rooms" he finally found the object of his search: a complete file of the old "Boston News Letter", (almost the only newspaper then published in New England), for the year 1734. In that paper he found the following,"Boston, Feb. 1, 1734--On Tuesday the 4th Instant, the Corps of John Valentine, Esq., His Majesty's Advocate General for the Provinces of the Massachusetts Bay, New Hampshire, & and Colony of Rhode Island, was here decently interred. He was a Gentleman for his knowledge and Integrity most eminent in his Profession, Clear in his Conception, and Distinguishable happy in his Expression. It pleased GOD some short time before his death, to deprive him of these excellent Endowments, by afflicting him with a deep Melancholy, which brought him to the loss of his Reason, and was the Cause of his much Lamented Death."

If there is ought in the above obituary which should cause

Mr. Valentine was a lawyer of distinguished learning and integrity. An argument of his in the case of "Watson vs Thomas", in which he was opposed by Auchmutty, Reed and Littles, is preserved, in which he has affected that familiarity with legal principal, as well as ability as an advocate. He is also said to have been an agreeable and interesting speaker. As to the parentage of Mr. Valentine, it is certain that [illegible] Mass., as Gen. Pierce asserts, for that gentleman died childless. The following document in the handwriting of Thomas Valentine, of Plymouth, who was a son of John Valentine, would seem to throw some light upon the matter. Though not dated, it is endorsed--"Copy of letter to Mr. Trenholm, Merchant, in Plymouth, August 1774. 'Sir:- I was informed by Captain Coleman, of Boston, that you have been inquiring after some person of my name, who had something left to him by a relative in old England, but could not find him. My father was born in Lincolnshire in England, and had several relatives living there some years ago--particularly an uncle, the Rev. Mr. Thomas Valentine, of Epsom, who by letters gave us, his relations in New England, some reason to expect he would take notice of us in his last will. I should take it very kind of you if you will give yourself the trouble to write me a line giving me further information of the affair. In so doing you will greatly oblige, Your most Obedient and Humble Servant

foregoing may have been one of those upon which these "great

" London, November 10th, 1753.

My dear Nephew:- I cannot easily express the great pleasure I had in arrival of your letter with the account of your person and family, though that had a gret alloy in the mention of the loss of your [illegible] in life, which is a [illegible] ous family, where the tender care of a mother is as much wanted, as the wisdom of a father. Tis easy to say we must submit, but a hard lesson to learn in the school of Providence. I pray God give you all the patience to bear, and wisdom to improve such a trying dispensation. Though I have not the satisfaction of seeing my relations in New England, nor ever expect to be so happy on earth, yet I hope to meet them in Heaven, with any alloy or end. In the meantime I do not forget, but give them a constant place in my addresses to the mercy seat, when I ask wisdom and grace for my own soul to lead us through the present valley of tears, to that state when all tears shall be wiped away. I wish I had power to do more according to the affection of my heart, for my dear relations at a distance. You [illegible] account of our family in Old England [illegible] are reduced in numbers. I have only one sister remaining, who has [illegible] with children, and one daughter who lived [illegible] er, and who is dutiful and servicable to her mother in the evening of life.

'There are many nephews and neices that are prudent and sober in their behavior, tho not in the prosperity of this world. My cozen, Thomas Valentine, is a worthy clergyman in Ireland, who possesses [illegible] and estate of the family that [illegible] of years in the same name.

'I have sent him the account of the family, not being willing this estate(tho not large) should change its name. This is the account I send you, but your family are more numerous, and prosperous

" London, November 10th, 1X .

my dear Sophy:- I cannot easily express the [illegible]
and in arrival of your letter with the account of your [illegible]
ly, though that had a great alloy in the [illegible] was true
sympathies in life, which is a mournful event especially in a
ous family, where the tender care of a mother is as much wanted
Its easy to say we must submit, but a per
lesson to learn in the school of Providence. I pray God give you
ll the patience to bear, and wisdom to improve when a t
ction of seeing my relations
n New England, nor ever expect to be so happy on earth, yet I hope
in Heaven, with any alloy or end. In th
ot yonder, but give them a convenient place in my addresses to the
throne, when I ask wisdom and grace for my own soul to lead us
through the present valley of tears, to that state when all tears
will be wiped away. I wish I had power to do more according to
the affection of my heart, for my dear relations at a distance. You
desire an account of our family in Old Englandwhich by time and death
are reduced in numbers. I have only one sister remaining, who has
been married with children, and one daughter who lives with her moth-
er, and who is dutiful and serviceable to her mother in the evening
of life.

'There are many nephews and nieces that are prudent and sober
in their behavior, who not in the prosperity of this world. My
brother Thomas Aylmer, is a worthy clergyman in Ireland, who pos-
sesses the best and estate of the family that has been some hundreds
of years in the same name.

'I have sent him the account of the family, not being willing
to intimate(tho not large) should change its name. This i. the
account I send you, but your family are [illegible] and prosperous

Your faithful friend and affectionate uncle,

Thomas Valentine.

London, November 10th, 1753.

I will soon write to your brother and Sister Gooch."

In the foregoing letters it will be seen that the relationship of uncle and nephew are acknowledged on both sides. Now, if this is correct, then the parentage of John Valentine is settled, for the matriculation papers of the Rev. Thomas Valentine, of Epsom, show that he entered Trinity College, Dublin, in 1682, at the age of sixteen, where he is recorded as the son of Francis Valentine, Merchant of Lancashire", Though a link in the chain may be missing, yet from the foregoing it would appear that John Valentine was an older son this Francis Valentine, Merchant of Lancashire, that he must have emigrated to Boston when a young man just of age, that he remained a bachelor until forth-eight or fifty years of age, when he married in 1702, Mary Lynde, daughter of Samuel Lynde, Esq., of Boston, by whom he had seven children, and that he must have been nearly, if not quite, seventy years of age at the time of his death, February 1st. 1734. It is a matter of regret that one so prominent has not left an exact record, one whose course was so honorable should be found so indefinite and uncertain, but the above is believed to be as correct and clear as it can be made at this late day. He is in error here, as he suspects below. A foot-note says;"From a document recently received from England I find that a John Valentine was baptized at Eccles, Lancashire, April 25th, 1643. There is some reason to suppose that this John Valentine was made freeman 1675, and that the man who married Mary Lynde in 1702, must have been a son of this freeman, John, in which case Mary Lynde married a young man, instead of one fifty years old, and at his death he was perhaps, forty-five

dear Darling,

other items mention New England currency, showing that he had a mo-
living, and that she lived in old England. So he could not have
the John of 1675, freeman, who was seventy at death, leaving a
mother living, rather he was son of John, of 1675, who dying, per-
haps his widow returned to England, and was there when John died,
1724, and Francis, father of Thomas Valentine, may have been brother
of John, 1675, and father of that Thomas who was Vicar of Frankfort.
At any rate the mention of thirty pounds sterling to his mother, in-
dicates that he was not seventy, but rather, perhaps, forty-five
or fifty years of age.

It is singular that Mr. Valentine, the author, did not notice
this in the will, perhaps he did not know of the important difference
indicated between sterling, as indicating old England, which the writ-
er of the "King's Chapel Records" was aware of, at any rate it seems
certain that the first John was born 1643.

"In Roffes British Monumental Inscription."

"Rev. Thomas Valentine, M. A. fifty-six years a dissenting minister
at Ipsen, descended from an ancient family, born 1678, in Lancashire,
died 1756, aged Eighty."

He is the writer of the letter given heretofore, the last broth-
of John, the Advocate General, as this very date proves conclu-
sively.

The second was the Rev. Thomas Valentine, Vicar of Frankfort,
County of Sligo, Ireland, who died there November 1753, leaving
"Radcliffe Hall", of which he was at that time the owner, to Samuel
Valentine, the eldest son of John Valentine, late of Boston, in New
England, "my second cousin."

The will of the Frankfort Vicar mentioned, is as follows:-
"Copy of the Rev. Mr. Valentines, of Ireland, Will and Testament."
"In the name of GOD, Amen. I Thomas Valentine, Clerk, Vicar of

[illegible] to say, two hundred pounds apiece. Thirdly; I leave and bequeath
Broome, of Dilsbury, children of the late Mr. Wm. Dawson, of Manches-
ter, my kinsman, the sum of seven hundred pounds sterling, to be e-
qually divided between them, that is to say, three hundred and fifty
each. Fourthly; I give and bequeathe the sum of six hundred pounds
sterling, to Mr. Allen Vigor, North Vogor, and their sister Aldwell,
to be equally divided amongst them,that is to say, two hundred pounds
apiece. Fifthly: I give and bequeath three hundred pounds to Mr.
Thomas Crompton, and his sister Mary Partington, both of the Parish
of Bootle, to be equally divided between them, that is to say,one
hundred and fifty pounds each,. Sixthly: I give and bequeath the sum
of two hundred pounds to Michael Holt of Bootle aforesaid, and his
sister Anne, to be thus divided between them, that is to say, one
hundred and fifty to Michael, and fifty to Anne. Seventhly: I give
and bequeath the sum of sixty pounds to be equally divided between

in equal proportion thro aforesaid families of
the holts, and as many others as are connected with me in
relation with them, and are necessitous. All which aforesaid
said, both of whom I hereby nominate and appoint executors of this
part of my property, aforesaid, and for their trouble for executing
the same I give and bequeath the sum of two hundred pounds to each,
nd all the rest and residue of my personal property that shall be
n England at my decease, after my debts and legacies are paid, I
ive and bequeath in equal proportions to ... Samuel Valentine, Esq.
arson of "Lincoln's Inn", Esq., Allen Vigor, and Mr. Broome. Thro
for the disposition of so much of my property as shall be found in
England at my decease, and which shall be found in the hands of Mr.
. Broome, of Dilsbury, aforesaid, in cash, bonds or mortgages, etc.
hat belong and appertain to me and are my property.

Now for the disposition of my property in Ireland. I do hereby
rder and direct, that it be applied to the uses and purposes fol-
owing; That is to say, that I do give and bequeath the sum of six
undred pounds sterling for the support and maintenance of the dis-
ressed widows of the Clergy of the Diocese of Dilsbury and Ashewey.
I give and bequeath the sum of four hundred pounds ster-
ing toward the Institution of a Protestant Charity School, and for
he putting out of a few of the Protestant Apprentices to Trades,
uch school I order to be erected within the Union of Brandfort, as
do hereby nominate and appoint the Lord Bishop of Dilsby, and the
ear of Brandfort both for the time being to be trustees of the above
Thirdly: I give and bequeath to my beloved friend, the Rev.
xander Clendenning, all and singular, my library of books together

demnity during the term of the said lease. Fourthly; to my kind friend and Benefactress , Mrs. Anne Browne of Portlona, I give and bequeath the sum of one hundred pounds sterling. Fifthly; I give and bequeath to the poor of the Union of Frankfort, the sum of sixty pounds sterling, to be disposed of by the Rev. Mr. Clendenning as he shall think most proper. Sixthly; I give and bequeath such a sum as to Mr. Clendenning shall seem sufficient to buy a descent cushion and cloth for the pulpit, and also a proper coverlet for the Communion Table. Seventhly; I give and bequeath the sum of twenty pounds sterling to Thomas Waldron, Twenty to Robert Dillon, twenty to Sarah Lynn, ten to Francis Moore, fifty to widow Anne Atkinson, and hereby nominate and appoint the Rev. Alexander Clendenning, aforesaid, my sole Executor to this part of my will, which concerns my Irish property, most of which at this time is put out in the manner following, that is to say, eleven hundred pounds in the hands of Annesly Gore, Esq., four hundred pounds in the public loan, three hundred pounds to Vaughan Jones, Esq., two hundred pounds to Robert Brown, Esq., one hundred pounds to Mathew Ormsby, Esq., and fifty pounds to John Osborne, all at five per cent. I also leave to the Rev. Alexander Clendenning, aforesaid, Executor, the rest and residue of my Irish fortune, after having first paid the above sums appointed for charitable uses, legacies, funeral expenses and debts, revoking all former wills by me made.

In witness whereof I have hereuntoset my hand and seal this ninth day of September, in the year of Our Lord, one thousand seven hundred and sixty-three.

Thomas Valentine. (T.V.)

Signed and sealed, published and declared by the above named Thomas Valentine to be his last Will and Testament in presence of

us who have hereunto subscribed our names as witnesses in the presence of the Testator, and of each other.

[illegible]

Elias Powell.

Richard Arm[illegible]not.

The Rev. Thomas Valentine, the Testator of the above Will died November 6, 1765, or about two months after its date.

Eccles is very near, if not within the City of [illegible] it is to-day. The persons mentioned in the English part of the will may have been cousins of the American Valentines. At any rate Samuel Valentine sold Dencliffe Hall, 1778, to a Partington, a name mentioned in will.

[illegible]

present New England family, and possibly the Long [illegible] Eccles, in the County of Lancas[illegible].

The Valentines of Suffolk [illegible] land, and possibly the Lancashire [illegible] continent. The earliest record of [illegible] have positive evidence is a copy of a will of Richard Valentine, [illegible] document the autor[illegible]

my Servant Woman, for her paynes takynge, five shillings. To [illegible] one of the gentlewomwn, twelve pence apiece to prey for my Sowle.

This being Witness,

Thomas Dodeson, pste.

Robery Langley.

Robart Cowden.

Thomas Longworth.

Thomas Locke.

Nycholas Langton.

Robart Halle.

Henrye Dodeson.

Ottys Hollande, of Clyfton.

With others.

This Richard, the testator of the foregoing will, had a son Thomas, who married Dorothy, daughter of Ralph Hulbon, of the West, Neeles, and died September 12th, 1609. His children were, John, who married Elizabeth, daughter of John Risley, and died March 30th, 1625; Richard, who died single, Margaret, who married--Prestwick, and Dorothy, who married Edward Hunt. The children of John, who married Margerie daughter of Rohn Bleighe, of Biggin Grange, Derbyshire, and died March 24th, 1660, Elizabeth, who married John Aldersley, of Chester County,; Thomas, who died single, and possibly others.

But from this point the chain is broken, and much of the [illegible] once or conjecture, owing to loss of important documents. It is known, however, that the second John had a son Thomas, and probably [illegible].

At this place comes the uncertainty, but as John Valentine, of Boston, 1675, was a brother of the Rector of Frankfort's grandfather, for he says that Samuel and Thomas Valentine of Boston are his

[illegible] Epsom, was brother of your Advocate General.

[illegible]

...athead, 1786, to Samuel Valentine, his second cousin, son of t...
...ate John of Boston. Samuel's heir sold the estate about 1792, to
...r. Partington, whose wife or mother, was probably the Mary Part-
...gton mentioned in the will of the Rev. Thomas, of Frankfort. John
...alentine is mentioned in the Boston Record as made a freeman, May 18,
...75. The next record in Boston is his marriage, April 13th, 1703,
...o Mary Lynde, according to the"Lynde Bible", which is now in the pos-
...session of Joseph Valentine Mitch, and from which many of the follow-
...ng records are taken.

Mary Lynde was the only surviving child of a family of five children of Samuel and Mary(Ballard) Lynde, and was born in Boston, ...vember 16th, 1680. The Lynde family being noted both in the Old ...nd in the New England , a few words may not come amiss.

Enoch Lynde of London, married Elizabeth Digby, daughter of ...erard and Ruthin Digby, one of the most revered, chivalric names ...n English History. Their son, Simon, named for his ancestor, Simon ...igby, grandfather of the Earl of Bristol, was born in London, 1624, ...oved to Boston in 1650. In February 1652 he married Hannah, daugh-... John and Anne Newdigate, or New gate, by whom he had twelve ...hildren, many of whom became distinguished in Massachusetts, and ...om whom are descended some of the best families in New England, a-... others the Bowdoins, Irvings, Temples, Olivers, Walters, Winslows, ...to. Lynde Street, Boston, named in their honor. Samuel Lynde their ...ond son was born in Boston, December 1st, 1653, and married Mary ...aughter of Jarvis Ballard, October 20th, 1674. Of this Jarvis Bal-...rd, no further notice appers in history. He was a merchant, and ...is Mary may have been his only child. As to whether he was any kin ...the Ballards of Lynn, who twice appear in this genealogy, it is ...possible to say at this writing, as all genealogists seem to leave ...m and his child at this marriage. Pingchegol mentions him. It ...d be well here to say that this lady as the author of the Valentine ...alogy, was not aware of the thirty pounds sterling left by John ...alentine to his mother mentioned in the volumn called the "Records

will be made, from a history of him and his romantic connection with New England at this period.

The Gooch family returned to Boston to where Gooch Street is now. This Mrs. Gooch was remarkable for her beautiful hair, whichh is said to have turned gray when she heard of the loss of her beautiful home at Hopkinton by fire, owing to the carelessness of a negro slave. She would never return there. Her husband then returned to Boston and lived wher Gooch Street now is, named in honor of the family. In another place the history of that family will be [illegible] connection with the "Annals of Kingschapel, Boston". The authority for the ancestry of Elizabeth Gooch, daughter of James Gooch and Elizabeth, his wife, comes from the pedigree of Valentine as given in a pamphlet edited by Stephen Bullard, of Thompson, Conn., consisting in all of eleven pages, in which he states that James Gooch, Senior, married Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Charles Hobby, of Boston. The fact that these families were all members of the congregation of "Kingschapel" will be shown in the "Annals", viz; Wm. Hobby and family, also Sir Charles Hobby and family, Edward Gooch and family, and it may be James Gooch, Senior.

Page 116 of the "Valentine Genealogy" has this to say for Thomas Valentine in addition. Samuel Lynde, his maternal grandfather, owned a large tract of land at Freetown, Mass., and the valentine brothers were there much of their time; but Thomas Valentine, in conveyances and legal documents, made after he was of ageis entitled, "Merchant of Boston", and probably called Boston his home, early in life, at least; later on he seems to have resided at Hopkinton continually. The beautiful Elizabeth Gooch, his wife, was of a family that had been connected with Kingschapel congregation from the first [illegible] of it. So it is probable that the two were reared in same congregation, and as will appear under the account of Hopkin-

ity of "Wapunco Hill", in that town, near where John Eliot had an Indian Village Church and burial-ground. The Fransland Farm adjoined it, and all that region round about is classic ground, not only because of Eliots labors, but for reasons fully set forth in Rev. Elias Mason's "Memoirs of Sir Charles Henry Fransland, Barcnet"; and more especially because Mrs. Harriet Beecher Stowe has made it the scene of one of her most popular works, "Old Town Folks." There is a novel of "Agnes Surriage", also a poem by Oliver Wendell Holmes, "Agnes", twenty-one pages.

"The tract of land taken up by Thomas Valentine then embraced several hundred acres, Some of it was, indeed, rough and rolling, like much of Hopkinton land, yet a goodly share of it was level and highly productive. This old "Valentine Farm", except for a very short interval, has ever since remained in possession of those who bear the name; but a large portion of its arid acres has been sold off, so that the glory has departed. "The Old Homestead" lately modernized by its present proprietor, William Price Valentine, great grandson of Thomas, may be seen as it was on another page, and is further described by Mrs. Weston, whose pen and pencil are capable of doing it ample justice, as will be seen on perusal of the genealogy.

The spot overlooks the village of Ashland, a new town set off from Hopkinton, and lies within the limits of that place. On this romantic and beautiful spot Thomas and Elizabeth Adcock Valentine lived in peace and happiness for seventeen years, rearing their children and prospering in worldly affairs. Then [illegible], the wife and mother died, leaving a brood [illegible] ost only ten years of age, and the eldest less than seventeen--just at a time when she was most needed for their care. Her husband, true to her memory, lived on in lonely widowerhood to the end of his days, or more than thirty years.

Thomas Valentine seems not to have belonged to the "Standing [illegible] in church, the "Congregationalist", as did most of his neighbors. He was an attendant of the "Episcopal Church". How strict a [illegible] does not appear, but his children certainly attended the

...ational Church", and some of ... members of that body.

It should be mentioned here that he, and for several genera-... and time ... to Tennessee were the licensed "Innkeepers" ... to other callings. An "Innkeeper" in those days was ... ... keeping the place, etc. ... to Col. ... representative for Hamilton in ... and General Court", or Legislature ... ... show that he was on the Colonial list ... ... 1778. He died, April 17th, 1788, in his seventieth ... .

The old "Lynde Bible" so often alluded to as stated ... ... The fly-leaf gives the list of owners ... ... his book, 1670.

... her book, 1731.

... 1786.

Joseph Valentine, ...

... Valentine Pitch, ...

... at his death, 1827, left it to his nephew and ... Joseph, and he, ... left it to his grand-son Joseph Valentine Pitch, of ... .

James, [illegible]

No. 3, Elizabeth, is for the mother, Elizabeth, No. 4, John, for grandfather, John Valentine; No. 5, Joseph, is for his uncle, Col. Joseph [illegible], of Braintree, and Milton, the Lawyer; No. 6, Hester, is for the first wife of her uncle, James Gooch; No. 7, Hester, the same; No. 8, Samuel, is for great grandfather, Samuel Lyn[illegible]; No. 9, Mary, is for grandmother, Mary Lynde Valentine; No. 10, Hannah, is for Grandmother, Hannah Gooch, wife of James Gooch, Senior; No. 11, William, isafor Wm. Hobby, great grandfather, or grandfather.

The children before mentioned married, [illegible]

Thomas, No. 1, born August 21, 1756, married [illegible] Ingraham, 1783. He was a sailor. His family lived in Boston; a son Thomas was born, 1783; a daughter, Rebecca was buried in Kingschapel Burying Ground, 1789; this shows that the family connection with Kingschapel continued when her great grandfather, John Valentine had been buried, 1735. No. 2, James Valentine, born 1737, died in Guadalupe, 1758; he too was probably a sailor.

No. 3, Elizabeth Valentine--she of your line--was born [illegible] and married Zaccheus Ballard. She and her sister Mary have [illegible] names transposed in the genealogy of Valentine, but it is [illegible] given in the Lynde chart, which includes all her ni[illegible], with their marriages, as follows;

1, Elizabeth, married Hezekiah Stone, removed to New Hampshire.

2, William, married [illegible].

3, Sarah, married M. Robinson, removed to New York State.

4, Mary, married N. Carroll, Thompson, Ct.

5, Mehitable, married Orin Bates, removed to [illegible].

6, Martha, married James Bates, removed to Vermont.

7, Nancy, married first [illegible] Page, Thompson, Ct.
secondly, Abel Jacobs, Thompson, Ct.

8, Lynde, married first, Polly Bate[illegible]
secondly, Annie [illegible]

9, Alice, [illegible], Thompson, Ct.
[illegible]s, Thompson, Ct.

from Isaac Allerton, Wm. Brewster, and Thomas Cushman. The name Lynde here makes certain that Elizabeth, his mother, named him in honor of her grandmothers family of "Lynde". Stephen Ballard mentions that he has received information from E. S. Ballard, of Davenport, Iowa, Treasurer of the Iowa Sons of the Revolution, who sends him the outlines , of what will be given in the Lynde Genealogy. It also states that this same gentleman has furnished the means by which a monument had been placed in Thompson, Ct., over the remains of Zaccheus Ballard, and Elizabeth Valentine, his wife, under the supervision of Stephen Ballard, viz; On a huge boulder is engraved,

"A Soldier of the Revolution,

Zaccheus Ballard,

Fourth Massachusetts Regiment,

1730 --- 1800.

Elizabeth Valentine,

his wife,

1730 --- 1807."

This monument has been recently placed, and removes all doubt as to the historical authority, indeed, the family names given show the certainty of it.

In this pamphlet is stated the following; "Sir Charles Hobby, a soldier of fortune, born in Boston, and died there,1725, Knighted at [illegible] Castle, England, by Queen Ann, 'For good service [illegible] England'". He commanded a Boston regiment at [illegible] of Port Royal Royal, and Anapolis, 1710; was made Governor; was a commander of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company; went to England 1700 with letters of commendation from the Boston clergy, soliciting the appointment as Governor of the Province of Massachusetts Bay, in place of Joseph Dudley. By his manner of living [illegible] himself. He was very loud in his way. History [illegible] that when Dudley was inaugurated as governor he rode in the carriage of Sir Charles Hobby, with six horses with gorgeous equipment, etc. It is stated elsewhere in "Savage" that he was knighted for his behavior

We return to Zaccheus Ballard. The record of Zaccheu
in the War of the Revolution as taken from the Massachussetts Records,
is, "Zaccheus Ballard, private from Oxford, Mass., in Captain Jeremiah
Singsbury's Company, Col. Jonathan Holman's Regiment; par roll at
Providence, R. I. , January 1777, one month, thirteen days service.
Also in Captain Wm. Moore's Company, of Col. Wm. Sheppard's Regiment,
Fourth Massachussetts Continental Army, pay account for service from
March 5th, 1777, to December 31st, 1779. Again in same Company, pay
rolls January 1st, 1780, to April 20th, 1780, when he was discharged."
It thus appears that his service was almost continuous from 1777,to
April 20th, 1780, in the Regiments of theyContinental Army, and not
in the militia, as most services were performed then. He is mention-
ed at Mountain Huts, West Point, January 23rd, 1780. His brother,
Joseph Ballard, who married Mary Valentine, also served in the Revo-
lutionary War, as did a great number of the Ballard family.

In another place I have spoken of one Saville Simpson of Boston,
whose daughter married Col. John Jones, and, their descendents are
much intermarried with the Valentines Family. It appears that when
M. Ballard, of Lynn, Mass., came to Framingham, 1706, he bought land
of Saville Simpson, across the Sudbury River, from the land afterwards
bought by the Valentines, hence the lands of the Valentines and Bal-
lards, of Framingham, were contiguous, resulting in the double marriage
mentioned in this history between the members of these families.

At this point it is necessary to complete the family of Fran-
s Valentine, which has been suspended while we have shown the descent
his daughter, Elizabeth, who married Zaccheus Ballard, thus com-
pleting your line of descent to the marriage of Alice Ballard to Jo-
seph Rose.

The following is given hereby to complete the description of
Mrs Valentine's Children. No. 4, John Valentine, born July 1st,
, Exeter, Little Compton, R. I. , No. 5, Joseph, born October

wife became interested in her father's vast tracts of land at Hopkinton, viz: Saville Simpsen, of Boston, a great merchant, two of Thomas Valentines children married two of his descendants, and the Jones property came largely into the Valentine family, as did the Price property, as will be seen in the Valentine Genealogy of Lawson Price Valentine's family, who now owns the "Old Homestead. He was born 1792, and married Mary Ann Price, 1817. She was a descendant of Roger Price, who was representative of the Bishop of London in New England, and called officially, "Commissary Price". He founded the Episcopal Church at Hopkinton, and was a man of note at the time Thomas Valentine settled there; thus it came about that the greatest estates then in early history, by marriages came to the Valentine family eventually.

The 9th child of Thomas Valentine, was Mary, born 1747. She married Joseph Ballard, brother of Zaccheus Ballard, and an Stephen Ballard says , "removed to Bradford County, Pa. The 10th child of Thomas Valentine was Hannah, who died young. The 11th child, William, born 1750, married Elizabeth Jones daughter of Anthony Jones, of the Jones family genealogy.

The "Lynde Chart" says: Samuel Valentine's wife, Alice [illegible] Jones, had a son, Col. Joseph Valentine, who married Penny Lawson and a son, Lawson, who married Mary Ann Price, and she married secondly, Isaac Peabody Osgood. With her whose descendants own the homestead now, we have a history of Hopkinton, and the church there. She was a daughter of Major William Price, of the British Army retired, and grand-daughter of "Commissary Roger Price", who was Rector of Kingschapel from 1720 to 1746. Andrew Price, a brother of Major William, was educated at Oxford, a clergyman of the established church in England, and had a living at Brithwell, and one at Bruxley, and died at the age of ninety-eight, 1806, last male of the family, but through

have been used in Valentine Geneologi .

also founder of the Episcopal Church at Hopkinton, Mass., at which families of Thomas Valentine, and his sister, Elizabeth Gooch, worshipped.

Some history of the brothers and sisters of Elizabeth Valentine .

"Samuel Valentine, son of Thomas, and brother of Elizabeth, who married Zaccheus Ballard, of your line, was born at Hopkinton on his father's farm, 1745, and at the death of his father, the farm became his. In 1771 he married Elizabeth, second daughter of Col. John, and Mary Hallen Jones, as previously mentioned, the principal owners of land here.

Samuel Valentine and wife had twelve children, born from 1772 to 1797. Many of the grandchildren were yet living when the geneology was published. One of his grand-daughters, Mary Clark Valentine, married Wm. Denison Jamison. A grand-son, John Tyng Valentine, married Mrs. Mary Claflin Valentine, born Claflin, and a Grand-daughter, Ann Maria, born 1819, married Charles Winslow Claflin. It is stated here that the first house built by Thomas Valentine was burned as at another time his sister Gooch lost her house, by the same kind of calamity. All that was saved in the Valentine house destruction, was the "Lynde Bible", and a Mahogany Escretoir, evidently of English make, now in possession of the family. Thomas Valentine rebuilt probably on the same site. Samuel Valentine in his time, raised the roof, altered it, and put it in good order. A. P. Valentine changed it but little, when he took it except to put in stoves in place of the ancient fire-places.

In 1856 W. P. Valentine changed the interior, and in 1870 made further changes. A picture of the house as it stood originally, before repairs had so changed it, is given in the volume, page 120, made by Miss Bowditch, with the statement; "In a few years this old farm

where so many generations of the Valentine family have been born, lived and died, will have passed away. Cut up, divided, and subdivided, and this retired and pleasantvspot, perhaps be covered with [illegible]."

Wm. Price Valentine, who lived at the old farm, in the old house, unites the families of Price and Valentine, and as one another [illegible]

[illegible] Lawson [illegible]

[illegible] Mrs. Weston [illegible]

[illegible]

Arms of Simon [illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible] Mrs. Thomas [illegible]

[illegible]

from Cambridge Street to Green Street.

Valentine, was taken 1724, when she was sixteen years old. She was dressed in a red satin dress, with beautiful lace around her neck and which
was. Her hair was dark auburn, flowed down her neck below her waist, as worn in these modern times. The notes to this picture, viz:, the father, mother and sister, are in possession of the Gooch family at Cohasset, Mass. There are one hundred and twenty pages of Boston Valentines in the genealogy.

From "The Annals of Kingschapel, Boston."

Two Volumns.

Concerning Valentines, etc.,

Edward Randolph was the prime instrument in obtaining the establishment of Episcopacy in Boston, and on May 1686, the "Rose Feld-

the Church of England there. We can fancy the indignation which now stopped the internal war of the Congregationalists of the Old School and the New School, who buried their grievances and united against the common enemy, Episcopacy, 1686. At this time the old charter by "Quo Warrento", 1684, was a dead charter, hence the Congregationalists held no legal power to do anything.

As stated in an earlier place in the genealogy concerning the Myles family, viz; that Rev. John Myles of Swansea, Mass., who married the ancestress of Stanton Williams, son of Jessie Mike Williams, viz: Ann Humfrey, widow of Wm. Palmes, and daughter of the Lady Cus n, and Col. John Humfrey. This Rev. Myles, a Baptist clergyman, who represented at the Conference of Churches in London, [illegible] Baptist Church, on the disestablishment by Charles Second, [illegible] to New England, and established the Baptist Church at Swansea, Mass., before mentioned. His son by a first marriage, graduated at Harvard College, 1684, went to England, to perfect his theological education, returned 1688, an ordained clergyman of the Established Church of England, and in 1689, when "Kingschapel" was first consecrated, became

urch, and it was in this church John Valentine worshipped,
ord there is to be seen in the Annals of the church, and that
of his descendants, also the family of Gooch were members here,
the family of Hobby, ancestor of Elizabeth, wife of James Gooch,
it appears that three of your ancestral families worshipped in
chapel at Boston, then an Episcopalian congregation, and as the
Rev. Samuel Myles was followed by the Rev. Roger Price, who founded
the Episcopal Church at Hopkinton, Mass., your family became inter-
ested in several ways with this church.

Again, a grand-daughter of Rev. Roger Price , married subse-
quent to the Revolution, Lawson Valentine, as mentioned.

Jarvis Ballard, a merchant of Boston, not known to any connec-
tion with your Ballard ancestry of Lynn, worshipped in Kingschapel
also, and his daughter, Mary, married Samuel Lynde, and it was their
ter, Mary Lynde, who became the wife of John Val
. Of Jarvis Ballard we find no more. So you
ther-ut in many different ways with this churc
round was buried John Valentine, the
others of the family. Roger Price
inton, and was probably the means of
Gooch, who married Elizabeth, Thomas Valentine's siste
nce in that place, where he founded an Episcopal Church. While
one of the Kingschapel, and he it was who
entine, of Hopkinton, not only, but to
ton, thus bringing the two families to opposite
.

In the church record for 1716 John Valentin
one gives five pounds to enlarging the church. 1716 to 1718 he is
Lynn. 1716 copy of a letter John Valentine wrote
on, page 245-4, mention is made
Bo, where

ed in Eccles, April 25th, 1643, and made freeman in Boston, [illegible] 28th, 1675. The son was a lawyer, and "Advocate General". He mar- [illegible] April 16th, 1702, Mary, only surviving child of Samuel Lynde, and grand-daughter of Simon Lynde, of Boston, whose descendants are among the best families in New England.

Vol. 1, Page 247-248. In the will of John Valentine the mention of thirty pounds sterling to his mother, the editor says, shows conclusively that she was in England, and that she was a widow, hence was the widow of that John Valentine, who was freeman in Boston, 1675. [illegible] of the Rev. Thomas, of Epsom, shows him [illegible] ve been a son of this John of Boston, who may have died soon, and his widow and other children may have returned to England, while John, the Advocate General, either remained here, or returned here, after completing his legal studies in London, which was frequently done, as Benjamin Lynde did, and as Joseph Gooch did also.

So it seems certain that you may claim a full generation more than any genealogist has given you, [illegible] but he could not prove it, although [illegible].

In the Digby Lynde Genealogy, [illegible] book- ing of himself, in the "old family Bible", says in part here mention- ed, because it gives fully the titles and history of the position [illegible] to [illegible], [illegible], Consulsion under the Great Seal for H[illegible], [illegible], [illegible]. [illegible], [illegible], [illegible], [illegible], on the 16th of December, 1697."

This shows that he was the first [illegible], a new court, in New England, embracing [illegible], and Rhode Island. As he became, 177[illegible], a Judge of the Superior Court, and 1730, Chief Justice, it is probable that John Valentine, [illegible] his neice, was designated by him as his successor. But this

England," John Valentine thus being second to hold the posi-
. In other places is called "Crown Advocate General?" but this
seems official as coming from the man who established the Court, and
who went higher up.

Mention is made that in 1711-12 a great army and fleet made
Boston its headquarters under Gen. Hill, who was brother to Mrs. Mash-
am, the favorite Court Lady of Queen Anne. That the duties of an
Admiralty Advocate must have been great, especially as Boston cleared
about four hundred sail annually, of deep sea shipping, aside from
coastwise vessels.

Genealogy of the Hobby Family.

Wm. Hobby, Boston Merchant, by wife, Ann , had Charles
known as Sir Charles; John, born 1661; William, born 1668; Ann, born
1670; Mercy, 1672; Judith, 1674; and Elizabeth, 1676.

Sir Charles married , and
and Elizabeth, who Stephen Ballard, of Thompson, says, married
Gooch, 1715. We find guardianship granted to Mary, 1717. She may
have been another daughter. Savage says, Sir Charles died 1715,
leaving no children, but we have the name Mary, who had guardianship
1717. Sir Charles died 1715, and if Stephen Ballard of Thompson,
is right, his daughter Elizabeth married James Gooch, 1715and was
mother of Elizabeth Gooch, who married Thomas Valentine. We leave
the question open, for it was just possible that she was daughter of
Wm Hobby, but am not certain, so will stand by Sir Charles Hobby,
and give the history of his life in
is extensive too.

His brother John Hobby, by a second wife, Ann, had the follow-
ing children: Charles, 1699; Wensley, 1705; Harvard College Class
1726; William born 1707, Harvard Class, 1
,1710,
Rector. His son William, at age of eighteen, died at Harvard College.
His other children died unmarried. Edward, another son of John, born
1709, all of these had guardianship, 1719, perhaps at death of mother,
for their father, John, died, 1711, and of several other children,
who may later, were dead before, or married.

Sir Charles Hobby, Administration, 1714.

Guardianship, Charles and Edward, 1712.

Will of John Hobby, 1711.

Administration of John Hobby 1741.

Guardianship of Mary Hobby, 1717.

Guardianship of Wensley, 1714.

Guardianship of William, 1719.

The guardianship of 1719 was for the children of John Hobby, who died 1711, probably his widow died 1719, who was Mary Hobby, guardianship, 1717, unless a daughter of Sir Charles?

There is a will of Wm. Hobby, 1660. 1665, Maria and Mary have a guardianship.

Rev. Mr. Myles Cotton Mather, and other prominent ministers of Boston, wrote to London, strongly urging the candidature of Sir Charles Hobby, for Governor of Massachusetts, as against Joseph Dudley. Hutchinson's History of New England, Vol. 2, Page 166, says:

"Mr Dudley had no rest the first seven years, besides the opposition he met with in his administration, endeavors were using soon after his arrival to supplant him, and his enemies prevailed upon Sir Charles Hobby, (who had been knighted, as some say for fortitude and resolution at the time of the earthquake in Jamaica, 1692, others, for the further consideration of eight hundred pounds sterling), to go to England and solicit for the appointment of Governor. He was recommended to Sir H. Ashurst, the Colonial Agent, in London, who at first gave him encouragement of success. Hobby was a gay man, free liver, and of very different behavior from what one would have [illegible] should have recommended him to the Clergy of New England" [illegible], such is the force of party prejudice, most of the ministers strongly urged that he should be appointed their governor, instead [illegible] Dudley; for which Ashurst, himself, after his acquaintance with [illegible] reproves and censures them. What the other side thought, we [illegible] Cotton Mather says; "It was a five thousand pounds arrival [illegible] Portuguese gold that made Ashurst change his opinion regarding Sir

for flings at him. Perfectly so! Palfrey, Volume 3, 5868.

Page 110-112, New England Genealogical Register, Volume 24.

Cotton Mather to Stephen Sewall, Esq., May 2nd, 1706.

"I know your first and great enquiry will be what of Sir Charles H. (Sir Charles Hobby), answer, I cannot learn. That about the

of. I learn that people then, at that time, had their various discourses and conjectures about it, some very confident that it was as good as done, others very suspicious it would never be done. I learn that ye time when it was upon the point of won, the game again went on the other side, and Colonel D (Col. Joseph Dudley, afterwards Governor), had his interest wunderfully revived by ye arrival of five thousand pounds Portuguese gold, with advantages representatively. I understand for all that the establishment of ourselves is very uncertain. Finally, I learn that for certain Sir Charles Hobby is coming home, and in a month or two, to be expected, and so let this content ye at present. (Signed) Cotton Mather.

Page 112. October 11th, 1706.

"I cannot but suggest that it was weakly done of you gentleman, to sign a petition against Sir Charles Hobby,(for it was nothing else), when our Nathaniel Higginson, and Company were petitioning for him. It may happen to only give an honest and sincere servant of the country an opportunity to know who are (under their hands) his declared enemies." "

Sketch of Sir Charles Hobby.

New England Genealogical Register, Pages 110-113, Vol. 24.

"Sir Charles Hobby, whose friends were pressing him for the Governorship of the Colony of Massachusetts, vs Colonel Dudley--to

pounds sterling. He was a member of the Artillery Company, and its Captain, 1708-9, and Colonel of the Boston Regiment, but most known here as one of such life as should have recommended him to the Clergy of New England. (This is Ashurst's opinion, an Author adds, after he has five thousand pounds sterling). Yet he was sent over to London with letters from most of the most pious ministers, to our Agent, Sir William Ashurst, a true Puritan, strongly urging, "There is very great probability of its coming too late, or if not, yett what will it signify?. Everyone knows that ye officers of ye Militia are ye enemies of the Captain General." (Signed) Cotton Mather.

From this it would appear that Sir Charles Hobby was the Captain General of the Province. At any rate, when Queen Anne sent over an army in 1710-12, under general Hill, a brother of Mrs. Masham, her new favorite at Court, Boston became brilliant in the uniforms of five thousand of the Queens' most ancient regiments, from the army of the Duke of Marlborough, and Colonel Sir Charles Hobby had command of a Boston Regiment, and was made, 1711 Deputy Governor, of Annapolis Royal. The ministerial party certainly favored him, and the party which supported Joseph Dudley, was the party which was opposed to the Ancient Theocracy in every way. So I do not believe the stories of Intrigues against Sir Charles Hobby, that he might be appointed Governor, instead of Dudley.

George adds, "Luckily for our country Sir Charles died [illegible] went back, perhaps, and died, 1711, but not in Boston. His estate was insolvent. Of his inventory, April 22nd, 1715, deeds for half the Province of New Hampshire, is one of the items, but put down as pending. Seven slaves are at the head, [illegible] three hundred pounds. It appears that in 1711 Sir Charles was appointed Governor of Annapolis, Nova Scotia, and that he accompanied the Expedition in the expedition to Canada. His successor as Governor was made of Thomas Hill, Esq., in 1701.

6th, 1715-16, it appears that the Administrator of Sir ...'s Estate, offered the purchase of the territory mentioned, to ...e Assembly. Efforts were made for several years for his creditors, the most prominent of them was Elisha Cooke, a prominent politician, of the time, to obtain letters of administration in his New Hampshire estate, but without success, says the editor, as he believes.

The claim of Sir Charles Hobby, which he bought of the Allen Family, had been received from Mr. John Mason the early patentee of a large part of what is now that state, and 1706, Sir Charles Hobby had bought the Mason claim. It seems then, that very much the same treatment was given the Mason Claim as was given Sir Fernando Gorges claim, viz; the Gorges heirs in Charles Second's time, were forced to sell that claim to the vast territory one claimed and partially settled by the Gorges family, for a very small amount, and now we find the Province of Massachusetts cutting off the Mason Claim.

Possible Antecedants of the Hobby Family.

"Genealogical Gleanings of Water's "

and in

New England Genealogical Register, Vol. 43, Pages 303-4, and 5.

Will of Sampson Cotton.

"Parish of St. Michael's Pater Noster, in the Royal, London, Citizen and Draper, 1634. Proved 1635., mentions his loving father, Mr. Thomas Juxson, (means father-in-law), Edmund Sheafe, and grandfather of Sampson Sheafe, but no kin of John Cotton, of Boston. Edmund Sheaf of Boston, of the Bishop of Juxson family, of London. He mentions mother-in-law, Mrs. Elizabeth Juxson, brother, Elias Juxson, ... sister, Mary Hobby, Widow, five pounds; to John Hobbey, five pounds. The will of Thomas Juxson, 1620, same church as son-in-law ...son, gives him one hundred pounds, Son-in-law, Richard Hobbey, one ... pounds, and to and for the use of Robert, John and Richard, ..., Rachael, and Mary, the children of Richard Hobbey, and Mary, ... wife, the daughter of me, Thomas Juxson, three score pounds, and

Hobbey, and William Pitt, their kins and children. In a codic[illegible] revokes the one hundred pounds to Richard Hobbey. What relation, if any, to William Hobby, of New England are these Hobbeys? He was an adventurer in the Virginia Company of London.

Of Edmund Sheaffe, son-in-law of Sampson Cotton, of London, he came to Boston, had three children; a cousin Jacob, who became the richest merchant in Boston, and after his death, 1659, aged forty-two, his widow married your kinsman, Rev. Thomas Thatcher, the first Pastor of the "Old South Church", which enabled him to keep the first coach ever seen in Boston, as is mentioned in "Palfrey."Jacob being so important a man in Boston may have been the means of bringing Wm. Hobby over as a merchant here.

Water's Genealogical Gleanings, Page 1385.

Will of Wm. Ballowe, London, 1640, mentions Aunt Hobbye, Cousin John Hobbye, Cousins Ann and Rachel Hobbye, all for five pounds each; to cousin Richard Hobbye, ten pounds. Mentions Mrs. Edmund Sheafe for twenty pounds; several of the Cottons, beginning with his mother-in-law, Elizabeth Cotton. This brings us to 1640.

1657, Will of Elizabeth Juxon, of St. Michael's Pater Noster in the Royal London, widow of the late Mr. Thomas Juxon, mentions Aunt Copley, Sister Greenleaf. She leaves six hundred pounds to each child, among them mentions, Mary,Hobby, Widow, and Elizabeth Cotton, widow of Sampson Cotton. To John, Richard, Anne and Rachel Hobby, ten pounds apiece. The name is here spelt Hobby, not as in earlier wills, Hobbye. She and son-in-law Cotton were partners in sugar refining and dealing. Residuary estate to five children.

In an action brought, 1620, by Elizabeth, widow of Thomas Juxon vs her children, Albon and Elias, sons, and Mary Hobby, Elizabeth Cotton, and Elizabeth Pitts, daughters of the deceased, and all others [illegible].

Will of John Ireland, Salter of London, born in Northampton, father of Elizabeth, who married Thomas Juxon, mentions Mary Hobbye, wife of Richard Hobbye, dated London, 1614.

Sampson Sheafe, son of Edmund, a merchant of Boston, 1672, married Mehitable, daughter of Jacob Sheafe. He was later Colle[illegible] of Customs, New Hampshire; had children. It may be possible that the name, Mehitable, which appears in list of children of Zaccheus Mallard came that way, although that is a far cry, yet Mehitable is only found here. no children in the other lines have it.

[illegible]

Boston Wm. Hobby, we find John, Mary, Ann, Elizabeth. William might have been to honor William Pitt, who appears in the wills as a brother-in-law of Richard Hobby. At any rate there is some evidence that this family of Hobby, of London, 1640, and Boston, descended from Thomas Juxon, a kinsman of the Bishop Juxon of London, the supporter of King Charles First in his dying hours, as shown in many Juxon wills.

Genealogy of Gooch Family, spelt Gooche, Gouge, Gouch, etc., from "The Old families of Salsbury and Amesbury", Page 573-574.

John Gooch, or Gouge, Senior, of York and Wells, married [illegible]. He was of York, 1640 and 1644, of Wells, 1653, and later Selectman, 1665. His will is under date of July 18th, 1667. His Ruth bequeathed to Son James, house in Glymbridge, England. It shows probably from what place in England the Gooch family came, viz., Glymbridge, but such a place is not now on the [illegible].

John Gooch, Senior, makes "Mr. Wm. Symonds, [illegible], Mr. Hammond, my Supervisors. These two supervisors are historical characters. William Symonds of Ipswich, Mass., who married Mrs. Camden C. Pike's kinswoman, widow Martha Epps, and Mr. Hammond, John Gooch's brother-in-law, was a man of position, and Savage says, lived to the age of one hundred and five years, which is confirmed in an account by Charles Whipple of him, in Volume 5, New England Genealogical Register, page 266, died, 1701, born 1597.

Volume [illegible], Page 212, New England Genealogical [illegible]

dead. My uncle Johnathan left two daughters; my father left one son and two daughters. I am now fifty-six; have four sons, three daughters.

To Mr. Charles Hammond, (Signed) Hammond.

City of Annapolis,

Probably Ruth, wife of John Gooch, was a sister of this Wm. Hammond, called by John in his will, "brother". The children mentioned in John Gooch's will, John Jr. married Lydia, died at Wells, 1672. Both John, Sr. and Junior signed a petition to Oliver Cromwell 1656.

James Gooch, 2, Son of John 1, of Wells, married

He and wife were killed by Indians during Phillips War, September 20th, 1676, as mentioned in a report of Captain William Hathorn in Hodge's Phillips War. It appears that Captain Hathorn had been sent by Maj. Gener l Dennison with four companies to Maine. He had marched beyond Wells, when the Indians unexpectedly struck in his rear at Wells and slew on the 24th of September, James Gooch and wife. Although the names are not given in that history, we have them here. He had three sisters married to men of the name of Weare, Tidwell, and Austin all three had children mentioned in the will of 1687 of John Gooch Senior. James Gooch, 2, left a son, James 3, perhaps other children. James Gooch 3, (or Gouge), married at Boston where he was a merchant, his first wife, Hannah , who died, March 18th, 1688, Boston, which shows that he was living there. He married secondly Elizabeth Pack, daughter of John Pack, August 15th, 1696. He married a third wife, Sarah Tuttle. His will is dated October 31, 1730, but not probated until 1738. In it he mentions wife Sarah, and the following children, viz., of your line by the wife Hannah , James, eldest son of the fourth generation, born October 13th, baptised October 22nd, 1693. This James Gooch, No. 4, of your line,

arried Elizabeth Hobby, [illegible]

f Sir Charles Hobby, September 20th, 1715.

corded in Boston, from 1716 to 1731, viz., Elizabeth, born [illegible],
1716-17. This Elizabeth married Thomas Valentine, 1738. James, a
son was born 1719, He married Hester , 1740, and had in
Boston, John 1731, Martha, 1734; Joseph 1735; William, 1737, and in
Upkinton, had one child, at least there, before he removed to Boston.

In the Memorial History of Boston , on Page 104, Volume 2, it follows the misinformation of Savagem which states that Sir Charles Hobby had no children. In the Boston Records there is a record of the birth of Mary, daughter of Charles and Elizabeth Hobby, 1708. This Mary, at death of her mother, Elizabeth, 1716, had guardianship 1717, as is shown in Boston Records. Here we have positive evid now that these historians were careless and wrong. Of Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Charles, who married James Gooch, 1715, the year her father died, I can find no record of her birth in Boston, hence she was probably born elsewhere, when he resided in some other place. This explanation must be made here as historians seem to have made a mistake concerning Sir Charles Hobby, anxious to make a fling at him politically, take away his reputation, and as well, take away his children.

The list of John Hobbies children is given, and he had no daughter Elizabeth, and all his children were listed in Boston Records.

The Boston Records give of some family births as follows:

James, son of James and Hannah, October 13, 1663.

Elizabeth, daughter of James and Elizabeth 1698.

John, son of James and Elizabeth 1699.

This John became an eminent merchant. His signature is given on Page 445, among Boston's most eminent merchants middle of the eighteenth century, among such men as Thomas Hancock, John and Jacob Wendell.

Joseph 4, son of James 3, and Elizabeth , born 1700. This Colonel Joseph Gooch, who married Elizabeth Valentine , and they had Elizabeth, born 1737; Joseph, Jr., 1738; Mary, 1734; Sarah, 1736; John 1737;, and perhaps other children after he removed to Braintree and Milton. He died 1770 at Milton, his sons served in Revolution

from Braintree.

Boston Records of [illegible], 1736. This was James Gooch 3, son of that James Gooch 2, killed by Indians, 1676. In 1771 there is guardianship of Elizabeth, James, [illegible]; the will of Colonel Joseph Gooch was dated, 1770; perhaps the above children were his. There is administration, 1808, James.

" " 1829, James.

" " 1837, Samuel.

" " 1825, Thomas.

" " 1826, William.

These appear the nmaes of a part of those who had guardianship 1771. There is administration for Thomas L. 1860, when the family had removed, for that seems the last. The family has representatives at Cohasset, and other places near Boston, at the present time, a Yale Professor.

The English ancestry will be examined later.

On Page 251, Volumn 42, New England Genealogical [illegible] the entry ofRev. Thomas Foxcroft, A. M. , Pastor of the First Church of Boston, from 1717 to 1769, a marriage record, Thomas Valentine and Elizabeth Gooch, both of Boston, July 17th, 1735. This indicates that hor family at this date were of the First Church Congregation. Her brother James seems to have attended Kingschapel at times. This James married Hester . Elizabeth born of James Gooch 3, and his second wife, 1698, married John Hubbard, and they both and a son were living when James Gooch 3, died, and are in his will of 1732-3, as was Colonel Joseph, born 1700. He was of Harvard College, 1720, a lawyer. James Gooch 3, and wife Elizabeth, in 1698 sell a part of a mill at Wells, inherited from his father, who was killed by Indians, 1676. James and Sarah, 1711, sell property there.

It seems as though a little space should be given to the account of the massacre of James Gooch 2, son of John 1, and of his wife 1676, September 24th. In Bodge Phillip's War, a letter is printed of Captain William Hathorne, of the family of whom Nathaniel Hawthorne comes. Captain Hathorne was in the"Great Swamp Fight", December 19th, 1675, was sent by Major General Paul Denison to defeat "Mugg,

322. Captain Hathorne remained entil this Indian leader, called Sachem Mugg", or Whittier calls him "Mog Magone", had made peace.

It seems curious to see again on page 332 and 335 of Hoge, the name of Richard Foxwell, who appeared in the account of the Will of the first Anthony Dike. Foxwell is now a man of wealth, and is a fault finding complainant against the way the war was conducted.

Daniel Dyke, Febry . 24th, 1676-7. It seems that when John Gooch

and they may have been well known to one another, "as trading to the

After the death of James Gooch and wife at Wells, we may esteem that James 3, their son, in some way became a citizen of Boston, and as he became a man of wealth and indluence, he probably had large tracts of land in Wells and York, as inheritancy. From 1690 to the time of his death in Boston Records, there is a continuous mention of him as an official of some kind in Boston government, as also of his sons after him, all three of them, viz., James, John, and Joseph. Of Colonel Joseph, who married Elizabeth Valentine, we find the most extensive record. In Braintree History, by W. S. Pattee, Page 369, 1730, the following:- "Colonel Joseph Gooch came to Braintree 1739,

chosen Moderator of the town meeting. At this time this curious individual commenced his military and political intrigues. He was born in Boston, was of Harvard College, and finished his law studies in the Temple, London. On his return to Boston he opened law busi-

there, but he was not staisfied, as he was a man of great wealth and equal ambition. Not succeeding in the "Old Church", or Congregational Church, he became, on the advent of Governor Shirley, 1741,

ned in place of Colonel John Quincy, displaced, but when the town after two years refused to re-elect him Deputy, he refused to build a stockade, and went away to Milton, where he built a great house, and lived in great style until 1770, or thirty years after he left here. A foot note says, "He was the most passionate man the writer ever knew," and that he joined the "Old South Church", to avail of the sisterhood, turned churchman, and by intrigue with Governor Shirley got the appointment of Colonel."

The fact that Joseph Gooch was educated at Harvard, and at the Temple Inn in London, and that although not successful as a lawyer, he still very rich, seems to show that he must have been rich by inheritance. His brother, John, became a great merchant, so it seems that the estate left by James Gooch to his children must have been large, as shown.

Colonel Joseph Gooch, who married Elizabeth Valentine, 1736, was uncle to Elizabeth Gooch who married Thomas Valentine, 1755. It is Elizabeth Gooch and Thomas Valentine are mentioned in the will of the Rector , Thomas Valentine, of Ireland. It seems then, that the family of Gooch was a wealthy and influential family in Boston in all its branches at this time.

New England Genealogical Register, Volume 30, [illegible] found the following:-a York County Record:- "The will of John Gooch, now living in Wells, dated May, 1667, Wife Ruth, sole executrix, and devises to her-to son John-to son James- a parcel of land, I bought of Wm. Hammond, namely, an orchard, garden and house, being a place called Plymbridge, in Ould England. To my grandchildren, Elizabeth Connell Mary Weare, and Elizabeth Austin, and grand-child, John Gooch, I do make my brother, Wm. Hammond, and Mr. Wm. Symonds, my supervisors.

It is then interesting to see if we can find the birth-place of this John Googe, or Gouch, who appears at Wells and York at an early date, for there are entries as early as 1640, and that he was

...e are certain that this family is of Yarmouth and Worlingham and ...ngos, as well as the family of Yarmond. We go to England for rec...rds, and find much there. In the Harleian Mss. for Essex appears ... pedigree, the most ancient, which gives a number of Welch names, and a number of generations of Welch ancestors coming down to Richard Gooch, of London, who married Mary, daughter of Jenkyn Wyard, of Norfolk, has a son William Gooch, who in Henry Eighth's time was in Essex, and married Margaret, daughter of Thomas Glascott. The Glascott, or Glascock family was ancient and numerous and connected with many ...er Englanders. See Waters. This William has Roger, of Norfolk, England; Joslyn, of Hertfordshire; Thomas, of Coxwell, Essex.

But we find in Mattingham, County of Suffolk, on the third of March, 1504, that Philip Chapman, Gent, did appoint a committee of estate in trust, for the benefit of the Church there forever, five thirty acres of land in trust to Wm. Gooche, the Elder, John Gooche, the Elder, William Gooche, the Younger, John Gooche, the ... Robert Gooch. This was to be held for the Parish Church of Mattingshall. In Mattingham Church, Suffo... tioned, near Bungay. Monuments to ... as Gooch, Cent, 1588. Attached to the monuments are the Arms of Gooch, as in Essex, viz., Party per pale, argent and sable, a chevron, counterchanged, on a chief gules, three leopard's faces.

The Essex family has two shields. First as follows:- Per pale argent and sable, a chevron between three talbots passant, counterchanged, on a chief gules, three leopard's heads or (for Gooch).

Second: Argent, a chevron sable, between three catherine wheels, over a talbot passant, per pale argent and sable.

Bearing the same arms was the Lt. Governor of Virginia, Sir William Gooch, Baronet, born in Yarmouth, England, October, 1681, died in London, 1751.

was appointed Brigadier and Major General to command expedition to Canada, which he refused. He married Rebecca Staunton, daughter of [illegible], brother older inherited the title by patent agreement.

Governor Gooch of Virginia was noted for two things, his absolute determination that no church should have freedom but the Episcopal, and when reproved in the streets of Williamsburg for answering the salute of a black slave, returned answer " that he could not allow anyone in that station to exceed him in civility." He left Virginia with the love and affection of all, as a spotless gentleman of the old school.

His brother was even more eminent, born 1674, of Caius College, Cambridge, 1694, became eminent, held three bishoprics in succession, viz., Bristol, Ely and Norwich. He married a bishops daughter, and in a very long life held a great number of official positions, being Vice Chancellor, and head of Caius College, Cambridge, Bishop and everything. His son, and successor, Sir Thomas Gooch, Baronet, bought for sixteen thousand pounds, "Benacre Hall," which with "Beccles Manor" remains in the family with the title to this day. The two first founders of the title, however, are the only ones mentioned in the History of Natural Biography of England. The Bishop died, 1753-4. He was born, 1764, at Yarmouth, hence was about eighty years old at time of death. His mother was Frances, daughter of Thomas Lone; his father, Thomas Gooch, and his mother also were born at Werlingham, Suffolk. How near this Thomas of Werlingham was to John of York and Wells, I cannot say, perhaps they were brothers, in which case, the Governor of Virginia and the Bishop of so many dioceses, were second cousins to James Gooch 3, who died in Boston, 1736, and the family of Gooch there, doubtless, were well acquainted with the history and success of their kinsmen in England and America, and as well entitled to the ancient arms of the family, as given here.

fact is mentioned that both Sir William, and Sir Thomas Gooch were
n eminent for their urbanity, dignity, and ability in every walk
life. Their father was born, as stated, in Worlingham, which with
y and Bottingham, were earliest places of Gooch family records
as is made in the Essex family. The name of Drummond, doubtless that
of the family of Ruth, wife of the first John in New England, was re-
corded as early as 1503 in Worlingham. The subscribers to "Sucklig's
story were two of this family, viz., Sir Thomas Sherlock Gooch, Bar-
net, and a Mr. Gooch of Norwich.

Singularly mixed with these records, are others of interest
enealogically, viz., 1666, Elizabeth, daughter of John Howland, who
arried the Duke of Bedford, outlived him, and sold a manor here to
homas Gooch, Esq., father of Sir Thomas. This Howland, and Robert
ewster, Esq., Humfrey Brewster, and from very ancient times the
mily of Humfrey, or Umfrey, were of this section, and one made large
fts to the church here, viz., 1517, Richard Umfrey. An account
s given of Captain Thomas Stanton, who made a voyage to India, and
ithin a year returned to London, bringing a Dutch ship of war, and a
e died, 1691. Also Walter Syke was a Vicar here, 1467.
obert Cagley, impaling Albini, is of that family who came in with
illiam the Conquerer, and with him through the Lakes came ancestry
Mrs. C. C. Dike. Also here is found John Valentine Held here of
King, 1647. What kin, if any, to those of Beeles?

And here comes another singular thing, viz., the neighboring
arish is Beccles. Think of Beccles, Suffolk County, and Beeles,
ancaster County, and a John Valentine as early as 15-7 in each place;
ome possible connection in these names. Then we have seat
f the noble Gooch family now "Benacre Hall", and the Valentine prop-
rty of Lancashire, "Bancliffe Hall". These things are simple coinci-
nts to be sure, but very odd, all the same.

cland. So it was ever a great ca[stle], with [its] ... nine miles from Norwich, holding all the bridges between ... and Suffolk. Bungay had to maintain these bridges, a feudal ... This section was mostly held of the Dukes of Norfolk, Pigods, and Howards.

A tomb here marks the grave of Ann, relict of John Gooch, 1607, and that Ann might have been mother of John of York, and Wells. I do not say she was the mother, but she might have been; also of Thomas, ancestor of the Baronets. At any rate here is the home-land of the family of Gooch, before they went to New England. You may be sure of this, and of the arms of the family of most ancient times. Thus here is another family connection absolutely established between your ancestors of New England, and of Old England. You can pursue it if you wish.

The Virginian family is from one Jeffrey Gooch, of the same family, descendants didtributed throughout the south. Goochland, Virginia, was named in honor of the Governor; and Staunton, Virginia, in honor of his wife, Rebecca Staunton. So Gooch imparted Staunton, to History of Virginia, that way.

Gooch Family of Virginia.

Genalogical Gleanings of Waters on England, Page 301-2, Volume V, New England Genealogical Register. William Gooch, Gent, was granted one thousand acres of land on Potomac, 1650. He was Burgess from York County, 1684-[illegible]. Major William Gooch died 1655, aged twenty-nine. His tomb is in the burying-ground of "Temple Farm", York County, Where Governor Spottswood is buried, and bears the arms of Gooch, of Norfolk County, England, of which County was Sir William Gooch, Lieutenant Governor of Virginia, 1727-1740. The arms are, "Paly of eight argent and sable; a chevron of the first between three [illegible] of the second, spotted of the field." The crest,"a greyhound sejeant argent, spotted sable, and collered of the last."

A will of George Ludlow of Parish of York , Virginia, 16[illegible] Widow Major William Gooch. This Ludlow was brother of Honor of

ia.

In Water's Historical Gleanings in a will of Thomas Sudbury, 1606, of Suffolk Yeomanry, he mentions Robert Gooch. The Rev. John Sherman born at Dedham, Essex, dying at Norwich, 1658, mentions to "My Cousin Robert Gooch, a ring". This Sherman was kinsmen of the Shermans of New England, who in our day and generation became so famous a family.

Water's Genealogical Gleanings in two volumes give a great number of Wills of these families mentioned, viz., Glascock, Junon, Sherman, and anyone wishing further study of the subject should use Water's Gleanings. He was many years in England copying these records for the Genealogical Society.

Family of Hoby, Hobye, Hobie, Hobbye, Hebbie, and Hobby.

Natural History of Biography mentions Sir Philip Hoby, Hoby K., Diplomatist. Was son of William Hoby of Leominster, Herefordshire. His zeal for the Reformation recommended him to Henry VIII., and he rose to the highest diplomatic positions in all these to that of Elizabeth; was buried at Bisham. At his death without children his estate was left to his half-brother, Sir Thomas Hob, , K.G-Hoby, diplomatist and translator. He married Elizabeth, one of the seven daughters of Sir Anthony Cooke, and thus was brother-in-law to Sir Nicholas Bacon, and Sir Wm. Cecil Lord Burleigh. His widow married Lord Russell, and built a grand mausoleum at Bisham, Berkshire, for the tomb of the two brothers. By her he had two sons, who were afterwards knighted. These two Hobys were among the most noted diplomatists of their time. As their father was named William, it is possible that the Hobby of New England was a descendant from this family of Wm. Hoby of Leominster, Herefordshire, and that Richard of London, who married a daughter of Sir. Thomas Junon, may have been a

ancestry of Richard Hobby. The many cases of spelling [illegible] some little trouble.

The family of John Hobbie, son of William and brother of Sir Charles, was perpetuated in Boston by Wensley, who had a son, Wensley, who married Sarah Hall, born 1730. See Page 706, Volume 40, New England Genealogical Register of Hall family genealogy, written by [illegible]. [illegible]. Hall, D. D., late of Holy Trinity, Brooklyn.

The Claim of Sir Charles Hobby to one-half of [illegible]

The title to one-half of New Hampshire which [illegible] the estate of Sir Charles Hobby, came in this way. [illegible] Mason died, 1635, he left his claim to the Colony of [illegible] to his heirs. On Page 514-15-16, Provincial Papers of [illegible] may be seen the controversy. The Mason heirs brought suit for damages against men who had taken possession of lands within [illegible] It came to the Allen family, and from them to Sir Charles Hobby, 1700. It was simply this; when John [illegible] absence of anybody, simply seized upon lands and town-sites, and when suits were brought fought them off in some way. At one time the Province offered two thousand pounds [illegible] five thousand acres of land, but it not being accepted by the Allens, left it quite [illegible] Charles Hobby. Had he lived he would have obtained [illegible] but at his death the case became involved.

The justice of the claim was never in doubt for Sir Ferdinando [illegible] John Mason were the two men who first had title to New Hampshire by a Charter from the Plymouth Company [illegible], they were engaged all their lives in trying to make [illegible] everlasting opposition [illegible], the having no rights there, manufactured them, and in the [illegible] defended the heirs in each instance, although the Gen[illegible]

was widow of Captain Cromwell.

did, this Martha, born, 1655. She married thirdly, as will b
en, John Joyliffe, much used by Boston as an official of the town.
was married to her, 1657; they had Hannah, who died unmarried.
Jarvis Ballard and wife, Martha, were married probably in Boston; the
irth of their daughter Mary, who married Samuel Lynde, is not in
oston Records, but the records give names of Jarvise, 1658; Robert
660; Edward 1663; Katherine 1667, all of Jarvis and Martha Ballard.

There was a Daniel and wife, Sarah Ballard, who had twins twice
664 and 1666, and in the next century the Boston Ballards were nu-
rous, but I find no record of them as to where they c me from in
ngland, or whether the three mentioned in Boston, viz., Thomas Jar-
is and Daniel, were of Kin to one another, and of Kin to the Ballards
f Lynn, nor do I find who was Anne, wife and widow of Captain Crom-
ell, who was mother of your Martha Knight, who married Jarvis Bal-

Savage says of Robert Knight, "He was of Hampton, New Hampshire
650; 1654 removed to Boston; had by a first wife, Samuel born, 164?,
ho died young. He married secondly, Ann or Anne, the young widow
f Captain Thomas Cromwell, the rich privateersman, I presume early
n 1650, and may thereafter have spent a year, or two in Maine, but
ere Edward born February, 1652, and Martha, born, September, 1st, 1653
esides James, in 1654, who died soon, and he died 1655 on the 7th of
June. His will of 6th May preceeding, gave all to wife, with care
f only children Edward and Martha, and this Martha, as stated, mar-
ied Jarvis Ballard, and they had among other children as mentioned,
ary, whose birth is not stated, who married Samuel Lynde, whose only

Vickers, or Vicary.

ice married Joseph Lobdell. Anna Vickers married Benjamin [illegible]. Rebecca Vickers married Samuel Binney. The Grand-daughter of [illegible] Cromwell who married Joseph Lobdell may have been, probably was, ancestor of the Lobdell family of Wilmington, your kin through the [illegible]. or Anne, widow of Captain Thomas Cromwell, the "bold privateersmen". I do not find who Edward Knight married, the brother of Martha Knight, who married Jarvis Ballard. I do find that Jarvis Ballard married; perhaps this Jarvis, perhaps, his son, a daughter of your kinswoman of the Lynde Newdigate family, as will be mentioned later, viz., a Pordage, cousin of Mary Lynde, who married John Valentine.

It may interest you to read of this Cromwell, Page 500, Volume 1,"Memorial History of Boston." This Captain Cromwell was a notorious character, who might well figure in a Boston romance. Winthrop's History of New England, Volume 2, Page 365, records his being here a common seaman in 1636. He was a vagabond of a kindly nature, but [illegible] ten years later in 1646. He came into the harbor with a number of Spanish prizes in his train which he had captured in a freebooting way, under a commission of the Earl of Warwick,(privateering commission), Coming across the Bay, stress of weather had forced him into Plymouth, where he and his men "spent liberally and gave freely", which the Pilgrims in their straits were not averse to their doing. Here one of Cromwell's men got drunk and assaulted the Captain. The fellow was killed with a blow of his rapier. Cromwell then brought his fleet to Boston, and, as the story goes, though he had money enough to have the finest house in town, he contented himself with quarters under the humble roof of the poor man who had sacrificed his-

, by way of propitiation when he settled terms of

e, in which fall he fell on his rapier hilt, and so bruised his
as he shortly thereafter died thereof." This happened between
August, 1649, when he made his will, and October, when it was probated
In it he gave six bells to the town--doubtless some of his plunder.

New England History and Genealogical Register, Volume 3, Page
268. His Will. "I, Thomas Cromwell, of Boston, doe by these
presents make my last will and Testament. Deare Wife Anne, Sole Ex-
ecutrix. To doughter Elizabeth Cromwell, five pounds sterling at
marriage, or at one and twenty. To my wife all the remainder of
my Estate excepting the Ship Anne. To pay to Goodwife Chamon, ten
pounds sterling, and to Goodwife Spaule, five pounds sterling. I
give my six bells, being in the Custody of Henry Walton, unto the
Towne of Boston. This 29th day of August, 1649. "

Thomas Cromwell. (And Seal).

His widow Anne married Robert Knight, and again a widow, mar-
ried John Joyliffe in 1657, whose death Sewall records,1701.

One of these bells referred to, 1655, a great bell belonging
to the town sent to the Castle Island to Captain Richard Davenport,
the Commander there.

Lynde-Digby Geneology of Families of that connection in Massa-
chusetts and Connecticut.

The inter-marriages will recur from time to time interesting
recurrences of blood relationships, as shown in previous mention of
many connections, showing how nearly akin all early families of
New England have become in the later generations, as in one instance

who appears there as a merchant, but unfortunately the writer been able to find any account of his particular family. He was a member of Kingschapel, but we find no record in Boston of the birth of his daughter, Mary; she may have been born elsewhere.

The Genealogies known as the Salisbury Genealogies, written at great expense of time and money, and consisting of five large volumes, fail to go into any extensive account of this Jarvis Pallard. On Page 359 of Volume 2, of the Salisbury Genealogies may be found the Lynde Arms of that family of Samuel Lynde who married Mary Pallard daughter of Jarvis and Martha Knight Pallard. The Lynde Arms as given there are, Gules on chief or, three mullets of the first.

The Lynde family become important in Connecticut by Judge Nathaniel Lynde and his purchase of the old estate of George Fenwick, the first governor at Saybrook Fort, who later went to the Civil War n England and was first Colonel of the Regiment since famous as the "Coldstream Guards". Judge Nathaniel Lynde was a brother of Samuel Lynde, who married Mary Pallard. They were sons of Mr. Simon Lynde born in London, who came to Boston, New England, 1650. The family records which he brought over, or received afterwards, enabled his son, Chief Justice, Benjamin Lynde, of Massachusetts Province, to compile valuable genealogical notes of the family, which were the foundation of the Lynde Digby Genealogies as now given to the world by the Salisbury Genealogies. He left these records with his immediate family in three forms,--on the back of an escutcheon, in an old Bible, and on an old chart pedigree. The date of the former is 1740. several years before the death of the elder Chief Justice, the younger

Chief Justice Benjamin, was the antiguary of the family, but his father was living at the time the record on the escutcheon was made, so that what we know of the family traditionally came from the elder Judge." The oldest records extant are found in a Bible (printed 1598), called the"Breeches Bible." It is a large folio bound in brown leather, having on the outside of both covers, "Enoch Lynd" in large gilt letters. The present owner of the Bible is Mr. Cornelia Walter Richards, of Boston, who descends from the Chief Justices Lynde, has kindly sent us in several letters the following statements respecting it.

"Pasted into this volume on the first fly-leaf is the following:- "An extract of Something to be remembered, from the leafe before the title-page of a Bible of my Grandmother, Mrs. Elizabeth Lynde. Sent over to my father, Mr. Simon Lynde, and received by him 13th May, 1675." At the same time written on the said leaf with his own hand as follows:-viz., "This Bible formerly my father Mr. Enoch Lynde's, who died the 23rd of April, 1636, afterwards my dear Mother's, Mrs. Elizabeth Lynde had it. She departed this life, 1669, and 13th of May, 1675, this Bible was brought me here to Boston, in New England, and sent me by Eliza Parker, who writes me my mother gave it her when she tened on her, but presents it to me that it might not go from the family, but that I and mine might improve it and its holy truths, which I beg of God we may! That keeping his Word, we may thereby be kept and found among the number of thecrighteous ones. So prayeth Simon Lynd, Boston, New England, 13th May, 1675."

Then follows on the first page of the second fly-leaf this record: "My Grandparents by my father, Mr. Enoch Lynde dyed 23rd April Anno Domino, 1636. Mrs. Eliza Lynde, his wife, (whose maiden name was Digby), dyed Anno Domino, 1669. My Grand parents by my mother, died, Mr. John Newdigate, 4th September, 1665; Mrs. Anna Newdigate, Dyed, 1679, aged eighty-four. "N. B. Living children, nine sons and three daughters were born unto them in twenty-three years, from December 1663-1676. My Honored father

"Pasted into this volume on the first fly-leaf is the following:- "An extract of Something to be remembered, from the Basle before the title-page of a Bible of my Grandmother, Mrs. Elizabeth Lynde. Sent over to my father, Mr. Simon Lynde, and received by him 13th May, 1675." At the same time written on the said leaf with his own hand as follows:-viz., "This Bible formerly my Father Mr. Simon Lynde's, who died the 23rd of April, 1736, aforesaid

[illegible] 1669, and 13th of May, 1675, this Bible was brought to be here to Boston, in New England, and sent me by Brian Pierce, who writes [illegible] mother gave it her when she owned on her, but prescribe it to me that it might not go from the family, but that I and mine might improve it and its holy truths, which I beg of God we may! And keeping his Word, we may thereby be kept and found among the

[illegible] England, 13th May, 1675."

Then follows on the first page of the second fly-leaf the record: "My Grandparents by my father, Mr. Simon Lynde died 23rd April Anno Domino, 1656. Mrs. Eliza Lynde, his wife, (whose maiden name was Digby), died Anno Domino, 1659. My Grand parents

[illegible] Newdigate, Dyed, 1679, aged eighty-four. "M. B. Living

[illegible] children, nine sons and three daughters were born unto him in [illegible] twenty-three years, from December 1653-1676. My Honored Father

twelve children were born, in London.

Department.

beth's birth. "In the old house yet living in her seventy-ninth year, the widow Pordage."

On the next page, that is the reverse of the second fly) leaf, in writing very much defaced, are found the following memoranda, as nearly as they can be made out. "July 5th, 1658. This Bible given to Enoch Lynde by his grandmother, Mrs Elizabeth Lynde — — — — gave the— — Elizabeth Parker. Given by Elizabeth Parker to me, S. Lynde, by Mother Elizabeth Lynde, dir— — — — — . Then on the same page is continued and ended the record of the names births and deaths of Simon Lynde's children.

On the following pagefollows an account of the first Chief Justice Benjamin Lynde's early life, and on the reverse of the third fly-leaf is the same account of the Bible received from England, in the very same words as in the extract with which this statement begins, in Simon Lynde's handwriting and signed by him, below this, these words: "My Grandfather, Mr. John Newgate, dyed the 4th September, 1665, aged eighty-five. My grandmother, Mrs. Jane Newgate, dyed, 1679, aged eighty-four (of your line), Signed, S. Lynde.

Next comes the title page, on which alongside of S. Lynde [illegible] very quaint, old handwriting, the autograph, unquestionably of Elizabeth Digby Lynde. To find the inscription, "Given

Waters had not yet discovered it. It appears in Waters Genealogical Gleanings, Page 574, and is perfectly conclusive of what had been previously surmised, viz., that Elizabeth Digby had been in Holland, and then, or on voyage , or in London, met Enoch Lin-de, and not Lynde, in one syllable. The following will establish this fact very clearly; page 574. As this is the most ancient document so far in the Linde family it is very important as placing it as a Dutch family, and shows why the arms were not registered in any English College of Heraldry.

Will of Giles de Butt, of Hackney, Middlesex, gentleman, 8th February, 1631; proved march, 1632. To my brother-in-law, Mr. Peter Bonny ten pounds, and unto my Kinsman, Enoch Lynde, likewise ten pounds. With mourning apparel to heirs, and their wives and children. To Mathew Lynd, Son unto Enoch,Lynd, if in case he continues his study, and shall follow it so long till he proceeds Master of Arts, then at his going out Master, I do give him twenty pounds. To my brother Josse de Quester I give ten pounds for mourning; to my two cousins, Jean and Clays Velinges, to either of them, I give forty shillings to make either of them a ring for a remembrance of me. To my cousin Susan Terray, now the wife of Waruschall, and to Susan Daugney, now the wife of Cooper, I give to either of them five pounds. To the minister of the Parish where it shall please God that I shall be buried, forty shillings. To my maid servant, Susan, who now hath dwelt with me about ten

[illegible], I give [illegible] pounds, to be paid [illegible] her date of marriage. To Margaret, our maid servant, if she dwell with me when I die, four pounds. To the poor of St. Andrew Hubbard, in East Chapel, five pounds; to the poor of Pechme[illegible], five pounds; to the poor of the French Congregation, five pounds; to the poor of the Dutch Congregation, forty pounds. Other bequests to the poor in various hospitals and prisons, forty pounds. To John Hoult, my son-in-law, five pounds for mourning. To my Wife, Anna De Butt, my Capital Messuage in Thames Street, called the Three Cups, now, or late in the occupation of Mrs Mary Tearewyn, Widow, and her son-in-law, Timothy Van Vlettend, Dutch Minister, and Jeremy Loreland, Merchant, and others, so long as she shall live sole and unmarried. But if she choose to marry, my son James shall have and enjoy one half the rents and profits during my wife's lifetime, and at her death, I give all my capital messauge and tenements, houses, etc., to my son. To my said son James, my two houses in Tower Street, which I have bought of William Perkins, called "The Roll of Tobacco", and now in the occupation of John Carden, haberdasher of hats and caps, and William Hyde, tailor. And whereas I hold by lease from the parishioners of the Parish of St Andrew-Hubart, East Chapel, a Messuage, or Tenement with the appurtenances, and being in Bottellane in London, and now in the occupation of my Kinsman , Mr. Enoch Lynde, I do will and appoint that my wife shall have, hold and enjoy the said Messauge, and the clear rent thereof during so long of the term to come in the said lease as she shall be living. My wife and my son James to be the executors of this my last will; and for overseers, I name and appoint Mr. Mathew de Questor, Esq., and Mr. Robert Cudnor, and my Kinsman, Enoch Lynde, paying them to assist my said executors with their good counsel and advice.

Reference to a gift my son was to have by the death, or decease of his sister, Anna, wife of John Hoult, my son-in-law."

The Visitation of London, 1633-35, Harleian Volume 1, Page 210, under Cudnor, shows the match of Robert Cudnor, and Susan, daughter to Mathew Dequester, and on Page 228, [illegible] Pedigree of De Questor. By this [illegible]

ment of Oliver Cromwell, and who was paid by him a balance, 1655, [illegible] where against the French, 1,795L, 7s, 6d, In his father's will mention is made of a son-in-law, Timotheus Van Vleteren who appears in the Will of Giles de Butt as a son-in-law, Timothy Van Vlettend, Dutch Minister; and mention is made in Wm. Sedgewick's will thathe left him three hundred pounds, "which fell to me by the death of Mr. James Harewin." The Widow, Mrs. Harewin, appears as a tenenant of one of Mr. Giles de Butt's Messauge in Thames Streetm known as the"Three Tuns", perhaps the three hundred pounds mentioned in MR. William Sedgwick's will as passing through his hands came through his marriage with the Widow Harewyn, or Harewin. The Sedgewick family of America is descended from this Major Robert Sedgwick, much mentioned in New England as Commander of the Expedition of 1655 to capture the French of Nova Scotia. He was connected with Captain Thomas Lake of Boston, in business in Maine and Boston. The will seems to show what was hinted at, only, and which will be spoken of later, as of a Dutch ancestry having the same arms, as a family now existing. An impression of a seal of Enoch Lynde impaling Eliza Digby, his wife's arms was made on an extant deed, [illegible] of Simon Lynde in a letter to Lord Henry Digby, speaks of a silver ink-case with "the arms of Digby impaled with Lynde". A fac-simile of this seal is owned by Dr. F. E. Oliver, of Boston. "Mr. Mitchell, our seal engraver, says the cutting of the silver die of the Lynde arms is one of the best specimens of Dutch or German art of the seventeenth century, better than could have been done in England. The Lynde arms are nowhere recorded in England; are almost identical with those granted in Holland to the noble family of Van der Linden, as recorded in the College of Arms at the Hague,

fering from our Tynde arms but little. In reply to a letter o
ours giving a copy of the arms of Enoch Tynde, the following was
received.

The Hague, Feb. 22, 1900.

I have the pleasure to inform you that I have discovered the name of the family having the coat of arms of which you have given me a copy. That name is Van der Linden. The arms are, "gules on a chief argent, three mullets sable." Descendants of this family, the Barons Van der Linden, are still living in Belgium. The arms of the Stockbridges are, "argent on a chevron azure, three bezants or."

Signed P. A. Van der Velde.
Secretary of the College of Arms and Nobility, of
the Netherlands.

The Stockbridges were Mrs. Elizabeth Tingley's Mother's
.

To the U. S. Minister,
Jas. Birney at the Hague.

"The arms of the family of Tynde of which a drawing has been given me, are identically the same as the Barons of
.

Translation of a report made by Mon
Archivist and Genealogist of Belgium. Colonel Chester from the first had decided the arms to be foreign arms, fixing of the Dutch Arms here mentioned confirm it.

The earliest Tynde traceable is the
Tynde I, and his wife bore the name of Elizabeth. From
grandparents of Enoch Tynde, who married Elizabeth Tingley, but this
is known to us only by the name. Of the father and
mother of Enoch Tynde, we know nothing. Enoch Tynde was a shipping
merchant of London, engaged in the

From the Record Office, London, copy of this.

lett you knowe that Mr. Mason was with me about the inventory of the French prizes brought into the Port of Shoreham, which inventory of the sale of the goods is not yet made perfect, because some things are not sold, and moneys are scarce, but with all speed it shall be ended. I am to go to Shoreham on Monday, and then I will hasten this business and when all is done I will repair to you with all particulars. I have cast all things up at random, and make account to be five hundred and four score pounds, thereabout, whereof the savers claim the moyety, but your Worshippfulls know best what you have to do with them. So not having else, I rest, wishing your Worshipfulls all and as much happiness as he who remayns

Yor Ffriend to Command,

Ruttellan this Enoch Lynd.

4th of January, 1627.

Endorsed to the Right Wofp, Nicholas ,

Secretary to my Lord the Duke of Buckingham. "

The Mr. Mason mentioned was the same John Mason of whom New Hampshire patent was owned; he was an official of the Navy. At this same time John Pike was Treasurer of the Duke of Buckingham, Lord High Admiral of England.

The date of Enoch Lynde's birth has not been handed down, but that of his marriage was, October 25th, 1614, when we shall see his bride was thirty years old, making his birth probably about 1580. His arms were, "gu. on a chief or/ three mullets of the first." He married at the Church of St. Johns, the P Church of Hackney, near London, Elizabeth Digby, "a daughter and heiress," says her great-grandson, Justice Lynde, of Everard Digby, descendant of Sir John Digby, of Eye Kettleby, whose descent is given in the Harleian Collection, Leicestershire," and in the Digby Archives at Shoreham Castle, County Dorset. Her mother was

church his parents were married.

Lynd of London, for a certain sum to be paid at the"Dwelling House of Mrs. Elizabeth Lynde, Buttolph Lane, in London." St Andrews was in the same lane, near London Bridge, where lived there many of the highest nobility. The Royal Castles anciently were near.

Simon Lynde refers in his will to deceased brother, Mathew Lynde, as in will of Giles de Butt, This Mathew Lynde, as 1663 . Order for fifty pounds to Matt Lynde, Surgeon of the "Rainbow", for medicines, at Barbadoes and Sallee, February, 1664, enerals Blake and Penn, Admirals have appointed Matt Lynde Surgeon on the ship"Sovreign". March 1662, Mathew Lyndes appointment as Surgeon by the Duke of York. Here is a letter concerning his son from General Monk, 1660.

"Honored Sir:-There being one Mr. Mathew Lane, who hath long service as Surgeon at Sea, a very deserving person, I make Request to enter his Son Enoch, into Charter house School.

St. James, 11th April, 1660. To,

John Thurlow Whitehall.

There was another son, Enoch, brother to Mathew, but no

mon Lynde remembered him in his will;"I give and bequeathe to Mr. Benjamin Delanay, my Honored Master, six pounds in money", and named as son Benjamin on honor of him.

Simon Lynde came to Boston, 1650, and in February, 1652, Mr. John Newdigate, who died, 1684. Simon Lynde made his home which he made a large addition, "a fair large structure." This house stood on the corner of Hanover Street, and Wings Lane, now Elm Street, in the then aristocratic quarter, and there his son, Samuel also resided. with his family, affixing to the building the Lynde arms. It was the home of theyNewdigates and Lyndes for at least four generations. See Newdigate Will of John.

In the list of soldiers in King Philips War, of Captain Oliver's Company, appears the name of "Mr. Simon Lynde?" He was a member also of the Ancient and Honorable artillery,Company. Foot-note here quoted from Washburns Sketches of the Judicial History of Massachusetts.

"During the more than thirty yrears of his life in the Colony he was a prominent man, and acquired large landed possessions in Massachusetts, Connecticut and Rhode Island. In 1680 he was appointed under Captain Dudley , one of the Assistant Justices of the Court of Common Pleas and Sessions, (This was the first Colonial Court established after King Charles Second vacated the Ancient Charter by Quo Warranto, 1684), and in the following year one of the Justices Assistant of the Superior Court, with Samuel Shrimpton, and Charles Lidgett. He died on the 22nd of November, 1687, posessed of a large estate.

Chief Justice Sewall, in making a note of the death of Justice Simon Lynde in his diary, says, "the burial took place on the 26th of November. Bearers, Col. Shrimpton, Mr. Newall, Justice

Bristol was the head. He it was, who at one time presented Simon [illegible] of the Digby kin and name. When he came to Boston, 1650, at the [illegible] vice of the father in that department entitled the son to its con- [illegible] 1653, that he married, Hannah, sister of Nathaniel Newgatewho in England, had by a fortunate marriage now entered the highest official society there as may be seen in Newdigate's Genealogy. That may have been his introduction, for it seems a fact that some important business relations between New England and Old England were [illegible] and his son and grand-son were in turn Chief Justices of Massachusetts.

It appears from Massachusetts Records that at a Council held in Boston, New England, 1686, ordered,

"That Wait Winthrop, Esq., Simon Lynde, Esq., Benjamin Sullivant, Mr. Isaac Addington, and Mr. Daniel Allen be a committee with a Secretary to receive and sort, and form the records of the country, now in the hands of Mr. Edward Rawson, late Secretary, that so they may be apt and ready for service; and that the persons named be all sworn to the faithful discharge of their trust in the

Boston, 1838, Volume 7, 162.

are Godly, and need relief, the residue among his seven children, including his new and old house in Boston, This is the Newdigate house, which he left to George Pordage, and Elizabeth, his wife, daughter of Simon Lynde. For his son Benjamin, he made special provision, as follows:- "Item; My order and will is that my son Benjamin, his charges and maintenance at Harvard College, in Cambridge, till he have Master of Arts; be paid and allowed out of my estate, and in no wise charged out to him; hoping he continue his studies, and belong to the college so long." He died at the age of sixty-three, and one year after the graduation of this son, who was to so honor his name.

He made his three sons executors of his will, and son-in-law, George Pordage, overseer of it. Among the items in the inventory of his estate,"Several housings and lands lying and situate in Boston according to a list and particulars , therefor drawn forth by himself and value sett at three thousand six hundred and forty-five pounds.. Item; several parcels in other parts, drawn up and sett by himself, amount two thousand five hundred and thirty-one pounds. He owned Thompson Island, Dorchester, among other possessions. He also owned other lands in Rhode Island and Connecticut, the whole inventory was, seven thousand, six hundred and twenty-two pounds, not including household and plate, of which he had two hundred and four pounds, or six hundred and thirty ounces: gold rings, etc., forty pounds; other money in trunk, one hundred and ninety pounds. Concerning the plate in the Iron Chest or Strong Box,

Chief Justice Lynde bequeathes fifty pounds in his will, other fifty of plate and jewelry mentioned in various wills. The second Chief Justice left plate and books to value of six hundred pounds, among them a piece of plate which "was my grandmother's, Elizabeth Digby, which piece of plate is now two hundred years old."

In the long inventory of John Valentine, Esq., who married Mary, only child of Samuel Lynde, we find four hundred and sixty-two ounces of plate, appraised at two hundred and twenty-three pounds eight pence.

The rich inventory of Judge Nathaniel Lynde of fifteen large pages closely written, value of silver alone is two hundred pounds; the whole inventory was nine thousand, four hundred and thirty pounds. How much came out of his father's Iron Chest, we know not.

The children of Justice Simon and Hannah Newdigate Lynde, were, Samuel, born, December 1, 1683, an opulent merchant of Boston, a Justice of Suffolk, in which office he was used in most of that business in Boston, where he lived and merchandized, married there in 1674, Mary, daughter of Jarvis Ballard, and had besides several children who died in infancy, a daughter, Mary, who married John Valentine, Esq., an eminent pleader at law, and Advocate General in the Provinces, who had several children. She, Mary died 1738. Secondly, Samuel Lynde married Mary Brick, no children; and he thirdly married, Mary Ann Bendall, widow of Dr. Daniel Allen Bendall. She survived her husband Lynde without children, dying, 1737, aged sixty-seven. Samuel Lynde died, 1721 in October. On his residence were cut in stone the Arms of Lynde as have been given, with the initials, "S. L. 1712", which are still to be seen on the front of a granite building in Washington Street, near Churchill, Boston.

The third wife, Mary Ann Bendall, was daughter of Freegrace Bendall, who came with Winthrop. She married first, Dr. Daniel Allen , had eight children, only one married, a daughter, to Hon Isiah Willard. The widow, Mary of John Valentine, Esq., viz.: Mary Lynde, was buried in her grandfather's tomb, where probably

Returning to the children of Simon Lynde, his second child, Simon, born, 1655, died same year; third, John, born 1657, died 1671; fourth, Nathaniel, the Judge who bought the ancient estate of George Fenwick, at Saybrook, and founded the eminent family of Connecticut Lyndes, whose descendants did much toward this genealogy, viz., the McCurdys, Lords, Griswolds, Morgans, Elys, etc. Fifth child, Elizabeth, born, 1662, married Mr. George Pordage, of Boston. Wills in England leaving him property may be seen in Water's Genealogical Gleanings. She died 1746, aged eighty-four. Her daughter Hannah, married, 1714, Hon. James Bowdoin, the father of the Governor of that name, and died, 1754. His daughter, Elizabeth Bowdoin [illegible] of our Pollard Family. Bowdoins were French Huguenots. The son of this first Bowdoin, viz., this James, became a truly princely merchant, dying, 1747, aged seventy-one, and left to his children the greatest estate which had been possessed at that day in Massachusetts Colony by any person, and holding general positions of eminence.

This James married Hannah Pordage as his second wife. By his first wife he had a son William. By a second marriage, a daughter, Sarah, the wife of Hon. James Bowdoin of the fourth generationfrom whom Bowdoin College is named, and secondly, she married General Henry Dearborn, eminent in War of 1812. The youngest son of James and Hannah Pordage Bowdoin, was the Hon. James Bowdoin, graduate of Harvard, 1745, who is commonly designated "The Governor", 1779, a distinguished patriot of those days.

His grand-son was the Hon. Robt. C. Winthrop, who makes a great place for him, placing him beside Hancock, Adams and Otis. [illegible], this Robt. C. Winthrop, the eminent statesman, and gen[illegible] of George Winthrop, Jr. and wife, Elizabeth Reade Winthrop, and a descendant of Hannah Pordage also.

The son of Governor Bowdoin, also James Bowdoin became Minister to Spain and France. The only daughter of Gov. Bowdoin

[illegible] Thomas Greevin, [illegible] two to service. [illegible] Speaker of House of Congress and Historian, and President of [illegible] land Genealogical Society. The sixth child of Thomas Lynde, [illegible] Joseph, born 1664, died 1676. Seven, Benjamin, the sixth son born 1666. This was to be the Chief Justice, as mentioned in Valentine. He went to London to take his degree and study in Middle Temple, as his father advised; was called to the Bar and made King's Advocate of the New Court of Admiralty. Here seems a clue to the family connection from Enoch Lynde's time, perhaps even before that, the Lyndes were connected by generations of service to the Navy. Mathew Lynde, Simon's brother, as we havexshown, was a surgeon all his long life in the Navy. As was customary, these things weres part of the feudal English customs; once a family is in, they remain in that line. Perhaps a purchase value was maintained.

John Valentine, Esq., succeeded Benjamin Lynde as we have shown elsewhere as Advocate General, to the Admiralty, for the Provinces. Judge Benjamin Lynde was for thirty years a Judge, as Judge Sewall said, "They now have the 'Inns of Court added to Harvard College in time." He had a County Seat at Castle Hill. He was a master of Latin and Greek; he died, 1745, aged seventy-nine. 1741 Rev. Samuel Moody wrote,

"Lynde, Dudley, Remington, and Saltonstall,
With Sewall meeting in the judgement-hall,
Make up a learned, wise and faithful set
Of Godlike judges, as God's learned met."

There are two portraits of hi, painted by Smybert in 1737. One is owned by Mr. Wm. B. Richards, of Boston, and one of Madam Lynde, by him.

Chief Justice Lynde left a large estate, and a legacy of one hundred and fifty pounds to the Confederate Society, of which Rev. Mr. John Sparhank was a minister. Judge Lynde [illegible], the elder succeeded him on the Bench as Chief Justice of the Province. William his younger son died in Salem of consumption, unmarried, 1752, a graduate of Harvard, a [illegible].

nieces, the rest to brother Benjamin.

Benjamin Lynde 2d eldest son Benjamin 3, was born [illegible]

to the Revolution in Boston. Judge Washburne says the result of [illegible] "is a great monument of the world of the administration of justice in Massachusetts Province."

On appointment of Chief Justice Hutchinson to the chair of Governor, Benjamin Lynde was promoted [illegible] of his family to sit as such, and third of his line who had been [illegible] as Benjamin 3. [illegible] he was Judge of Probate at Salem for Essex. He died 1781, aged [illegible], noted for his learning, liberality, and public spirit, [illegible] of repute. To him the family owe much for his care and pains. [illegible] His family are here used. His large income allowed him to live in the highest style of those days; he was married, 1731, to Mary, daughter of John Powles of Roxbury, a descendant of Rev. John Eliot.

Essex, and grand-daughter of Peter and Sarah Newdigate, who was half-sister of Hannah Newdigate, who married Simon Lynde; thus a two-fold descent. Another daughter Hannah, who died unmarried. later of Christ Church, Boston. Went with Army, 1776.

Dr. Oliver has a portrait of the second Chief Justice Benjamin. See Emory Washburnes Judicial History of Massachusetts for all the Lyndes and John Valentine, Esq.

Nathaniel, the fourth child of Simon Lynde, took his name from his mother's brother, Nathaniel Newgate, of London. He was born in 1659, and married Susanna Willoughby, daughter of Deputy Governor Francis Willoughby. He was son of Col. Wm. Willoughby, and both father and son during the Civil War and Commonwealth, were prominent officials of the Navy Department residing in London. At the Restoration Francis returned to Charlestown. Probably Nathan- ate and Simon Lynde were employed, or with thence bys in Naval affairs, for both became men of large import- nce. Nathaniel Newgate had married into an important political connection of the highest blood and largest estates, so we may judge that the importance of the Lynde family in Boston was from great family influence in London.

Judge Nathaniel Lynde and wife, Susanna Willoughby Lynde, removed to Saybrook, Conn'/. The great love and affection between Benjamin the Justice, and his brother Nathaniel, founder of Connecticut family. Judge Nathaniel of Saybrook, was one of the founders of Yale College, 1701. His son Samuel, born, 1683, graduated Yale, 1707; he married as second wife Lucy Pulmes, of New London, a cous- nes, who was ancestress of Stanton Williams. Samuel Lynde, as his father Nathaniel was, was a judge; his sister ried Judge Lord, and founded a family of judges. Samuel was ajor of the Regiment, died, 1754, leaving an estate of eleven housand pounds. Very large for the times.

ntributed so largely to this history of the Salisbury Co
which cost very much.

Hannah, her sister, married, 1735, Rev. George Griswold
the Lorillards, of New York, with many others. Sussannah Wil-
ed a number of peerages of England. Her daughter, Susannah Lynde,
married Rev. Jos. Willard, and Mr. Andrew Gardner. By each she
The eighth child of Judge Nathaniel and Susanna Willoughby Lynde,
married Mr. Benjamin Lord, a brother of Judge Richard Lord. They
had three daughters and one son, William Lord, and he it was who
inherited so largely from his cousin, Wm. Lynde of Salem, who had
intended him as his heir, and had adopted him. He inherited four
thousand pounds and a large farm, beside jewelry, etc.He graduated

A long line of descendants in names of Wolcott, Plants,
Foster, etc.

The last child of Judge Nathaniel Lynde Ann, married Col
Col. John prescott. They had three daughters; was at Harvard,
1740, and died on a journey to England, 1745.

In connection with the contention that the Lynde family
from the time of Enoch , who was a shipping merchant of London,
the Lyndes have evidently had a hold in the Navy Department. In
1632 there appears the following petition of Samson Bates, Enoch
Lynde, Job Allibond, and others, to Le Coke, on behalf of the "Or-
dinary posts for the Low Countries, to have a settlement of regi-
ers having paid great sums for their places, and of late have been
much wronged, pray to be heard before the settling of the orders."
Domestic Series of State Papers, 1631-2.

A descendant of the Lyndes writes from Amsterdam to his father in New York, 1878:- "Upon my name being noticed in the Hotel Register, I found several [illegible] bers of the Lynden, or Linden family. A Count de Lynden was here. He says in about 1600 A. D. certain of the Holland estates were [illegible] as those of Enoch Lynde, hence must have belonged to the same Dutch stock."

The ancestry of Elizabeth Digby wife of Enoch, and mother of Simon Lynde, carries the ancestry into one of the great historical families of England. From the American side it is learned that Elizabeth was the daughter and heiress of Everard Digby; that this Everard was son of Simon Digby; that her parents dying, she was sent into Holland to her mother's Dutch relations to be educated in the Protestant faith, her father's family being Roman Catholic generally. That she was a near relation to John Digby, Earl of Bristol, who introduced her son Simon to kiss the hand of Charles First, and that her son Simon was named after her family."

Ancestry of Elizabeth Digbyas made out by Col. [illegible] the Genealogist of London.

"In William Conqueror's time

1 Aelman, or Aelmarus, who had two sons, Sir John de Tilton,

2 Sir Everard Digby, of Tilton who married Amicia Dreraton, and had,

3 William Lord of Tilton, who by wife Christiana had two sons,

4 Walter Digby of Tilton, a monk time of Henry Second, and Robert, his brother, who married, Anne, daughter of Merle ------, County of Lincoln, and had Robert and [illegible].

5 This Robert, time Henry third, 1217-1268, married [illegible] ter John Fitzherbert, and had,

6 Sir John, among other children, died fifty-second year Henry Third, having married Arabella, daughter of Sir William

Harcourt, of Stenton Harcourt, Oxford, by wife Alice, sister of Alan de la Zouche. The monument at Tilton of this man inscribed, "Jehan de Digby gist ici praies pour lui." And on his wife's tomb [illegible] Harcourt, [illegible] Arabella was eleventh in the line of Harcourt. [illegible] Vernon Harcourt, who has refused a peerage recently.

7 The eldest son, John, living 11-33 Edward, married - - - - Wake, and had ,

John Digby and married Ellen, daughter of William Yaxley and had,

Robert Digby, [illegible] of Kirby, Leicester.

10 Simon Digby, of Tilton and Drystoke County of Rutland, Henry sixth time, married Joan daughter of Sir John Bellairs.

11 Sir Everard, Sheriff Rutlandshire, 1459 and Member of Parliament, 1446. He had three brothers [illegible] great battle of Towton, 1461 fighting for Henry sixth. Leland says, "This Dikeby, or Digby had a place called, 'Stoke', by Uddington, the Bishop of Lincoln's place, in Rutlandshire.. "At Palm Sunday feld Digby, the best of the Stock, [illegible] Was slain in Civili belli betwixt Henry and Edward , and the [illegible] of hym were attainted, but afterwards restored."

This Dikeby had by heir general us by his wife, a restoration of the Manor to his heirs, Sir Everard, who with all brethern fought for Henry Seventh at Bosworth field and were restored in blood and estate

12 Everard Digby died January 1506-9, buried at Tilton. He married Jacquetta, daughter Sir John Ellis Ely. [illegible] at Stoke before her husband. Their Epitaphs are given in Nichol's Leicestershire in Latin. They had seven sons and four daughters. The third son,

13 Sir John Digby, of Eye Kettleby, Co[illegible]

ghted by Henry Seventh; was subsequently Knight Marshall of
he King's Household, died , 1555 Married Catherine, daughter
icholas Griffin, of Braybrook, Northamptonshire, and secondly,
ne Willoughby, of Wolton, Notts, of that ancient family. The
istory of Liecestershire gives a long account of him, with epitaph
in Nichols. He was sheriff, as his ancestor had been; was with
[illegible] in [illegible] and France; [illegible]
shall of the Vanguard . Zeland says,"Six brethern, all of the
Dikebys of Tilton Stokes came to King Henry at Bosworth Field.
Three were well rewarded, as was hecabove. This Dykeby had some
of the Bellairs lands; by his first wife he had four sons and five
[illegible].

14 William Dikeby of Kettleby married Helen daughter of John
[illegible], Attorney General to Henry [illegible] of Kendal,
Visitation, 1619.

Atherne Griffin's pedigree and arms are given ,"sable
[illegible] sergeant argent", including [illegible] of Tilney, Montalayne, Pilkington, Curson to Digby of the thirteenth generation. In this descent of Elizabeth Latimer , ancestress of Catherine [illegible], Countess of Kendall, [illegible] or. Pilkingtons were Saxons with arms as of the eleventh [illegible] in Lancashire.

Col. Chester says,"this account as given of the Digbys or Dykebys, must be taken as given, and for what it is worth; it is their pedigree. There is no good reason for doubting any part of it. This pedigree is made of partial records of the [illegible]. The 14th William Digby I have his father's will, Sir John Digby. "I will that my daughter, Elyne Montegue, late wife of my son, William Digby, of Lubenham in County Leicester, now deceased, and the daughter of John Roper, late Attorney General to our late King, have two closes in Kettleby for her life, with remainder to John Digby, his son, heirs of my late son William Digby." positive evidence that William died before his father, and left son John, and speaks of another son William, but he, [illegible] no will so far found. His widow married Sir Edward Montague, Lord

Chief Justice of England, ancestor of the Duke of Manchester, and other eminent people of that blood; she died, 1563. She made a will naming her son, William Digby, as executor. I have searched for wills, but have fond none of William Digby, butvnow comes the pedigree of the Digby family of Sherborne Castle, County Dorset. This pegigree cost one thousand pounds to the present owner, and was made by Sir Kenelm Digby and came to his son, John, and finally [illegible]. In Digby's composition, No. 14 William Digby is assigned two wives; by his second, Helen Roper he had two sons and three daughters. By his first wife, Rose, daughter and heir of William Pervich, of Lubenham, in County Leicester, whose arms are given, they had two sons, John and Simon. John, the eldest and heir, married, - - - - Parr, and had William, who married Truth Terwit. The Visitation of Leicester gives an account of the marriage of Rose Prestwich to William Digby, who had two sons, John and Simon. As the pedigree of Sherbourne Castle follows this precisely, Col. Chester argues out the pedigree and deduces the following. [illegible] that Sir John Digby in his will leaves a bequest to [illegible] pay for the souls of his grand-father and grand-mother, [illegible] fatherand mother, John Bellairs and wife.

No. 15, Simon Digby, was of Bradell, County of Rutland, and married, Anne, daughter of [illegible], and had two sons, Everard and Rowland. Of Rowland, it is [illegible] Jane, daughter of Henry Clapham; by her he [illegible] who married, William [illegible], and Mary, who married [illegible] of Antwerp. Of the second son, viz.,

No. 16, Everard Digby, the Sherborne pedigree states, he married Katherine, daughter of Magestrie Stockbridge de Vand[illegible] Goubor de Newkirk, and had an only daughter, viz., Elizabeth, who married - - - Dyne. I should remark that the pedigree of Digby in Harleian Mss. No. 1364 is clearly a transcript of that portion of the Sherborne Castle pedigree now extant in that family copy of the existing Digby line, which transcript relates to [illegible] of Sir John Digby, of Eye Kettleby, Leicestershire, and his descen-

dants, of which line you are. Sir George Digby Wingfield Digby is now owner of Sherborne Castle, Dorset.

Nichols History of Leicestershire has the line of descent as follows:-

No. 13, John Digby married Catherine Griffin, sister of Thomas Griffin.

No. 14, William Digby, their son married Rose Perwick of Luberham.

No. 15, Simon Digby, their son, de Bedale, married Anna, daughter of Reynold Gray.

No. 16, Everard Digby, their son, married the daughter of Magestrie Stockbridge de Vandershaff Theubor de Newkirk.

No. 17, their daughter Elizabeth, only child, married [illegible],

and that is all that pedigree contained. Our record of her will be completed by a brief notice of Simon [illegible], her grandfather; "He held the castle and Manor of [illegible], [illegible]-ly in the possession of the Fitz Alans, but he lost his estate by [illegible]-ner at his death, he having been engaged in the Rebellion of 1569 to liberate Queen Mary, and establish the Catholic [illegible] in England. He was executed, 1570. Fronde, the Historian, gives a full account of it; his name is not mentioned by Fronde, but we have it from other historical records. He was one of four mentioned by Fronde as having been executed for the reason that they were men of property to be confiscated. A special court was held for the trial at York. The Calender of Sta[illegible] Sir William Cecil encloses the list of the four rebels executed as Simon Digby, John Fulthorpe, Robert [illegible]. Seven of the prisoners found guilty, were at the same time reprieved. Here is what says Sir George Brown, Knight Marshall to Sir Wm. Burleigh, 1570. "Truth and conscience move me to show you [illegible] dealing of Rowland Digby, son and heir to Simon Digby, [illegible] the late Rebellion. He was formerly of my household, [illegible] by his father for religion's sake; but his [illegible] toward her Majesty, and honesty to me that when he saw his father

In any history of the times, viz., November 5th, 1605, may be [illegible] the part played in the Romanist Plot by Sir Everard Digby, a kinsman of this Elizabeth. He was, as one might say, the main-spring of it. One can understand then, why her Protestant kin in Holland sent for her to come to them for her upbringing, and it was there that she probably met her future husband, Enoch Lynde.

Sir Everard Digby left two sons, one of them most famous as Sir Kenelm Digby, a romantic character of the age, most famous of the Courtiers of Charles the First, and he it was who had wrought so expensively the pedigree of the Digby family, description of which shows great elaboration. So it is to him you perhaps owe so much history of the Digby family, which otherwise had been lost entirely. The Genealogy cost him twelve thousand pounds sterling, [illegible] with the wills and a variety of things to illustrate the family history, drawn from authentic records, from Hutchinson's History of Dorset, and from the Gentleman's Magazine. As stated, Sir Joseph Ayloffe, 1766, exhibited it at the Society of Antiquaries. It says, "From the time of Henry the First, followed by the Arms and crests properly blazoned, and by curious drawings of the several monuments of the family, and their portraits and arms in the windows of various churches, and last of all the such as deeds and charters copied from the hand-writing of originals, with drafts of the seals. The late Earl of Digby purchased it for his castle of Sherborne for one thousand pounds sterling, Where it may now be seen, as a record of the love of his kindred of Sir Kenelm Digby, born, 1603, son of Sir Everard, of the Gunpowder Plot", and kinsman of the Earls of Digby, and Barons of Digby, an ancient line of British Peers.

[illegible] in 1525 he sailed into the Mediterranean,
of a Venetian port, and returned with great glory.
of a rather doubtful character, and altogether, between taking [illegible]
sides in the Civil War, between poetry and diplomacy, he was one
of the picturesque figures of the times. The John Digby, who was
first Earl of Bristol, and who introduced Simon Digby--later of
New England--to Charles First, was that Earl of Bristol who figured
in James First and Charles First Reigns as Ambassadors to Spain.

The very costly pedogree of the Digby family was produced
at theorder of Sir Kenelm Digbynto honor his ancient ancestors,
and their allied families. At this time the name of Digby is not
well known, but the blood of that family runs in most of the ancient
families of England. The Arms of Digby, and of the families into
which four immediate branch married, may be seen in the History
of Leicestershire, as the many families there mentioned are but a
part of the actual number; many of them lost to history, owing to
the destruction of ancient records during the Wars of the Roses,
and the changes of religion. The Digbys were mostly Romanists,
but Elizabeth, mother of Simon,Lynde, was a protestant. Her Arms
[illegible] of Stockbridge--and VanderVelde of Woogvourst, Barons ofHolland
and Belgium, as is shown in the official report of the College of
Arms of the Hague and Brussells.

It seems then unquestionable that the Arms of the two
families would lead into an extended connection of ancient families
on the continent , of perhaps, Dutch, German, and French national-
[illegible].

Gegealogy of the Newgate, or Newdigate Family, the wife of
Simon Lynde, of Boston, also Water's Cleanings.

On page 333 New England genealogical Register, The Will
of John Newgate of Boston. 25th November, 1664.

"Debts being paid and funeral discharged, I give unto my

pounds per annum to the College at Cambridge, (a perpetual [illegible]. If she marry, my son, Nathaniel, to have my Charlestowne house. I give unto my Son-in-law, Simon Lind, my said house in Boston in which I now dwell, and the said house in which he now dwells, to possess and enjoy immediately after the decease or marriage of my wife, Ann, yielding and paying unto her during her life a third part of the rents or profits thereof; also two hundred and twenty pounds within six months after he shall possess said house and lands, One hundred and ten pounds to my son-in-law, Peter Oliver, that married with my daughter Sarah, and the other one hundred and ten pounds unto my son-in-law, Edward Jackson that married with my daughter Elizabeth.

I give unto my Grandchildren, John Oliver, and Thomas Oliver, sons of John, deceased, twenty pounds--ten to each. And to every living child of Elizabeth Jackson ten pounds each; and to Sarah Oliver's children, ten each. Unto all the children living of my daughter Hannah, had by my son-in-law, Simon Lynd, ten pounds apiece, and to the children of my son, Nathaniel, ten apiece.

To my brother-in-law, Thomas Townsend, of Lynn, ten pounds unto my Wife's sister, who married William Newgate, my uncle's son, being in London, five pounds; unto the Free School at Boston, ten pounds. To Mr. John Wilson, Pastor, eight pounds. Thirty pounds to ministers unemployed in Boston as Mr. Wilson sees fit.; unto the poor of the church, ten pounds; and several gifts of plate, a porringer, and three spoons to Simon Linde, and what remaineth to be divided between my wife and my four children, namely, Nathaniel, Elizabeth, Sarah and Hannah, and hoping for the faithfulness of my sons- in- law, Edward Jackson and Simon Linde, to perform the trust herein committed unto them as Exutors, and the said Peter Oliver to be the Overseer.

John Newgate.

Codicil. Whereas in my bequest to my son-in-law Simon Lynde, it is thus expressed, (and the said house in which he now dwells, with

, with the orchard and rest of thecgro[illegible] which is four acres. I make void t[illegible] School."

Inventory of goods and estate of Mr. John Newgate, [illegible] 1665, made by James Pen, Thomas Brattle, Thomas Buttolph. [illegible] 2, 496Ls, 13s, 11d. Mr. Edward Jackson and Mr. Simon Lynde depose addition made by Mr. Simon Lynde onecof the executors in addition to the original inventory, 175Ls, 16s, 0s.

A footnote, Page 335 says, "John Newgate, a merchant, selectman and Constable of Boston was admitted freeman, 1635, and elected Representative, 1638. Nathaniel, his son, was member of Artillery Company, 1646. Some of them wrote the name--Newdigate. Thomas Greenough, 1767, writes,"John Newgate, who owned the Chelsea Farm, by will, 1665, gave five pounds to Harvard College forever, subjected the farm to that. Col. Samuel Shrimpton purchased it [illegible]"

This shows that he attended Mr. John Wilson's church; was a man of wealth, for an estate of two thousand seven hundred pounds was considered a fortune at that time, and with the value of money as then.

Will of Nathaniel, the son, who died in London, 1666, a merchant there, mentions brother-in-law, Sir John Lewis, of Lewiston, County, of York, Edward Rumball and Edward White, executors. "To my mother, Anne Newgate, twenty pounds; to my aunt, Anne, ten pounds; to my brother-in-law, Simon Lind and his wife, forty pounds, and to each of his children, ten pounds; to Edward Jackson, and Peter Oliver, brothers-in-law, of New England, ten pounds; to my brother-in-law, Sir John Lewis, and to said Edward Rumball, and Anne, his wife, ten pounds apiece; Edward White, ten pounds; to brother-in-law, Henry Harris and wife, ten pounds apiece: all my lands and hereditaments in New England to my son, Nathaniel Newgate. To Sir William Peak, Lord Mayor of London, forty shillings to buy

friends; residue to executrix,(his wife).

Mention is made in a memorandum of Benjamin Lynde that the estate of Nathaniel Newgate lost 20,000pounds sterling by some means. "To my Lady Holles, wife Sir Freschville Holles, twenty pounds, which are due to me or my wife; one hundred pounds to such silenced ministers as Dr. Wilkins and Edmund White shall direct.

Note, Page 143. Nathaniel Newdigate baptized, 1607, married Isabella, daughter of Richard Lewis, and Jane Briersley. He died 1668, and she married, 1670, John Johnson. Jane Lewis, sister of Isabella Newdigate, married Valentine Crome, first, and secondly, Sir Freschville Holles.

Nathaniel Newgate, this son, settled in Rhode Island, and is buried in Newport. Will of Sir John Lewis, Knight and Baronet, 1670, mentions sister Mary Wortley, Ann Bamball, Isabella Johnson--who was Newdigate--The Lady Jane Holles, Mrs. Elizabeth Haynes, to each fifty pounds per annum, a rent charge on estates. My Lady Butler, "my Aunt in Ireland ; my father-in-law, Sir Thomas Foote; my brother-in-law, Sir Francis Rolle and Lady; my brother-in-law, Mr. Arthur Onslowe and his wife; the Company of Ironmongers; to Ledsam Church, within my own Quire, my body to be interred; t wo or three hundred pounds for a fount; thirty pounds for poor of church five pounds to him who preaches my sermon, and mourning gown; my father-in-law Sir Thomas Foote; my brotherin-law, Sir Francis Rolle, Arthur Onslowe, Esq., and my brother, Captain Lewis, Executors; and a bond for 10,000 pounds to the Earl of Huntington, and daughter Elizabeth, in case they be married.

The Lewis, or Lewys Family Genealogical Gleanings, Page 153.

Robert Lewis, West Riding, of York. Sir John Lewis of Ludsam, Yorkshire, Baronet, 1660, married Sarah, daughter of Sir Thomas Foote, and had two daughters; one, Elizabeth, married Theophilus Hastings, Earl of Huntington. Mary married Robert Leak,

married the sister Isabella of Sir John Lewis.

that a New Englander married into

not appear.

Mary Werkley will, 1672, mentions Sister Isabella

much property to Sir John Lewis and Nathaniel Newgatethier heirs and assigns, with residue to Sir Valentine Crome and Phillis Crome his wife; to be buried in St. Bartholomews the Great, near his parents there in London, of Smithfield, a very ancient church where is buried Sir Walter Mildmay. He was a Scrivener licensed to his son 1661, Valentine, fourteen years of age to be married to Phillis Ashwood of Waltham Abbey; he was christened at St. Atholins, 1649. Freschville Nolles of Grimsby, Lincolnshire, married widow Jane Crome at St. Bartholomews the great, London. He was son of Gervais Nolles, the family antiquary; he was knighted for valor against the Dutch, 1665; was slain in battle South Wold Bay, 1672; buried in St. Edmund's Chapel, Westminster Abbey.

Singularly the intermarriages here are with historical personages, and as Nathaniel who was buried in Newport, had thus two cousins, Sir John Lewis(daughters were Countesses of Huntingdon and Scarsdale, of two eminent families of ancient lineage),

The Nolle here mentioned was a Chief Justice after Mathew Halebage 67, Volume 3 New England Hostory and Genealogical Society.

John Newgate was a merchant and prominent citizen of Boston. He was admitted freeman of Boston, 1634-5. At the time the book of possessions was compiled he had a house and garden of three hundred and fourteen acres bounded with Henry Vane northward. Savage says, born, 1600, at Southwark, near London Bridge.

the use of house, lands, etc., Bury St. Edmunds for life, then John Newgate now living, resident in the parts beyond the seas, called New England, etc., his heirs forever; all the rest to wife Sarah, and her heirs forever.

(Signed,) John Newgate.

Three witnesses.

Proved at Sudbury, Suffolk, October 5, 1649.

Will of Robery Newgate, the Elder, of Great Horningsheath, dated 1608, mentions sale of land to Mr. Revell, who may have been that Mr. Revell who loaned money to Plymouth Colony in its early history.through Isaac Allerton, 1626, at London. See Plymouth Record of Revell. Was chosen an Assistant Massachusetts Bay Colony, 1629. He came in 1630 but returned in that year. We find among names in the County Histories of Norfolk and Suffolk, the name of Newgate as early as 1400, estates at Wolkham Wells. 1408, William Newgate, Gent, 1601, each date in Apton and Appelton Estates of William Newgate. Charles First granted Sault Moores there to Robert Newgate, one hundred and fifty pounds to be paid to the King. In 1659 a certain Edmund Newgate of Wolkham, sold estate for three thousand, four hundred pounds to John Coke, Esq., ancestor of Earl of Leicester. In 1604 this Edmund Newgate recorded his pedigree at the College of Arms, (Without a coat,) at Newgate alias Newdegate of Wighton, County Suffolk, where he held estates, 1607.

Nathaniel Newgate, alias Newdigate, son of John of Boston, in Will, 1668, signs'Newgate! Thesnotable thing concerning this Nathaniel Newgate of London, who had married a sister of John Lewis of Yorkshire and Head of the Ironmongers Company, whose two daughters married such ancient titles as Earl of Huntingdon, and Earl

wells parliaments, and yet had influence enough to save their estates at the Restoration. Arthur Onslowe's great grandfather

mons, and on his retirement was granted three thousand pounds per annum for two lives--an unusual honor. His son was made a peer, and of his grandsons, three became peers under the name of Onslowe.

It seems difficult to account for the extraordinary family connections thus made by Nathaniel Newgate, Jr. in England, unless we esteem that in the time of Oliver Cromwell, like many other New Englanders, he had unusual credit and position under favor of the Lord Protector. Again, although his son Nathaniel, third, inherited all his lands in New England yet with such noble kinsmen and women, why did he chose to live and die in Newport, then a rather obscure port of New England? Certainly two of his first cousins were wives of the most ancient Earls, viz., Huntingdon and Scarsdale. The family of Holles were ancient and now are Dukes of Newcastle. The Sir Francis Rolle mentioned, was the Chief Justice Rollewho was one of the greatest legal minds in England and succeeded Sir Mathew Hale. It so appears then, that Nathaniel Newgate, brother of your ancestress, Hannah Newgate, wife of Simon Lynde, was a man of such importance as to be intimate with all of these historical families, and connected with them by marriages, as shown by these wills. See Water's Genealogical Gleanings for all of these wills of the Newgates and their kin, 1878-1874.

The widow of the unfortunate Earl of Stafford was of the Holles family by birth, sister of that Denzil Holles, who with Benjamin Valentine held the Speaker in his chair in the Commons, in

These and the American Townsends are from a common ancestry.

The Townsends of New York State descended from the Long Island family, are not from Thomas of Lynn, but are from another branch, for that family are from the County of Norfolk, England, but their exact relationship to the Thomas of Lynn is unknown.

Captain Townsend gives in his Genealogy of Thomas of Lynn the full historical connection of that family with the families of historical record in England; he was a cousin of the Winthrops, Cloptons, Forths, mentioned in the Winthrop papers; a great number of wills are printed showing this connection, and it is important to notice that it was owing to the Townsend researches of Charles

into the Newgate family connection. He went to England on the mention in John Newgate's Will of his brother-in-law, Thomas Townsend of Lynn, with aid of Colonel Joseph Chester, D. C. L. It was found that the original home of the Newgates, or Newdigates, was at Great Horningsheath, in Suffolk County, England, where preceding generations had lived, about forty miles from Holkham, in Norfolk where some of the family had been long established. The name of Newgate isfound there as early as 1400. In 1433 a certain William Newgate is mentioned as being seized of a messuage. Hessett, in Suffolk, is six miles from Bury St. Edmunds. Horningsheath is two miles south-west from Bury St. Edmunds.

Hence your Plymouth ancestry from Hessett in Suffolk was but eight miles from this family of Hergate, or Newdigate, at Worlingsheath. There having been but one family of "gentlemen" of the name of Newdigate, those of Norfolk and Suffolk, England, came of an early branch of that family, who first settled in Surrey County from Reigate, in that County. Sir John Newdigate having served in the wars of Edward Third in France, received the honor of Knighthood, and had a fluer de lis granted him as a crest. By his marriage to Joanna, daughter of William de Swanland, he acquired the Manor of Harefield, in Middlesex, which he exchanged for Arbury, in Warwick County. In 1654 his descendant was Mr. Justice Newdigate, who displeased Oliver Cromwell in some way, but at the Restoration was made a Baronet by King Charles Second, and his son brought back the ancient Manor of Harefield, in Middlesex, and more manors in Warwick.

This branch, now represented by Lt. Gen. Edward Newdigate Newdugate, Governor of Bermuda, and his brother, Francis William, late Lieutenant Colonel of the Coldstream Guards, . The first known ancestor of the Suffolk branch was William [illegible] of Ickworth two and a half miles from Bury St. Edmund, whose wife was Katherine; had children Robert and Richard. Robert, the younger,and Elizabeth all under sixteen in 1528. Robert the elder, of Suffolk, Yoeman--these yoemen were often younger sons of gentlemen, or men who became farmers of landsand could sustain the Arms of the family and intermarry into heraldic families. Owing to the Wars of the Roses many families of gentry went into trade as these Newgates did, in London--so we havecthis Robert Newdigate the elder, marry Thomasine ------who was buried 1599. They had Philippe, Robert, and Anne. Their eldest son, Philippe Newgate, married, 1578, Joanne, daughter of Walther Walter Woo, of Hessett, County of Suffolk, a large landowner in Hessett and Ringham, who was buried there, 1636. We have given this Hessett record in that of the Tilley family of thecMayflower, 1620.

Here you come back to your own again, as it were. Joanne Woo Newgate was buried, 1620. Their children were, as far as can

be found, John, born at Southwark, London Bridge, about 1580, [illegible] ancestor of the Newdigate stock. Audrey, or Edreda, or Etheldreda, 1581. John the younger, whose will we have given, 1610. [illegible] Maultster of Bury St. Edmunds, who left property to [illegible], his elder brother of same given name. His widow married [illegible] Frost. Another brother was Joseph, who died after 1642. The will of Phillipe Newgate "bequeathed all to his daughter Audrey, he makes her executor." One of the witnesses was John Newgate.

In England Mr. John Newdigate was a landed proprietor as shown by will. He came to Boston, 1632, with wife and six children.. He had been living in the parish of St. Olave, near London Bridge, when the records of his family were found. His house in Boston was oón the west slope of Beacon Hill, a little east of Cambridge Street. His children married into the best families of Boston, and his descendants the Lyndes, Winthrops, Lowells, Olivers, Walters, Temples, Ervings, Valentines and other noted lines have maintained their dignity in Massachusetts and Connecticut.

Mr. John Newdigate had three wives; first, Lidia -----, who died 1620; secondly, Thomasine Hayes, whom he married in All Hallows Church, London Wall, and who died, 1625; and thirdly, Anne, then a Widow Draper, who had been Widow Hunt, and who survived her thirdvhusband, John Newdigate, dying, 1679. By his first marriage he had two sons and one daughter, Elizabeth, who married first, Rev. John Oliver, first minister at Rumney Marsh, Chelsea, and secondly, she married, 1646, Edward Jackson, of Newton, then known as Cambridge Village. Her first husband was a graduate of Harvard, 1645; was carried off at age of thirty by a fever, 1646, a most estimable man. Governor Winthrop says of him, his will mentions "[illegible] and Reverend fathers, Mr. Thomas Oliver, and Mr. John Newgate."

By his second wife, Mr. John Newgate had a daughter, Sarah, baptized, 1621, who married Captain Peter Oliver, and a son John, 1624. Peter Oliver was a brother of Rev. John. He was an eminent merchant and one of the founders of the Third Church. He died 1670, the first on the long roll of the old South Church. His wife became a member of that church and died 1692.

Mr. John Newdigate had three wives; first, Lydia -----,

[illegible] his [illegible] Mr. [illegible] [illegible], [illegible], [illegible], [illegible], [illegible]. [illegible] [illegible] Nathaniel, [illegible] [illegible] of [illegible]. [illegible], Mrs. Ann Newgate, survived [illegible] [illegible]d fourteen years. The will of Mrs. Anne Newga[illegible].

"I Anne Newgate, widow, being now well stric[illegible], etc., I bequeathe unto Nathaniel, my son Nathaniel's son. [illegible] grand-daughters Elizabeth Lynde, silver girdal; Nathaniel Lynde, silver plate; my gold rings to be divided among the children of my son and daughter Lynde. Jonathan and Lewis Jackson twenty shillings each ; to my maid, Hannah Smith, twenty shillings; and George Hale, my servant, ten shillings.

Witnessed by,

Mrs. Penelope Bellingham
and
Anne Manning Gerrish, 1679.

This Penelope was born Pelham, sister of Herbert Pelham. Her nephew, Edward Pelham had married Godgift, the daughter of Benedict Arnold and had inherited the old mill at Newport. Perhaps Edward Pelham of Newport, her nephew, was the means of drawing Nathaniel Newgate, mentioned in this will, to Newport, where he lived and died, as did Edward pelham also. Their niece , Penelope Pelham , married Governor Josiah Winslow, of Plymouth, and Elizabeth, her sister is buried at Green Harbor near Daniel Webster's tomb; there may have been some kinship we know not of, as the Townsends some of them lived at Newport at this time also, as also at Warwick.

Herbert pelham, brother of Mrs. Bellingham was buried in Suffolk, England. The Anne Manning Gerrish was kinswoman of the Newdigates of Suffolk.

The will of Nathaniel, 1668, mentions his ship, showing him as a ship owner. Leaves his lands in New England to son Nathaniel, his only child living. He died at Greenwich, England, September 1[illegible]th, 1668; buried at St. Olaves Parish, London Bridge.

Of Nathaniel Third, he lived at Newport, and later was of Warwick. His house still is standing. In 17[illegible]7 he was of a

"Commission on Laws", described as gentleman, freeman, 1720; 1751 is recorded as signing a petition. He died, 17 6, and was buried beside his wife, Sarah nee Lynde. The epitaph on his grave is,

"Here lies interred the Body of Nathaniel Newdiagte, late of Warwick, on the last day of January, A. D. 1746, in the eighty-third year of his age. He was a noted and famous Attorney at Law in this Colony, an able, skillful gentleman."

His wife's stone:-

"Hic jacet Sarah charissima uxor Nathanielis Newdigate armigeri et filia Simonis Lynde, nuper Boston, Mercatori, Obiit 13 Julii, A. D. 1727, aetat 55."

They had one child, a daughter Isabella surviving, who married Thomas Mumford, and removed to Warwick, R. I. Sarah was third daughter of Simon and Hannah Newdigate Lynde, and his first cousin. They married 1688. Chief Justice Seward mentions, "Mr. Nathaniel Newgate marries Mr. Lynde's daughter before Mr. Ratcliffe with Church of England ceremonies. Mr. Patson and Mr. Farwell, his pridemen; a great wedding."

He named his children after the Lewis family, viz., Isabella1692; Lewis, 1697; John, 1700; at his death the name became extinct here, and in England, save in the Warwick County family alone, as mentioned, the name has disappeared in England and here.

Genealogy of Hoo Family of Suffolk. Arms, "Quarterly, sable and argent, a bend or".

The family of Hoo were of Saxon origin in County of Kent, in Henry First time and onwards the family spreads from Kent, where Edrich de Hoo was donor to Church of St. Andrew, Henry First time, By a long and noble line of intermarriages with ancient families [illegible] given, as of the daughters of Carle de Anderville, of Normandy, and a daughter of Fulk , Lord Fitz Warrine, of John St. Leger.

Sir William Hoo an important man, Edward Third, Richard Second and Henry Fourth's time, Captain General, etc. "John of Hoo" had as wife, Katherine, daughter and heir of Reynold Tylly. In Burke's Genealogical Armory are given Arms to the name of Tylley and Tylly of Hessett.

His wife's stone:-

[illegible]

[illegible] A. D. 1727, aetat 85."

They had one child, a daughter Isabella surviving, who

[illegible] daughter of Simon and Hannah Newdigate Lyttle, and his first

cousin. They married 1688. Chief Justice Seward mentions, "Mr.

[illegible] Church of England ceremonies. Mr. Paston and Mr. Norwell,

[illegible] Treheron; a great wedding."

He named his children after the Lewis family, viz., Is-

[illegible]ella; Lewis, 1697; John, 1700; at his death the name became

[illegible]. Anne, as mentioned, the name has disappeared in England and here.

Genealogy of Noo Family of Suffolk. Arms, "Quarterly,

[illegible] and argent, a bend cr."

The family of Noo were of Saxon origin in County of Kent,

[illegible] Henry First time and converts the family spreads from Kent, where

[illegible] de Noo was donor to Church of St. Andrew, Henry First time,

[illegible] long and noble line of intermarriages with ancient Suffolk

[illegible] given, as of the daughters of Earle de Auberville, of Normandy,

[illegible] a daughter of Yuk, Lord Pits "arrive," of John St. Lyser.

Sir William Noo an important man, Edward Third, Richard

[illegible] and Henry Fourth's time, Captain General, etc. "John of

[illegible] had as ite, Katherine, daughter and heir of Reynold Tilly.

Will of [illegible] of Hoo, [illegible], proved [illegible], and [illegible] of Walter Hoo, [illegible], proved [illegible]; [illegible] in the History of Hessett, and [illegible] Hoo family pedigree, pages [illegible]. [illegible] Lord of Hessett, County of Suffolk, a long will in the ancient manner [illegible] speaks of wife Katherine, who was daughter of Reynolds [illegible] orders and makes "my executor Syrre Wat'r. hoõ," (Sir Walter Hoo). Page 497, Volume 1, Salisbury Genealogy. This Robert Hoo, [illegible] son had wife Agnes, who joined with him in gifts of font to the Church of St. Ethelbert. He died, 1519, childless, apparently. This may be seen in church at Hessett. It is given here to prove kinship of Sir Walter Hoo to the Hoo family of Hessett. Other gifts from Hoo family to church. The Church of Hessett is dedicated to St. Ethelbert, [illegible] the chapel. [illegible] of the chapel is written in black letter along the cornice, this following:- "Pray for the [illegible] of John Hoo and [illegible] the gweche hat mad y chapel aswery deyl heytejend y westry and [illegible]." [illegible] are on all parts of the building.

The will of Henry Hoo was proved, 1538; witnesses, Walter Hoo and Edmund Hoo. Among St. Edmund's Wills is one of William Hoo of (Heghset) Hessett, 1541; gives legacies to [illegible] of Heghset Church. Signed by John Hoo, [illegible] (Sh[illegible]) [illegible], and Robert Hoo; were probably brothers.

Our search in deeds, wills, pegigrees and histories, shows that Sir Robert Hoo, Knight, [illegible] 1[illegible], and granted tenements in [illegible], 1[illegible], [illegible] Knight, son of Robert Hoo and [illegible], daughter of [illegible] family, whose grandson, Sir William de Hoo, Knight, [illegible] Mulbarton, Norfolk, when he died, 1410. We find that in 1312, William de Hoo was Sacristan of the Monastery, and Archdeacon of Bury St. Edmunds, [illegible] in possession of the manor of Hoo, [illegible] in several counties the name of the 'Manor of Hoo' is to be found, being branches of this family.

Sir Thomas Hoo was created a Baron, 1485, County of Bedford. Sir Robert Hoo held large estates at Rougham and Hessett, where was a family seat bearing from very early times the title of Hoo. The will of Walter Hoo, dated 1567, registered at Bury St. Edmunds, leaves land, freehold at Hessett, Brighton and "Rougham Hall." Mentions John, Jeremy, and Joane. The Old English is almost not understandable, so not given, but may be seen in Townsend and Salisbury Genealogies. John, Robert and Walter appear most frequently in the different branches of the family.

From the Townsend researches in Hessett, Rougham, and Bury St. Edmunds it seems that your Walter Hoo married Agnes Lockwood in 1561; she died; 1566 aged about eighty. She was his second wife, and not the mother of his children. His grandson, John, baptized 1603, married Judith -----. This last John, by will, 1662, transmitted his family property to wife Judith, all lands and buildings in Rougham for life, but "if she marry, then, John, his son, to have them. To son Robert, to son Thomas, to son William, to daughter Judith--ten pounds to each. Proved, 1668.

The same names as in Sir Robert's family. According to the theory of the editors on the ancestry of Joane Hoo, wife of Phillipe Newgate, and mother of John Newgate, of Boston, while she did not inherit any of the landed property, she inherited from her father, Walter Hoo, a descent from the ancient family of Hoo, of Bedfordshire, with ancient and noble descent on the female side. We would have had a right to bear the Arms of that family, "Quarterly sable and argent;" the Suffolk branch adding a "bend or", to the former.

We have therefore accepted the latter as the Arms of the Hessett family of Joane Hoo.

"In tracing these lines of Nesdigates and Foos we had not expected to make so minute a search in the ancient records, but have been led on by the genealogical and historical interest attached to them. It is seldom that any ancestry but that of the chief line of a family can be traced so far back in England. Townsend Gene-

[illegible] probably a brother- in law to John Woo; they built Wessett Church, and [illegible], Joane, married Phillipe Newdigate of Horningsheath, County of Suffolk, December 13th, 1578, father of John of Boston, and father-in-law of Thomas Townsend, of Lynn, who married Mary Newdigate.

The coming back in this line of ancestry to the same source, viz., Wessett is curious. You remember that Elizabeth Tilley, who with John Howland, came over in the Mayflower, indded were married on the ship, so it is said, came from this section, and in this genealogy of Woo is mingled that of Tilley, and the Scott family at Bungay bought a manor of Elizabeth Howland, daughter of John Howland, 1666. The names of Scott, Stanton, Cooke, Rede, Cailey, Howard, Humfrey, Bradstreet, Bacon, Cooper, Sampson, all mingle more or less here. Indeed of three hundred years of New England have been accompanied by so many intermarriages of kin, how much more a thousand years of Saxon and Norman England with its very limited population. It seems almost of course that all families of any position above serfs, and later even those families, intermarried as they rose or fell in the scale of life at their time.

As of this it may be interesting to know of land tenure at the early times here treated of. Page 495 of Salisbury, Volume 1.

These lands of Ringham had been given to the Abbey by Earl Ulfketel, and were leased for centuries by the family of Woo with the great amount of land in proportion to the number of inhabitants . The people of this country knew little of the foreign system of perpetual lease. In England a copyright was descendable "when the custom of the manor so permitted." A freehold estate was transmissable to the heirs of the tenant in possession following the laws of inheritance.

The rents of the lands of the Monastery of Bury St. Edmunds were low, the monks easy, and the tenants of centuries had almost as much dignity as owners of the land would have. Before the Reformation the Church held most of this land, after that it

was granted by the king to certain favorites, or self for consideration to estates.

The family of Tilley was very ancient. The arms may be seen in Burke's General Armory, as of several branches-Tillie, Tilly, Tilley, "Argent a cross potence between four crescents of the second degree," and the Tilleys of the western counties have changed from this.

The first Tilley came in with William, and his name is included in those of Battle Abbey, as also the Caileys, two ancestral names from this section. One Tilley Genealogy makes the great General of the Thirty Years War as of this family, but of that, as of the descent from that Tilley of Battle Abbey, the writer has no personal knowledge other than these statements.

The Townsend Genealogy of Captain Townsend, of New Haven, has all the Wills of Newdigates and Hoo in full, with much of the intermarriages of families connected in those generations, collected in England by himself.

Printed in England by Bimpeli.

Additional to Hobby-Cooch Genealogy, and to show that Sir Charles Hobby's daughter, Mary, born, 1700, as stated, who had guardian-ship, 1716, the following is additional, from Hubbard Genealogy, Page 56. Zaccharias Hubbard married for first wife, May 1 1720, Mary Hobby, who died 1720, and was buried by the Rev. Dr. Cooper, and had Mary, born, 1722; Elizabeth, born 1725; Zachariah, 1726, and Charles Hobby, born 1730, killed in the War of the Revolution at Montressor's Island, New York. The name here given him by his mother, Mary Hobby, was in honor of her father, Sir Charles Hobby, and sets at rest fully the report of Savage and other historians, that Sir Charles Hobby died childless, which would have refused his fatherhood to your ancestress, Elizabeth Hobby, sister of the foregoing Mary, both being daughters of Sir Charles Hobby, who died 1715. For further and additional testimony as to the connection of Gooch with Hubbard families of Boston, we have on same page, Thomas Hubbard, born 1656, died 1717, Deacon of First Church, married Mary Tuthill, daughter of John and Mary Holyoke Tuthill, and sister of Lieutenant Zachariah Tuthill, born 1669, died 1721; a founder of Brattle Street Church, and lieutenant of the Castle William, Boston Harbor. Their sister, Sarah Tuthill, married, November 1st 1702, James Gooch for his third wife.

John Hubbard, a son of Thomas, and brother of Zachariah Hubbard, who married Mary Hobby, 1722, married November 26th, 1714 Elizabeth Gooch, born 1698. He was a wealthy felt-maker, and mariner, and called Captain, and with his brother Zachariah, was executor of their mother's will, 1720. His will probated, 1754, bequeathed to children, James, Thomas, Sarah, Tuthill, Joseph, Susanna and Elizabeth, £50 pounds each, and residue of estate to wife, Elizabeth Gooch. His estate was four thousand, six hundred pounds and he mentions his Coat of Arms. This widow, Elizabeth Gooch Hubbard, now a rich woman, married John Franklin, brother of the celebrated Benjamin Franklin. This Franklin died, 1756. He was Deputy Postmaster of Boston, and a tallow chandler, and lived at the hubbard mansion, #45 Cornhill Street, which went to her son James Hubbard.

Her children by her husband, [illegible] Hubbard, [illegible], James who married and had children. One son, [illegible] Hubbard, became a prominent merchant and Postmaster of Boston, 1770-71. His executor was William Gooch. His estate inventoried [illegible]-five thousand and pounds. Some descendants of John and Elizabeth Gooch Hubbard are now living in Brookline, Massachusetts, and bear name Hubbart.

On Page 58, Hubbard Genealogy, is copy of an autograph letter of Benjamin Franklin's, dated, Philadelphia, February 10th, 1756, condoling with Elizabeth Gooch Hubbard Franklin on the loss by death, of his brother, John, written in the style of the Philosopher he was.

There is no record of the family of Zachariah Hubbard further than of the son Charles Hobby Hubbard. It does not state what became of the children, Mary, Elizabeth and Zachariah, but it says that after Mary Hobby Hubbard died, he married secondly, [illegible] Kingman.

The tomb of Thomas Hubbard is Lot #158, "Old Granary Burying Ground." In that tomb are several of the family buried. The interesting part here is the proof of the identity of Mary Hobby, sister of your Elizabeth Hobby, being proved in that she named her son Charles Hobby Hubbard, and [illegible] marriages of the families. First, James Gooch who married, 1702, Sarah Tuttle; then his daughter, Elizabeth Gooch, born 1685, in 1714 married John Hubbard, brother of the Zachariah who married Mary Hobby, 1722, and as stated in the Gooch Genealogy, James Gooch, her brother, married Elizabeth Hobby of your line.

Thus by the Hubbard Genealogy we have proof of my contention that Sir Charles Hobby had daughters--Elizabeth, who married James Gooch, 1715, and Mary, who married Zachariah Hubbard, 1722.

Marriage of James Gooch to Elizabeth Hobbie was made by Rev. Mr. Benjamin Coleman, September 30th, 1715, and the marriage of Zachariah Hubbard and Mary Hobby was by Rev. Benjamin Coleman, May 15th, 1722, showing both marriages by the same minister, while John Hubbard married Elizabeth Gooch by Rev. Thomas Prince, 1714.

The marriage intentions of Zachariah Hubbard, the son of

[illegible] Mary Hubbard, to Mary Atchinson, of Dover, 1730. James Hubbard and Anna Towne were married by Rev. Samuel Checkley, 1756 and they left numerous descendants. Tuthill Hubbard died unmarried, and left a great estate, several stores in Cornhill Street. Joseph, another brother married Elizabeth Pierce, 1739. Nathaniel Hayes married Susanna Hubbard, 1736. Nehemiah Robins married Elizabeth Hubbard, 1746. Sarah married Thomas Fayerweather, 1756. Thomas Hubbard married Judith Loy of Hartford, [illegible] of the Block Island family, 1730, they had children and are mentioned in the Hubbard Genealogy, pages 56-58. These are the marriages of the children of Elizabeth Gooch Hubbard.

As there are six Mary Hubbards married in this list, it is impossible for me to say which was the Mary, daughter of Mary Hobby Hubbard, and there were two Elizabeths. One can go to the family of John; that leaves one to the family of Zachariah and Mary.

Benjamin Fowdan married Elizabeth Hubbard by Rev. Joseph Sewall, 1743. So it appears all of Mary Hobby's children married, probably, save only Charles Hobby Hubbard, killed at Contressor's Island, in War of the Revolution. This name is not in list of marriages in Boston; his name is not in list of Revolutionary soldiers. Was he a Tory?

The foregoing list shows that my contontien appears right in that Sir Charles Hobby left children. One of them was your ancestress, Elizabeth, who married James Gooch, 1714. And it appears then, that as descendants of Sir Charles Hobby you have inherited a share in his claim to one-half the State of New Hampshire as derived from the Plymouth Company of England, which rights were bought by Sir Charles Hobby, 1706, and have never been settled, either by the Province of New Hampshire, nor the State, nor by individuals--hence your claim is yet unsettled to one-half the State.

It seems necessary to give this post-script to make more certain the Hobby claim as coming to you, not only as a descendant of Sir Charles, who was a man of great note and action of his time, but who has been improperly criticised, and whom some historians

said was childless, particularly Tavares. It may be that by Laporte-ing him, and keeping him ill childless, some very good people of New Hampshire thought it no wrong to defeat any payment [illegible] for his proprietary rights, although at one time the Council of that colony had offered two thousand pounds, and five thousand acres of land to the heirs of Mason. Altogether I feel that a serious wrong was undoubtedly done to the heirs of Sir Charles Hobby by a colony which owed its foundation to the energy of Major John Mason in its early days. When at last it could repay the debt without hardship it refused utterly and with scorn.

This post-script has cleared up somewhat the close relationship between the Gooch, Hubbard and Hobby families, and the marriage of Elizabeth Gooch, Widow, to John Franklin, whose mother was Abiah Folger, of Nantucket. As Tuthill Hubbard was her son, and Franklin's stepson, we can see why Benjamin Franklin, Postmaster, General for the Colonies, appointed first his brother John Postmaster at Boston, and later his step-son, Tuthill Hubbard.

So you will find by careful study of the foregoing Genealogy that the children of Thomas Valentine, of Hopkinton, when in Boston were among kinsmen, who were either among the wealthiest merchants, as John Gooch, Tuthill Hubbard, Colonel Joseph Gooch, the lawyer, The Chief Justices Lynde, and Oliver--the Deputy Governor's Oliver, who were intermarried with Governor Hutchinson's family. So the highest legal and executive authorities, with the postmasters the rich merchants, and many of them kinsmen, as [illegible], etc.

The Pickmans of Salem descended from your ancestor the Widow Tabitha of Anthony Dike, who married secondly Nathaniel Pickman of Salem, and had several children whose descendants appear in intermarriages in these genealogies with other Salem families, as Pickerings, Pynchons, Brownes, etc.

At the outbreak of the Revolution many of the Oliver family who were most prominent in wealth and official position, went into exile. See Appleton's Encyclopaedia for an account of the Olivers who made themselves worthy of notice, in its pages, with

Hutchinsons, descendants of Anne Hutchinson.

The Boston marriages and births in the years from 1700 to 1800 contain many of your kinsmen under names of Ballard, Bacon, Oliver and Hubbard, and with their inter-marriages extend indefinitely. Of Hobby there are but few records, Wensley is the latest, a descendant of John, a brother of your Sir Charles.

Of Gorhams, Aldens, Prince, Delano, many; of Brewster, few. However, it is safe to say that very many of Boston's chief citizens are among your kinsmen there, and who can say how many elsewhere? The charts published and the genealogies do not have any full list of the lines, for many well known and influential families have not thought it worth their while to complete their genealogical records for publication, hence they are not to be found in libraries of reference.

APPENDIX A. B. C. D.

In the Borough of Brooklyn, City of New York.
On a monumental shaft in Greenwood cemetery on the sixth side of it may be seen the following : from left to right:

ALBYN V. DIKE
Born March 2, 1801 — Died October 27, 1869.

PHEBY ANN DIKE
Born January 23, 1802. — Died June 5, 1881

ELLA A DIKE
Born July 22, 1838 — Died April 6, 1872

Headstones, A. V. D. E. A. D.
A. V. DIKE

CAMDEN CROSBY DIKE
Born September 18, 1832 — Died October 11, 1894

Headstone, C. C. D.

C. C. DIKE

OSCAR D. DIKE

Born July 10, 1823 — Died June 18, 1879

HELEN STEARNS DIKE

Born June 25, 1862 — Died February 26, 1864

Headstone O. D. D.
Headstone Helen Stearns Dike, 1864

O. D. DIKE

NORMAN STEARNS

Born May 31, 1823 — Died July 22, 1872

EDITH HELEN STEARNS

Born July 2, 1869 — Died April 18, 1898

Headstone N. S.
Headstone E. H. S.

STEARNS

HENRY ALBYN DIKE
Born September 5, 1824 — Died July 19, 1887.

LIZZIE MILLER DIKE
Born September 9, 1837 — Died December 10, 1889

Headstone H. A. D. -- L. M. D.

H. A. DIKE

Meadstone M. A. D. -- L. L. D.

Born September 6, 1844 Died July 12, 1902.

Born May 21, 1850 Died Jan. 10,

Born July 5, 1859 Died Apr. 11 16, 1896

Born July 10, 1853 D.ed June 16, 1899

Born September 13, 1835 Died October 22,

Born July 22, 1806

Born 1 Mar, 18, 1800.

APPENDIX B.

JAMES PRINCE DIKE

Born March 18, 1827 Died March 31, 1894

HATTIE ALLEN
wife of James Prince Dike
Born October 7, 1827 Died May 2, 1891

Headstone J. P. D.
" H. A. D.

J. P. DIKE

At the north end of the plot is the family monument of the parents of the wife of Henry A. Dike her brother who died a student at Amherst College, and her cousin William M. Miller , who married Sarah Alice Dike, a daughter of Albyn V. Dike and a sister of the brothers, Helen J. Stearns and Ella A. Dike.

Monumental Shaft

SETH P. MILLER

of

Worcester, Mass.

Died December 18, 1868, aged 59 years.

JOSEPH C. B. MILLER

of

Worcester, Mass.

Died December 11, 1866., in the 19th year of his age.

ELIZABETH C. B MILLER
of
Worcester, Mass.

Died April 19, 1874, aged 64 years.

WILLIAM M. MILLER

Born October 29, 1835 Died April 8, 1879

Ethel
S. P. M. E.C.B. M. J.C.B. M. W.M.M.
Ethel

On the following pages will be given the present condition of these various families, and where located without reference to dates, of birth or marriage, the dates of borth and

Monumental Sheet

and marriage corrected to date of the foregoing :
Albyn Valentine Dike , born March 2, 1801 at Thompson, Conn.
died at Manuet, N. Y. his summer home October 22, 1869,
Phebe Ann Dike, born January 23, 1802, daughter of James Prince
Providence, R. I. died at Manuet, N. Y. Rockland County June
6, 1881, married at Providence, R. I. 1820, children (10)
1. Oscar Dermid Dike, born at Providence where all the children
were born July 10, 1822, ~~died~~ died at Manuet, June 18, ~~1879~~ 1879
2. Henry Albyn Dike, born September 6, 1824, died at Montclair,
N. J. July 19, 1887,
3. James Prince Dike, born at March 18, 18~~2~~7 , died at Brooklyn,
N. J. March 31, 1894,
4. Frederick Valentine Dike born January 31, 1831, died
at Highland , Kansas, May 5, 1898,
5. Camden Crosby Dike, born September 18, 1832, died at Point
Pleasant, N. J. October 11, 1894,
6. Helen Josephine Dike, born November 6, 1833, ~~died~~
married Norman Stearns , now living at Pasadena, Cal. a widow.
7. Sarah Alice Dike born September 26, 1835, married William M.
Miller, now living in New York City, a widow,
8. Ella A. Dike born July 22, 1838, died at Manuet April 16, 1872
died in infancy, Helen - and Ann
Full family record of the foregoing children
Oscar Dermid Dike married Frances Lowe, , their children as
follows:
1. Cornelia A. Dike now a teacher in the Wadleigh School, 114
Street, New York
2. Frances Lowe Dike unmarried, lives at home with her mother
157 Street & Audubon Park .
3. Anderson Dike married, lives at Seattle , Washington, has
four children the eldest a daughter, lives at Audubon park, with
the grand mother, the three others are boys, young in years,
living with their parents at Seattle,
4. Oscar Dermid Dike, unmarried in the real estate business
in New York,
5. Herbert, Dike unmarried, a partner with the foregoing
6. Harold, a professor in the Mass. School of Technology/
7. Helen Stearns Dike, deceased 1864,

Record of ~~Henry~~ Henry Albyn Dike, married Lizzie Miller
at Worcester, Mass., their children-both being deceased are
1. Florence Blanchard Dike married James Bronson Reynolds
founder of the East Side University Settlement, Private Secre-
tary to Mayor Low and assistant secretary of the Treasury under
President Roosevelt, who was his intimate friend and supporter,
in the University Settlement work; these live at Central Park West,
and 75th Street, without children,
2. Alice, Dike, unmarried who spends the greater part of her time
in European travel, but now temporarily a resident of New York.

Record of James Prince Dike third child, married 1854
at Brooklyn, N. Y. Hattie Allen, born at Belchertown, Mass. children
1. Albyn Prince Dike born April 30th, 1855
2. Eugene Allen Dike, bon January 28, 1857, unmarried,
3. James Prince Dike, Jr., bom May 22, 1859,
4. Harrison Dike, born March 28, 1865,

Of the above Albyn Prince Dike, married at Quitman, Mo .
July 17, 1888, Ora Huff, their children,

APPENDIX D.

Children of ~~James~~ Albyn Prince Dike and OkalkaHuff :

1. James Prince Dike, born Omaha, Neb., September 27, 1889,
2. Margherita Dike born Omaha ? Neb. May 2, 1891 children of the third child of James Prince Dike, Sr., namely: James Prince Dike, Jr., married at Chicago, Ill. October 2, 1895 , to Kitty Printz, no children,

Harrison Dike married and has four children, living in the suburbs of New Jersey,

Record of the fourth child of Albyn V. Dike, namely: Frederick Valentine Dike, married in 1852, in New York, Catherine Ann Sullivan, their children born at Nanuet Rockland County, N. Y.

1. Henry Albyn Dike, born April 20, 1855, died at Chicago, Ill. May 24, 1908,
2. Josephine Valentine Dike, born June 21, 1858,
3. Anna Prince Dike , born April 18, 1861,
4. Frederick Valentine Dike, Jr, born July 21, 1865,
5. Helen Dike, died in infancy of these Henry Albyn Dike married August 23, 1882, at Barre, Vt. Fanny Deborah Carleton, their children,

1. Henry Albyn Dike, Jr, born Chicago, October 4, 1883, died November 9, 1883,
2. Fanny Carleton Dike, born December 25, 1885,
3. Mary Wheeler Dike, born January 15, 1891, at the time of his death Henry Albyn Dike, was engaged in the Western adjustment and inspection Company Chicago, Ill. much respected by his fellow officials in that organization.

Josephine Valentine Dike, married March 1, 1865 at Highland, Kansas, Frederick Henry Simmons, their children

1. Henry Elliott Simmons, born November 27, 1885,, died at Highland Kansas, June 25, 1906,
2. Helen Dike Simmons born November 21, 1886,
3. Edward Valentine Simmons Born February 24, 1892, died November 24, 1894,

Anna Prince Dike, married at Highland Kansas, February 24, 1885, to Philip Dodridge, Dickerson, their children,

1. Frederick Marion Dickerson, born November 28, 1885,
2. Henry Alfred Dickerson, born February 4, 1888,
3. Phillip Dike Dickerson, born February 3, 1898,
4. Oma Josephine Dickerson, born November 15, 1901, died June 18, 1902,
5. Albyn Dickerson, born June 19, 1903, died July 31, 1904,

The fourth child Frederick Valentine Dike Jr, married September 9, 1886, HighlandKansas, Frankie Davidson, children

1. Lillie Ethel Dike born Highland, January 16, 1888, died December 23, 1904,
2. Roy Norman Dike, born Severance Kansas, February 4, 1889,
3. Alvaretta Dike, born Highland February 23, 1891,
4. Ababe born Springfield, Mo., February 27, 1895, died in infancy.
5. Anna Lula Dike, Highland June 4, 1894,
6. Lawrence Morrison Dike, born Nortonville, Kansas, April 5, 1896,
7. Hannah Catherine Dike, born Highland, March 7, 1898,

Of F. V. Dike, family, the following are grandchildren living, two of Henry A. one of Josephine V., three of Anna Prince five of F. V. Jr,

Telephone Vedenties Dike,

APPENDIX E.

The family record of Camden Crosby Dike, who married February 5, 1857, Jeannie Deanes Scott, at Attica, N. Y. with three children,

1. Norman Staunton unmarried, now County Judge, of Kings County, Borough of Brooklyn, living with his mother a widow at 194 Columbia Heights,

2. Ada Miriam, married to Murray D. Boock now residing at Cattelia — Keswick, Albermarle County, Va., with two children both sons namely Lawrence and Carroll, Boocook.

3. Jessie Scott,Dike, married to Dr. G. C. F. Williams, of Hartford, Conn., where they reside now having one son Staunton Williams, the actual dates of the foregoing may be found from the index of the Dike Geneology. The sixth child of Albyn V Dike Helen Josephine Dike, married Norman Stearns, she is now a widow living in Pasadena, Cal. she has by her husband, four children

1. Henry Albyn Stearn, married and living in Pasadena, Cal., with two daughters,

2. Wyland Stearns, married living in Detroit, Mich., without children, both of these are connected with the Frederick Stearns Company, manufacturing Pharmacists and Chemists whose business connections are world wide the youngest son was also in the Stearns Company, but died in Detroit, after marriage and was buried there, leaving no children. The youngest daughter Edith graduated at Vassar College with honors, but died soon. Her body was buried beside her father in Greenwood. The record of Sarah Alice Dike, who married William M. Miller, she now resides in New York a widow, and with her reside her two children, both daughters, the eldest Alice Prince, (Elsie) a practising physician and of the Board of Health among physicians connected with the Public Schools, the youngest daughter Florence lives at home, a student of music, the daughter Ethel, deceased is buried in Greenwood beside her father. This closes the record of Albyn Valentine Dike, Sr. His brother Arba Ballard Dike and his sister Rhoda Joslin all removed at an early date to Providence R. I. from Thompson, Conn. The two brothers married cousins descended from Col. Eleazer Jenks. They soon became engaged in real estate and acted as auctioneers accumulating fortunes. Between 1840 and 1850 all the sons of these removed to New York City and engaged in business. The first to come was Oscar D. who became associated with Edward H. Nicoll who then was one of the most prominent merchants in the Indian trade in New York with his place of business at 67 - 69 Front Street. He resided at Stone Street, and laterly at 10 State Street . Not long after this Henry A. Dike, arrived and became associated with Joseph Ripley, at number 70 Pine Street, who resided then at 83 State Street, Brooklyn, and Mr. Henry Dike who resided in the same street at that time, about 1845, A year or two later James P. Dike came to N. Y. and joined his brother Oscar in the house of Edward H. Nicoll. Shortly afterwards Frederick V. came and a year or two later Camden C. came also, he being the last of the sons of Albyn Valentine Dike, he went into business in the auction house with William E. Willerding who then resided at Number 2 Bowling Green, next door to Stephen H Whitney then the rickest man in America. Within a short period Henry A. Dike, formed the firm of H. A. & H J. P. Dike, wool merchants, at 70 Pine Street, and two or three years later they associated themselves with their younger brother Camden C. Dike, forming

the firm of Dike Brothers, wool merchants at No. 66 Pine Street, which consisted of two stores, which remained standing to this day practically unchanged with numbers changed to 66 - 66-1/2 Pine Street, now being utilized as office buildings; it might be remarked in passing that Judge Norman S. Dike, for many years was a member of a dining club ~~of~~ consisting of merchants and ~~xx~~ lawyers who met there daily for their dinners. This firm of Dike Brothers continued in business there until 1865, and they removed to 46- 48 Barclay Street, and again removing later on to 148 Duane Street, Mr. Henry A. Dike, was extremely fortunate in early accumulation a competency and he retired from business in 1887, and ever after, spent his life, to some extent in travel abroad and the enjoyment of the wealth so early accumulated. His brother James P. continued in the firm until 1873, in the meantime Norman Stearns, who had married a sister, and Thomas Scott were admitted partners in 1868, Mr. Stearns died in 1872 and the firm was finally dissolved by the retirement of Camden C. Dike in 1887, continued later by Thomas Scott and Company until 1891, when the firm retired from business entirely. Mr. Oscar Dike, was admitted a full partner of the firm of S. T. Nicholl and Company formed after the death of Edward N. Nicholl, the firm continued for some years, until about 1855, when Solomon T. Nicholl retired with what was then considered a great fortune. The firm of Townsend Clinch and Dike successors was then formed, and continued in business until the death of Mr. Clinch and Mr. Townsend, left the business entirely to Oscar V. Dike, he continued until his death 1879, The early years mentioned namely 1840 to 1850, place us in a city of small proportion, all prominent merchants were so limited in number that of necessity they were personally acquainted. Brooklyn at this time was little more than a great village, as shown previously State St., Stone street lower Greenwich, Bowling Green and streets contiguous were then the streets occupied by the richest merchants, of the period, or those who had survived the great conflagration of 1835. The Dike brothers all resided in Brooklyn, and continued so to do after their marriages the first to marry was Oscar V. Dike who attended the church in Pierpont Street, known as that presided over by the celebrated Dr. Bethune, in the congregation was the family of Bauman Lowe, and Mr. Oscar Dike married Frances Lowe, of No. 56 Warren Street, and they commenced keeping house at 106 Warren Street, where they resided, until about 1865 when they removed finally to Nanuet, Rockland County, where it was his custom daily to come to the city to attend to his business, and there he died in 1899, his family now reside in 157th Street, Audubon Park, Mr. Henry A. Dike, married in Worcester, Mass., about 1859, Miss Lizzie Miller, and commenced house-keeping at 141 Amity Street, Brooklyn, where he resided until 1861, when he and his brother Camden C. Dike, built two houses at No. 194-196 Columbia Heights, they resided there until about 1870 when he removed to Montclair, N. J. where he built a large commodious country house in which he resided until death in 1887, leaving a widow and two daughters, the widow soon died, the oldest daughter Florence B., Dike, married James Bronson Reynolds, and now resides

Central Park West corner 75 Street, her sister Alice unmerried travels in Europe a greater part of the time, James Prince Dike, married 1854, Hattie Allen and resided first in Amity Street, and lastly at 30 Remsen Street, where he resided when his wife died and where he died. Two of his sons are now residentof Chicago, and two of New York . Camden C. Dike, married Jeannie Deans Scott, February 5, 1857, at Atica, N. Y. and with his brother Henry A.as mentioned built a house, 1871, at No. 194 Columbi Heights, where he had resided to the date of his death 1894 and where his widow now resides, with her her son, Judge Norman Staunton Dike, her two daughters being married, the elder Miriam who Murray Boocock, they have two sons, Lawrence and Carrol and reside at Castalia Keswick, Albemarle County, Va. A youngest daughter Jessie, Scott, Dike married G. C. F. Williams of Hartford, Conn. who was her fifth ~~cousin~~ by the Robert Williams descent of Roxbury, Mass. also a cousin by the Avery line, she has one son Staunton Williams, Frederick Valentine Dike, resided several years after leaving New York at Manuet later removed to Highland, Kansas where he resided at the time of his wife's death andhis own death 1898 his oldest son Henry A. Dike, died a year ago in Chicago, Ill., leaving a wife and children there as mentioned, theother children reside in Kansas, Mr. Henry A. Dike, was many years a member of the Rev. Henry Ward Beecher, Congregation at the time of his greatest personal power and ability as a speaker, Mr. Oscar V. Dike, as long as in Brooklyn was a member of the congregation of Rev. Dr. Bethune, who was as noted in his day as for his eloquence, and good fellowship, as was Mr. Beecher, Mr. James P. Dike and Mr. Camden C. Dike with their wives were members of the church of the Rev. Dr. Richard Salter, Storrs, It is worthy of note, that at this early period Brooklyn was agitated by small matters, themerchantile library and the elections of its officers, and directors, was then considered a matter of great importance, and men who later became important in their citizenship at that early period obtained their political experience in the electioneering campaign of the Merchantile Library Association, and the crowded floor of the office of Townsend, Clinch & Dike, where Mr. James Thorn at that time chief clerk was the central figure in these merchantile library contest and in this office would congregate Alexander Orr since such an important figure in the commercial life of the City of New York, Franklin Woodruff, and who also was a prominent figure in Brooklyn politics for so many years and others, were wont to congregate there andmake up the tickets, to be voted for in those strenuous elections, on which the life of Brooklyn was supposed to rely. It is curious to think that in so short a space of years, as from 1840 to 1850 when we saw the Bowling Green and the Battery as the center of social life, with the opera house then at Castle Garden, and the leaps and bounds social life and social residential centers in this city have taken since at the time. In Brooklyn, however, that part in which these men lived has changed but little, most of the old residents of that period or their descendants still continue the habitations then resided in. Although Brooklyn has grown in proportion to a much greater degree yet the conservatives of the old residence has continued, but the pulpits that were once filled by such men, as the Rev. Dr. Bethune

Rev. Henry Ward Beecher, Rev. Drs. Richard S. Storrs, Rev. Mr. Milburn, the blind preacher, who since has been for so many years the chaplain of congress, in the U. S. at Washington, Rev. Dr. Buddington, and others of almost equal ability, have passed away and their places and their pulpits have never been filled, with their equal in eloquence or intellectual ability. Brooklyn at that period was the Mecca of all religious strangers, & least if not the inhabitants itself, in New York, although at this time there were a few men like Dr. Chapin and others, as for instance Dr. Vinton, of Trinity, Church, but even he resided in Brooklyn, so that as a religious and intellectual center, which it has never and probably will never equal again. The wealth of that period was limited, Mr. Stephen Whitney, represented at his death the idea of enormous wealth although his estate was less than five millions of dollars, however, the port of New York, was then the center perse of American commerce, and it was carried in American ships, a foreign flag at a mast head was unknown in the port in those days, the only line the Cunard carried the British flag all sailing vessels, and when I say sailing vessels of the port it might be added of the entire Atlantic Coast, were American ships, railroads, were limited in number, and feeble in development, these ships carried the swift trade, of the Indies, to all parts of the world, the captains became millionaires, many of these resided in Brooklyn, in fact at this period it might well be called a clearing house, for American shipping and ship masters they lived in every street, but now they are mostly passed away. As the shipping did long ago; perhaps in nothing has there been such a change, as this in the shipping of the harbor of New York from that period to this, and it is a sad commentary upon the wisdom of the congress, of the U. S. which is about this result to obtain. Of this old firm of Nicholl-Townsend, Clinch and Dike, it is singularly historical, in that the Nicholls were descended from that Matthias who in the old colonial period was an English official here, and whose descendant DeLancy Nicholl grandson of Edward N. has been a prominent official in the city government, and is now a leading lawyer, his uncle Henry Nicholl a member of congress and president of the Bar Association of N. Y. for many years, of Mr. Townsend, he represents as he was proud to say, Oyster Bay in the constitutional convention of 1846, and it was in his house in Oyster Bay that Theodore Rosevelt for many years was a custom on Saturday nights to spend the evening there engaged in discussions with the Townsend boys who would often remark after he had gone, "well father you saw how me cornered Mr. Roosevelt there" Mr. Townsend and his nephew Solomon Townsend Nicholl each married his first cousin, the Townsend boys have developed into successful men, Charles married a very wealthy widow, Colonel Robert former Assist District Attorney now a practicing lawyer Solomon Jr, several times a member of the legislature and Henry resides with his brother Solomon in Oyster Bay. The second member of the old firm Mr. James Clinch, was a rare specimen of the old school of gentlemen. His brother Charles was for thirty years the first assistant collector of the port and the real active man of the office. Collectors came and went but never interfered with the administration as carried on by Mr. Clinch. Their sister was the wife of the great merchant

APPENDIX I

Mr. Alexander T. Stuart,. The Clinch family never anticipated that any of the Stewart fortune would devolve on them, but it did and those alive now enjoy a large amount of wealth received from that estate. The daughter of Mr. Clinch married Judge Lawrence Smith of Smithtown, L. I. Several daughters of this family as they grew to womenhood were taken into the household of Mrs. Stewart and ~~xxxx~~ married from there, those living now are Mrs. Prescott Hall Butler, and Mrs. McKim who as the widow of the lamented Stanford White, who had made such a name for himself as an Architect and died such a tragic death is so recent in our social history. The only son named James -Clinch-Smith in honor of his grandfather, who ~~xxx~~ he greatly resembles in personal appearance and character, as a perfect gentleman. The old auction house of Wilmerding and Hount, with which Mr. Camden C. Dike, was for a time associated, is now represented in theperson of John C. Wilmerding of the auction house of Wilmerding, Mitchell and Marsh. It was the custom in those early days, for laboring gentlemen of leisure to call even during business hours, and the office of Townsend, Clinch and Dike was a sort of rendevous for men of that kind in that day Mr. John Dore the son-in-law of Stephen Whitney was a frequent caller, ~~x~~ Don Alonzo ~~x~~ Cushman then engaged in building in what is now known as the Chelsea District where his great estate is held today, was another. Mr. Solomon T. Nicholl would call there was great care in dress, men wore gloves even in summer weather, when also they wore expensive Panama hats, white duck was a prevalent ~~xxxx~~ costume in summer among gentlemen. About 1850 Mr. S. T. Nicholl lived at 6 West 21st street, his brother Henry at 62 West 10 street, Mr. Townsend and Mr. Clinch at 99 and 101 Clinton Place, Mr. Stewart still lived in Bleeker Street where now stands Wills Hotel No. 1. From 1850 to 1860 Washington Square was the centre, as ten years before the Battery had been and ten years later, Madison Square was. Extravagance in living was rare, simple elegent, more common even that now; the gentlemen of that day were gentlemen indeed, and we find few of their equal at this hustling present. The kind regard and interests which Mr. Townsend and Mr. Clinch ever observed to all in their employ was characteristic of the time, the employees were many of them representatives of old families such as Thomas Lawrence, a brother of the present Justice Abraham R. Lawrence, John Dix the brother of the late Morgan Dix, James Thorne, whose father was a prominent official in the custom house, he ~~xxxxxx~~ a nephew of Mr. Townsend, made that old business office and epitome of the highest social relation of that time. The shipping of the old India trade lay along the wall on South Street from Coenties Slip to ~~x~~ Maiden Lane, the prows of the ships extended far out over South Street, facing the offices of many of the largest importing houses who nearly all had at that time, branches in China and India, Howland and Aspinwall, Moses Taylor & Company Curtis & Company, Aslow and Brothers, and other houses formerly at Salem in Mass; have removed from time to time, until the India trade once consented at Salem became transferred to N. Y. where it has remained to this day but is not conductive now in the old way.

APPENDIX J

Not long after the sons of Albyn Valentine Dike, had removed to New York the only son of his brother Arba Ballard Dike, William H. removed also, entered into the wool business at Pine street, but soon became a member of the stock exchange, forming the stock exchange house of Woolff, & Dike, Mr. Woolff had been a partner of Morse who was if anything a more spectacular man than the present Morse. The story went in theold days that in the exciting days he offered at a certain price for the entire capital stock of the Pittsburg & Fort Wayne Railroad quite as great a thing in those days in comparison with any of the operations of his namesake of these later days. The firm of Woolff & Dike continued for many years a prominent banking house in Wall street, after the death of Mr. Woolif Mr. Dike continued until his death. On his arrival here he lived in Brooklyn and married Miss Amelia Filmore, a step daughter of Mr. Colton a prominent auctioneer of those days who left a half sister now a teacher in the High School of Brooklyn, living at the Mansion House, M William H. Dike left at his death two daughters Emily the eldest married and living in the suburbs of N. J.,and Alice married and living in Providence, R. I., each have children two of the sisters of William H. Dike, came to reside in N. Y. with their husbands, one Mr. Faxon of the firm of Faxon and Ormsbee stock brokers, at one time,. Mr. Faxon retired and became resident partner of the house of Keith Brothersof Chicago, Mr. Ormsbee is one of the oldest living members of the stock exchange nw Christopher Wylie, husband of Charlotte Dike, the name of Mrs. Faxon was Mary Anna Dike, Mrs. Faxon now lives at 111 East 38th Street and Mrs. Wylie at 51 West 47 Street, each a widow. Mrs. Faxon had a son now deceased who left one son, Mrs. Wylie has one daughter unmarried. It is the custom of Mrs. Wylie and her daughter and of the daughters of William H. Dike to spend their summers in the old ancestral home at Thompson, Conn. where many of their kin still resice another daughter Emma lately deceased married Mr. McPherson, formerly of Chicago, but many years with H. B. Claflin & Company, before he retired and lived quietly near Great Barrington, Mass. The other daughter of Arba Ballard Dike, Lizzie married Mr. Sheldon of Providence and they lived there having one child, they too spend their summers at Thomson, the name of Dike is still to be found in Salem and vicinity and in the memoirs of Nathaniel Hawthorne and family we find the name of John Dike mentioned in letters as uncle John and cousin John a prominent wool merchant in Boston also of that name, Rev. Samuel W. Dike, resides at Newton, is prominent in socialistic spheres however, the name is not as frequently encountered now as it was a generation or more ago . About 18 60 Mr. Albyn Valentine Dike, now having all his children located in what is now greate r N. Y. removed to Brooklyn, and ,lived in Jorolomon Street, near Henry with his married daughter Mrs. Norman Stearns and there he was living at the time of his decease, but there are now but few of this family remaining in the Borough of Brooklyn, as mentioned beforethe greater number are now in the Borough of Manhattan. During the active years of the brothers, Henry A. James P. and Camden C. Dike in Brooklyn, they were prominently identified with the public movements were life members of many of the institutions

established during their lives. Mr. Camden C. Dike was for many years a director in the Merchantile Library Association, the South Brooklyn Savings Bank, one of the founders of the Kings County Bank and a life member of the Historical Society, the Art Association and other kindred institutions. Mr. Henry Dike was likewise a member of several of these as was his brother James P. William F. Dike their cousin was a prominent republican politician of the first ward, helf office there.

The ancestry of Frances Lowe, was identified with the earliest settlement on Hudson River, at Kingston, her ancestor Peter Cornelison - Lauw came from Holstein, 1658, to Esopus, (Kingston) married in 1668, Elizabeth Blanchan daughter of a Huguenot refugee, their son Abraham Lauw of Lowe, married also a daughter of a French refugee Lechior or Lozier who was in the first settlement at Harlem? Abraham Lowe was high sheriff, of Kingston his son Benjamin married Marie Bogardes a descendant from the famous Annecke Jans whose heirs have supposedxx themselves the rightful owners of the Trinity Church property. Benjamin Lowe's son Peter a minister of the old Dutch Church, and coadjuter of another minister also from Kingston, served as the Pastors of the Collegiate Churches, of Brooklyn then known as the Church at New Utrecht Flatbush, Bushwick, and Brooklyn, the last church stood in the middle of what is now Fulton street between Gallatin Place and Lawrence street, he then lived in Red Hoop Lane, later he lived nearxx the church in Flatbush, where he collected and arranged the ancient records of that church which have never been done before he married a daughter of Sebastian Bauman, a German and a major or artillery during the Revolutionary War. A man of great attainment and knowledge on war. About 1800 he became Postmaster of N. Y. and continued so until death . The ancestry of Mrs. Camden C. Dike in connection with Brooklyn consists of the record of William Bowne, and family, who came from Salem, Mass., with Lady Moody and her company of Baptists who were voluntarily or otherwise removed from Salem, and received from Gov. Keift, a grant of what is now Gravesend, so called by them for the first time, and here surrounded by treacherous Indians, and people who spoke only Dutch, they resided, for some years, finally William Bowne and others obtained from Poiamere chief Sachem of the Navasink Indian tribe, a deed of Monmouth County, N. J. This deed is extant in the archives of the State at Albany, the sons of William Bowne became prominent in East Jersey, one of them was Lieutenant Gov. and the others served in other capacities under this government. As a connecting link, in the Baptists persecution of these people with those mentioned in other places in this genealogy we may say that one of these sonsof William Bowne, married a daughter of the Rev. Obadiah Holmes, who was so barbarously whipped by the authorities of Boston, for his preaching to the baptists at Lynn, he had formerly lived at Salem where he was the preacher for Bownes and others he later lived at Swansea, and Newport, one of the Brown family of Ched Brown married a daughter of his, and his descendants in that way are the richest people in the State of R. I. at this time, he had a very large family of children, and is the connecting link in the religious troubles,of that period, which caused so many former residents of New England, to remove to the jurisdiction of New York, thus two of the wives as mentioned were historically connected with New York.

York, three of the others as mentioned were historically connected with New York.

INDEX OF PERSONS, PLACES AND [illegible].

ABBOTT, Daniel 206

Acadia or Acadie 37

Adams ancestry of Braintree, Mass. 269 - 275 - 361

Adams, John 269, Adams, John Quincy 269; Adams, Samuel 269; Addington, Mr. Isaac 386; Adventurers, The English 176; Agawam, Mass. 94; Agawam "The Simple Cobbler of" 95; Agnes, a poem of Oliver Wendell Holmes 316; Albini - Valley area of 341; Alden ancestry 264 - 270 - 274 - 277 - 300 - 302 - Alden, John 1st generation, 150, - 176 - 256 - 258 - 264 - 267 - 270 - 274 - 278 - 283 - 286 - 289 - 290. Alden, Mrs. Priscilla Mullins 150 - 176 - 256 -259 260 - 267; Alden, 2nd generation, Alden, Abigail 269; Alden, David 264; Alden, Elizabeth 267; Alden, John 268 - 273; Alden, Jonathan, 268 - 269-270; Alden, Joseph 268; Alden, Mary 256 - 261 - 269; Alden, Ruth - 264 - 269; Alden, Sarah 264 & 270; Alderley, Mrs. Eliz. Wedgwood, 311; Alderley, John 311; Alford, Col. John 35 - 36; Allen, Benj. 260; Allen, Mrs. Anna Melano 260; Allen, Daniel 258; Allen Family, heirs of John Brown, 264; Allen, Mary 34; Allen, Mrs. Mary Ann Randall 260; Allen's Point 86; Allen, Thomas 260; Allithone, Job 261; Allegany Co. The Indians, N.Y. 101; Allerton, Bartholomew 297; Allerton, Mrs. Mary Brewster 264 - 297; Allerton, Mr. Isaac, 256 - 264 - 268 - 297 - 319; Allerton, Mary 297; Allerton, Remember 297; Ancient and honorable art. Co., Boston, 61 - 73, 319; 260 - 267 - 274; Andrews ancestry 219; Andreville, the Earl of, 385; Andros, Sir Edmund, Gov. 118; Angell, Mary 192; Angell, Samuel 192;

Anne, The Cape of 3 - 4 - 5 - 13 - 14 - 17 - 20 - 28 54 - 30; Ann, The Ship at Plymouth 3 - 4 - 6 - 7 - 26 34 - 118 - 171 - 242 - 253 - 259 - 268 - 277 - 278 - 287 - 296 ; Antinomians, 222; Appleton's cyclopaedia 129 & 129 - 175; Aquidneck, 124 - 216; Arbella, The ship 94; Arbuthnot, Richard, 310; Armington, Mary 71; Arms, of England 340; Arnold, 1st generation 143 - 144 - 185 - 195; Arnold, Thomas, 136 - 168 - 186 - 187 -196 - 215 ; Arnold, Mrs. Phebe Hazzhurst, 196 - 197; Arnold, Wm. 144 - 168 166 - 194 - 215; Arnold, 2nd generation, Arnold Benedict; 144 - 145 - 150 - 156 - 201 - 215 - 342; Arnold, Benedict, 140 - 142 - 196 - 198 - 199 - 201; Arnold, Elizabeth 187- 191 - 198; Arnold, John 147, 148; Arnold, Lydia 4 - 140 143 - 150 - 156 - 157 - 159 ; Arnold, Mrs. Sarah Hawkins 171; Arnold, Stephen 146; Arnold, Susanna, 198; Arnold, Thomas 147 - 156; Arnold, 3rd generation,; Arnold, Benedict, 189 - 191; Arnold, Mrs. Eleanor Smith 188; Arnold, Elizabeth 188; Arnold, Joseph 152 - 156; Arnold, Joshua 153; Arnold, Lydia 187 - 192; Arnold, Mrs. Mary Angell 146 ; Arnold, Mercy 155; Arnold, Olney 156; Arnold, Richard 185 - 187 - 188; Arnold, Mrs. Sarah Hawkins 140 ; Arnold, Sarah 145; Arnold, Truelove 90 - 91 - 118; Arnold, General Benedict 186 ; Arnold, vital statistics; 80 - 140 - 141 - 178; Arundell, Wm. 279; Ashurst Sir William 324 - 350; Atchison, Mary 340; Atkins, Rev. Elisha 96 - Atkins son, Anne 369; Attleboro, Mass. 119; Auchmuty, The lawyer 302 - 305; Aumin, Elizabeth 368; Austin's genealogical records of 126 allied families of Rhode Island 104 111; Austin, Mr. 364; Austin, Mrs.

Bacon, 334; Avery, Rev. Ephraim, 80; Avery family 87; Avery, James 88; Avery Parson, 284; Avery, Samuel 137; Aylaffe, Sir Joseph 371.

Babsone, History of Gloucester, Mass. 2. Bacon family of Wessett, county of Suffolk, England 336, Bacon, John 336 Bacon, Sir Nicholas 343; Bagsley, Margaret 144; Baker, Bethia, 33; Ball, Capt. Robt. 77; Ballard ancestry of Lynn, Mass. 63 - 71 - 72 - 74 - 340; Ballard, Mr. 1st generation, 63 - 72 - 73 - 111; Ballard, Mr. 2nd generation, 63 - 72 - 73 - 111; Ballard, Jonathan 3rd generation; 73; Ballard, Nathaniel, 3rd generation 63 - 73; Ballard Mrs. Rebecca Wasson, 73; Ballard, Mr. 3rd generation 320 333; Ballard, Mr. 4th generation, 73 - 74 - 75; Ballard, Joseph 5th generation - 73 - 318 - 321; Ballard, Mrs. Mary Valentine, 321; Ballard, Nathaniel 56 8 - 63 - 64 - 74 7 - 318 - 320 - 333; Ballard Mrs. Elizabeth Valentine 318 - 319 - 333, Ballard, Miles 6th generation 72 - 96 - 107 - 111 - 318, Ballard, Elizabeth, 6th 6/72 - 111 318; Ballard, 6th Esther 72 - 73 - 111; Ballard, John 63 - 72 - 11; Ballard, Lynde 6 - 73 - 318 - 139; Ballard Mary, 6 - 318; Ballard, Sarah, 6 - 318; Ballard, Mr. 6 - 318; Ballard, Sarah Wason, 139; Ballard, F.F. Davenport Iowa 8 - 317; Ballard, Stephen P of Pompton, N.J. 315-318 - 321 -337; Ballard ancestry, Boston family of Ballard; Jarvis 1st generation 316 - 318 - 330 - 345 - 346 351 - 360 - 361 - 362; Ballard, Mary 313 - 325 - 345 - 348 - 360; Ballard, Mrs. Martha Paige 348 - 349; Ballar, Jarvis 2nd generation 361; Ballard, Mrs. Pascoin 2; 361; Ballard, Daniel Esq. 3 348; Ballard, Edward 3 - 347; Ballard George 3 - 376; Ballard Jarvis 3 - 345; Ballard, Katharine 3 - 345; Ballard, Robert 3 - 347; Ballard Thomas

5 - 348; Bullou Henry 191; Bullou, Lewis 140 - 190 - 191; Bullou, Robert 190 - 191; Bullou, Susannah 190 - 191 Bullou, Wm. 191 - Baptist church 80 - 98 - 110 - 116 - 121 - 130 - 131 - 135 - 136 - 137 - 138 - 139 - 160 - 161 - 164 - 166 - 167 - 204 - 270 - 301 - 302 304 - 307 - 308 - 313 - 318 - 321 - 352 - 323 -326; Baptist, Mr. John of Antwerp 369; Baptist, Lee Mary Digby 369; Barstow, Mrs. Anne 225, [illegible] 106 - 107; Barstow, Wm. 107; [illegible], James 314; [illegible], Mrs. [illegible]- [illegible] 313; [illegible], Mrs. [illegible]; Bates, Orin 326; [illegible] 316 - 319; [illegible], Simeon 366; Battlesgate Prospect Park, Virginia, 51; [illegible], Rev. Mr. 36 - [illegible], Ambassador 179; [illegible], Maria 321; [illegible], Olive Lord 272 - 274; [illegible], Lydia Holmes 273; Beccles, Suffolk County, England 341; [illegible] 370; Bedford, Duke of 341; [illegible], Rev. Isa A. 100 - 101 - 161 - 163 - 369; Beere, Henry 104; [illegible], [illegible] 167 - Bellingham, Rev. 61 - Bellingham Mrs. Penelope Pelham 62; Benedictus, Noel Brooks, Duchess of, Villard 304 - 307 - 310 - 312 - 314;- Bendall Edward 316 -; Bendall, Frances 366; Bendall, Rev. [illegible] 366; Benedict, Rev. Daniel, 133 - 150 - 161 - 166 - 167 - 213 - 214 - 222; Benedict, History of the Baptists, 110 - 130 - 167 - 200; Bermuda, The company of 84; [illegible], [illegible] 87 - 88; Bigods and Bowards, Dukes of Norfolk 342; Birney, James 304; Bishop, George, 370; Bishop Thomas 161; Blake Family 210; Blake Bridget 111; Blake James [illegible]., 39 - 41; Blinman, or Blynman, Rev. Richard 62 - 63 - 65; Blue

Point Saco Maine 41; Blunden, Sarah 275; Bodge History of Pequot and King Philip Indian War 48 - 51 - 62 - 65 - 124 134 - 138 - 142 - 297; Bonny, Peter 361; Boocock, Murray 53; Bourchier, Ann 286; Bourchier, John 286; Bourne, Mrs.257; Bourne, Mrs. Prince 237; Boston, Mass. 39 - 43 - 60 - 72 - 90 - 91 - 104 - 121 - 132 - 176 - 178 - 180 183 - 200 - 245 - 257 266 - 276 - 285;- Boston, Memorial history of 77 ; Bosworth, ancestry of Phil Mass. 169 - 170; Bosworth, Edward, genealogies 1, 165; Bosworth Benjamin, gen. 4; 167 - 169 - 290; Bosworth Mary 2, 168 - 70; Bosworth, Benjamin 3, 169 - 170 - 175; Bosworth, Elizabeth 3, 169 - 170 - 175; Bosworth, Hannah 4, 114 114 - 121 - 118 - 157 - 160 - 167 - 168 - 169 - 170 - 289 - 290; Bosworth, Jonathan 4, 161 - 162 - 280; Bosworth, Nathaniel 4, 169 - 190; Bowditch, Miss 322; Bowdoin family 330 - 331 - 331 - 332; Bowdoin College 361; Bowdoin James Gov. 1, 361 ; Bowdoin, Gov. James, 2, 361, Bowdoin, Mrs. Thomas Hardage, 361; Bowdoin, Elizabeth 3, 361; Bowdoin, James, The Gov. 3, 361; Bowdoin, Gov. James, 361; Bowdoin, Mrs. Sarah 3, 361 - Bowdoin, Mr. 4, 361; Bowles, John 322; Bowman, Mary 340; Bowran Mary 310; Braddenbury, Mrs. Rose widow of John 77; Bradford family 329; Bradford, Gov. of Plymouth 9 - 10 - 11 - 38 - 114 - 118 - 124 - 167 - 171 - 172 - 347; Bradford, Mrs. Dorothy Mag 177; Bradford, John 178 - 179 - 184 Bradford Rebecca 340; Bradford, Mrs. Widow Weiss 340; Bradford, Major Wm. 177 - 184; Bradley, Alicia 324; Bradley, Elizabeth Brewster, 324; Bradley, Peter 324; Brandon, Judge 184; Brandreth family of Cleaves, Mr. 47

Suffolk, England 308; Broadstreet, Rice 295 - Broadstreet, Roger 294 - 295; Broadstreet, Simon or Symon 296; Braintree Mass. 257; Branch, Daniel 144; Brattle Thomas 374; Branton, Wm. 191; Brereton or Brewerton, Sir Wm. 19 - 21 Brewerton, Annie 345; BrewsterElder Wm. 1st gen. 19 - 24 - 28 - 51 - 71 - 160 - 172 - 176 - 195 - 243 - to 247 252 - 283 - 296 - 299 - 310; Brewster, Mrs. Mary 243 - 253 - 264 - 296 - 299; Brewster memoirs of 172 - 244 245; Brewster, New York and Ct. family 284; Brewster 2nd generation of Brewster Wear 244 - 269 - 271; Brewster Jonathan 2nd gen. 243 - 253 - 254 - 264 - 277 - 296 - 297 - 299; Brewster, Mrs. Lucretia Oldham 243 - 296; Brewster 2 Lowe; 295 - 301 - 307; Brewster, Mrs. Sarah Collier, 284 - Brewster Publishers, 8, 254;- Brewster Freeble, 8, 243 - 297; Brewster, 3rd gen. Brewster, Benj. 274; Brewster, Elizabeth 284; Brewster Grace 284; Brewster Hannah 284; Brewster Jonathan 284; Brewster, Mary 253 - 254 - 296 - 297; Brewster, Nathaniel 284; Brewster, Robert 283; Brewster Ruth 284; Brewster Sarah 2 284; Brewster, Wm. 254; Brick, Mary 360; Bridgewater family of the Duke of 26 - 35 - 66; Bristol, England 86 - 87; Brooklyn,Ct. 61 - 76 - 80; Brooklyn, N.Y. 61 - 76 - 80 - Brooms, Elizabeth Dawson 307; Brooms, Wm. 308; Brown family of Chad; of Providence R.I. 1st gen. Chad, 112 - 115 - 121 - 124 - 203 - 207 - 209 - 303 - 305 - 317 Brown, Eliz. wife of Chad. 304 - 307; Brown, John 2nd generation 180 - 201 - 202 - 206; Brown, Martha 2, 115 - 201 - 207 - 219; Brown, Nicholas 2, 121 - 181 - 186 - 202 - 209 - 217 - 313. Brown, James , 186 - 206 - 209 - 219; Brown, Mrs/ Rhoda Jenks 206 - 209; Brown, John 2, 206;

Brown, Moses P, 206; Brown & Ives 121 - 200; Brown, Nope [illegible], 208 - 219; Brown, John Carter 6, - 206; Brown University 131 - 201 - 206 - 207 - 262 - 266; Brown, Jeremiah 206; Brown, family of Nathaniel of Providence 119; Brown Lydia Bucklin 119; Brown family of John of Taunton 119 - 128; Brown, Mrs. Dorothy 104 - 290; Brown, James of Swansea, Mass. 166 - 217 - 287 - 290; Brown Mrs. Lydia Howland [illegible] - 290; Browne family of Salem Mass. 271; Browne, Hon. Samuel 26; Browne of Salem, the brothers 25; Browne, Robert 202; Browne, Sir George "Knight Marshall of England" 370 Browne church 32; Browne Christopher 144; Browne, George 96; Bucke Mary 259 298 - 300; Buckingham, the Duke of [illegible]; Bucklin family 219, Bucklin Mary 219; Bull "Six Gen Pirate" 27 - 28; Bullivant Justice Benjamin 303 - 304; Bumstead, Jeremiah 301; Burgess Geo. F. 193 - 196 - 227 - 228 - 250 - 303; Burke genealogical emery 225; Burleigh Sir Wm. Cecil Lord of 245 - 246 - Burlingame ancestry 191 Burlingame Amos 188, Burlingame, Mary 102 - 194 - 197; Burlingame Roger 194; Burrill family of Lynn, Mass. 76; Burrill Chancellor 74 - 75; Burrill, Hon. James U. S. Senator U.S. 75; Burrill John 74 - 75; Burrill, Mrs. Lydia - Turner Jones 244; Sarah Burrill 74; Burrill W. 214 - 34; Bursley Elizabeth 187; Bury St. Edmunds Suffolk, England 379 - 380 - 384 - 386; Butterworth John of Swansey, Mass. 151 - 152; Butterworth Mary 130 - 131 - 161 - 169; Butterworth Samuel 130 - 151 ; Butterworth Sarah Wroxton 130 - Buttolph Thomas 374;

Cailey or Cayley family of Bennett, county of Suffolk 386; Cailey arms of Axel; Calender of state papers 370

Calkins, history of New London, Ct. 56 - 87; Cambridge, Mass. 19 - 32 - 94; Cambridge planters 194 - 247 - 248 249; Canonicus 61; Cape Cod 2 - 14 - 32 - 36 - 54 - 55 - 224 to 257. Capron Hannah 120; Carden John 268; Carkey Major 69; Carpenter Alexander 171 - 182 ; Carpenter Alice 171 - 179 - 182; Carpenter Juliana 171 - 181;; Carpenter Priscilla 182; Carroll Mary Willard 218; Carroll W. 218 Carter Robert 272; Carver John the Governor of Plymouth 176 - 181 - 269 - 269 - 272 - 294 - 297; Carver Elizabeth, 294; Carver Jane 294; Carver, Robert 294; Cecil Sir Wm. Lord Burleigh 240 & 270; central falls, R. I. 180 - 181 - 182 - 187; Chamberlyne, Roger 281; Chapen Martha 64; Chapen, Robert 64 Chandler Ann 280; Chandler, Mrs. Martha Haines 270 ; Chapman, John 256; Chapman, Philip 256; Charles first, the King 50 - 134 - 248; Charles the King 32 - 111; Charlestown, Mass. 76 - 77 - 78; Charity, the ship 9 - 270 - Chauncey, Pres. 227; Chapter, county of Somerset 3; Cheesbrough genealogy 57; Cheesbrough Nathaniel 56; Chester Col. Joseph R.G.H., 268 - 269 - 279; Chilmead Mrs. Mary Prudence 280; Church Benjamin, Major 277 - 280; Church history of King Philips War 277; Church of England in London 32 - 36 244- 254 - 267 - 268 - 280; Church Mr. 256; Civil war in England 30; Claflin and Paris Valentine 276; Claflin Charles Winslow 276 Claflin Mary 276; Clapp Roger 38 - 39 40 - 55; Clapham John 269; Clapham Henry 269; Clark ancestry 174 - 277 - 278 -277; Clark Andrew 277; Clark cousins 181; Clark Elizabeth 279; Clark Thomas 3; Clark's Island Plymouth 279; Clark James 207 - 277 ;

Clark, John [illegible]; Clarke [illegible]; Clarke, [illegible]; [illegible]; [illegible]; 279 - [illegible]; [illegible]; 286 - 276 - 277 - 278; Clendenin Rev. Alexander 308 - 309; Clopton family 379; Clowes Dr. 30; Cobbet Rev. [illegible] 110; Cockburn John 306; Coggeshall Co. of Essex 3; Coleman Rev. Benjamin 389; Coleman Co. [illegible] 386; Collier Sarah 284; Collier Mr. 284; Commonwealth The 30; [illegible] in the Mayflower 28 176 - 280 - 287 - 374 - 382; Compton family x 300; Comstock Elizabeth 187; Comstock Mrs. Mercy Jenks 221; Comstock Samuel 189; 221, Conant Alice, 25; Conant Christopher 4 - 6 - 7 - 26; Conant Elizabeth 25; Conant Rev. John Vice Chancellor of Oxford 24 - 26; Conant Pat. 25; Conant Richard 25; Conant Roger, Governor of Salem Mass. 1 - 2 - 4 - 5 - 6 xx 7 - 8 10 - 11 - 12 Woodbridge 23, [illegible] 30; Cooke Sir Anthony 342; Cooke Elizabeth 343; Cooke Hiram 341; Cooke family of Vannest county of Norfolk, Maryland 338; Cooke George Capt. 336; Cooke John 337; Cooke Marguerite Tillie 284; Cooke Mr. 396; Cooper family of Bennett 182 - 266 - 336 - 338; Cooper Wealthy 187 Cooper John 182; Cooper Mrs. Judith 180; [illegible] 178; Cooper Priscilla 180; Cooper S. [illegible] Cooper Richard 182; Cooper Rev. R. 383; Cornell Elizabeth 308; Cotton family 308; Cotton Rev. John 180 - 21 Cradock Matthew 12 - 14 - 24 - 76 280; Crane family of Artists 379; Crane Mrs. Jane Louis 378 - [illegible]; Sir Valentine 376; Crane Walter Ino 378 - 376; Crapto

Thomas of Boston 307; Cromwell Mrs. Anne 345 - 347; Cromwell Capt. [illegible] - 347; Cromwell Elizabeth 346 347; Cromwell Oliver The Lord Protector [illegible] - 30 - 39 - 340 - 344 - 350 - 352 - 370 - 380; Crosby Capt. Stephen 61 - 62 - 63 - 64; Crosby Valeous 71- 7 ; Cudner Robert 352; Curwen Samuel 344; Cushing Colonel 66; Cushman Desire [illegible]; Cushman Mrs. Mary Allerton 241; Cushman Robert 175 - 240; Cushman Mrs. Zoth Lorraine [illegible]; Cushman Thomas 290 - 319;

Davison ancestry 35 - 49; Davison first generation of Davison Alethian 78 - [illegible]; Davison Mrs. Johanna Vosper 78; Davison second generation of

Davison Major Daniel 58 - 61 - 72 - 77 - 78; Davison Sarah 58 - 77 - 78; Davison Mrs. Margaret Lee 78; Third generation of

Davison Peter 61 - 78 to 80 &c; Davison Mrs. Ann Morgan 80; Davison Elizabeth 78; Davison Daniel, Jr. 79; Davison Sarah Paige 79; Davison Briggs 78, Davison Jonathan 79; Davison Hannah Griffin 78; Davison John 79, Davison Margaret 78, Davison Martha Vincent 78; Davison Thomas 79 - 80; Davison Mary Claffin 78; Davison fourth generation,

Davison Joseph 80 - 81; Davison Mrs. Mary Davis 80 - 81; Davison Daniel Third 80, Davison Dorothy 80; Davison Wm. 80; Davison Peter 80; Davison Paul 80; Davison Ann 80; Davison Deborah Webb 80; Fifth generation of

Davison Dorothy Dike, 76 - 81 - 84 - 76 - 81 - 96;

Davison Daniel fourth 61; Davison Katharine Davis 61; Davison Joseph 61 - 63 -; Davison Mrs. Lydia Goodell 61 - 63; Lord Walker 61; Davison John 61; Davison Mrs. Mehitible Davis 61; Davison Ebenezer 61; Davison Peter 61; Davison Mrs. Abigail Rogers 61; Davison Lucia Pellet 61; Davison Simeon 61; Davison Wentworth 61; Davison Mrs. Sarah Hyde; 30 - 61;

Delano or DeLanoye ancestry of 256 - 261 - 298 - 300 - 328 -; Delano or De-Lanoye Jean 256 - 298 - to 9; Delano or De La Noye Marie Mahieu 256 - 298; First generation of at Plymouth Delano, Philip 252 - 256 - 257 - 297 298; Delano Mrs. Hester Dewsbury 256 - 311; Delano Mrs. Mary Tantum Cladd 256. Second generation of

Delano Philip, Jr., [illegible]; Delano Mrs. Elizabeth Clark 256 - 276 - 279; Delano Thomas 256 - 265; Delano Mrs. Mary Allen 258; Delano Mary 256; Delano Mrs. Mary 256; Third generation of

Delano Ebenezer 256 - 258 - 279 - 299; Delano Mrs. Martha Simmons 256 - 258 - 266 - 279 - 299; Delano Samuel 256; Delano Martha 256; Delano Jane 256; Delano Mrs. Standish 256; Fourth generation of

Delano, Joshua [illegible]; Delano Mrs. Hope Child Peterson 279 - 297; Delano Mary Alden 269; Fifth generation of

Delano Lydia - Prince 256 - 258 - 299; Delano Rhoda 258; Delano Sylvia [illegible]; Delano Mrs. Abigail Perren 260; Delano Jane 260; Delano Martha 260; Delano Melissa 260;

DIKE, Dix Dik Dick Dicken Dyke, The various ways of spelling this name. Dix Anthony the original way spelled in Plymouth Records; Dick by governor John Winthrop Dike by Roger Williams. Dick by Roger Clapp; Dixes - Dix 1. 2 - 25 - 30 - 47; The eminent American family of Divines in England during the period 1560 to 1681 spelled the name Dyke. For Prelude for Dyke Ezekiel D.D., Daniel Jr. D.D. Jeremiah D.D. and Daniel D.D. son of Jeremiah. A book of sermons by these Divines in possession of the Lenox Library of the New York Library, much mentioned in early New England History as Dicks ; age 25 - 30 - 47 - 54; Wife John Treen. of the Duke of Buckingham Vice Lord High Admiral Treen. of [illegible] Dykesfield England 1; Savoury Coll 1; Dike Anthony first generation in New England; 1 - 10 - 14 - 19 - 21 - 23 to 27 - 30 to 36 - 38 to 40 - 42 to 56 - 62 - 91 to 94 - 110 - 123 - 171 - 193 - 208-337 - 348; Wife, Tabitha Dike, wife of the foregoing 5 - 6 - 341; Second generation of

Dike Anthony Jr. 2 - 5 - 6 - 35 - 56 - 92 -; Dike [illegible] wife of foregoing 3 - 6; Third generation of

Dike Anthony 37 - 38 - 66; Dike Marjorie 55; Dike Jonathan [illegible]; Dike [illegible] 47; Dike Benjamin 15 - 39 - 96 Dike Charity 38 - 96; Dike Nathaniel 27 - 55 - 66; Dike family of Richard 2 - 3; Widow of Richard 6; their children Elizabeth, Elanor Malone, Mary , Samuel, Sarah Joseph, Job, Abraham, Jane.

Dike Daniel in Dodge's King Philip War 62. Fourth generation of DIKE Nathaniel of Ipswich and Sutton

27 35 - 58 - 56; Dike Daniel 57 - 58; Dike Ebenezer 56; Dike Benjamin 58; Dike James 27 - 56 to 61 - 96; Dike Sarah 57; Dike Nathaniel Jr. 29 - 58; Dike Martha 57; Dike Col. Nicholas of the Revolution 27 - 55 - 59 66; Dike of Bridgewater, Mass., sons of Anthony 26; John 26; Nathaniel 26; Moses 26; Samuel 26 - 27;; all these sons of Anthon, there of Ipswitch br ther of Nathaniel Dike . List of Revolutionary soldiers of that name: Anthony 69 - Archelaus 68 Benjamin 69; Daniel Jr. 69 Ezekiel 70; Hezekiah 70; John 70; Nicholas 70; Nicholas Jr., 70; Jonathan 70; Ruben 70; William 70; all the foregoing in Conn. record. The following in the Conn. record of the Revolution. Gideon 70; Nathaniel 70; Samuel 70; Thomas 70; all these of Killingly Ct. The ancient of Thompson. Dike fourth generation of Thompson Ct. This list sent by Miss Larned the historian. Dike James, fourth generation, and Mrs. Mary Harrowers his wife, 96 - 97 - 98 100; fifth generation of Dike Thomas 56 - 60 to 62 - 65 - 70 - 76 - 81 - 96 - 98 - 99; Dike Nathaniel 96 - 98 - 99 - 100; Dike Rachael 96; Dike Mary 96; Dike Sylvia 96; Dike Samuel 61 - 62 - 66 to 668 - 81 - 96; Sixth generation of Dike Lydia 96 - 99 ; Dike Joseph 71 - 72 - 96 - 97 - 107 - 116; Dike Lucy 96; Dike Samuel 97 - 98 - 99 ; Dike Mary 97; Dike Lois 97; Dike Thomas 97; - 98; Dike James 97 - 99; Seventh generation of Dike Aterista 97 - Dike Rhoda 71- 97; Dike Albyn Valentine 71 - 97 - 186 - 147 - 166; Dike Arbor Ballard 71 - 72 - 97;

Dike Appleton 97; Dike Thebe Ann 213 -223- 226 - 239; Seventh generation of Samuel Sixth brother of Joseph sixth. Dike Thomas 99; Dike George 99; Dike Henry 99; Dike Harriet 99; Eighth generation of Dike, Rev. Samuel W. 28 - 99; Dike Joseph W. 99; Sixth generation of Nathaniel fifth Dike, James 100; Dike Benjamin 101; Dike Thomas 101; Dike Isaac Willard 101; Dike Daniel 101; Dike Azubah 101; Dike Zerviah 101; Dike Esther Burrill 101; Eighth generation of

DIKE, Oscar D. 147; Dike Henry A. 147; Dike James Prince 147; Dike Frederic Valentine 148; Dike Camden Crosby 138; - 148 - 316 - 364 - 368; Dike Helen Josephine 148; Dike Sarah Alice 148; Dike Ella Adelaide 148; Dike, died in infancy; Helen and Ann 148; Dike Mrs. Camden C. 83 - 138 - 365; Ninth generation of Norman Staunton Dike 52 - 83; DIKE, Miriam 82; Dike Jessie Scott 83;

DANDY, Jane 575; Danforth, Lieut. 6 ov. 102; Dashwood, Phillis 378; d'Aubney Monsieur 347; Daugney Susan 351 - 352; Davenport Richard 347; Davis Landmarks of Plymouth 27 - 36 - 342 - 349; Davis Nathaniel N. 173; Davis Polly 97; Davis Rachel 97; Davidson Secretary of Queen Elizabeth 343; Dawson, William 307; Dearborn Gen'l. Henry 361; Dearborn Sarah Bowdoin Bowdoin 301 De Butt Anna 352; De Butt Giles 351 - 352 - 353 - 356; De Butt James 352; De Coram or Cocham family 291; De Lancy Benjamin 357 - 359; Delaware, Earl of 382; Delaune Archivist 354; Denison Daniel, Major Gen. 334, - 335; Denison family 87; Denison Capt. Geo. Sr. 77 - 86 - 87 291;

Denison Geo. Jr. 291; Denison Hannah 77 - 86; Denison Mercy Gorham 291; Denison Sarah 77 - 86; Denison Wm. 78; Dequester Jesse 311; Dequester Matthew 302; Dexter Alice Tiffin 111 - 114; Dexter Henry M. D.D. i 74 - 180; Dexter John 110 - 114; Dickerson Elizabeth Rowland 299; Digby Archives 384; Digby family ancient pedigree of, 323 - 324 - 325 - 326 - 346 - 366 to 378; Digby Elizabeth 345 - 351 - 355 to 358; 361, Digby Everard 313, 354 - 366 - 378; Digby George 2nd Ear l of Bristol 358; Digby Hannah Newdigate 313; Digby Henry Lord of 358; Digby John Sir 355; Digby John 1st l of Bristol 317 - 358 - 365 378; Digby - Lynde anne of 353, Digby Nathip 313; Digby Simon 313 - 356; Dillon Robert 309, Dix Elizabeth 25; Dix Family 3- 23 - 25 - 47; Dix Frances 14 - 25, Dix John 24 - 25; Dix [illegible] A. Maj. Gen. 5 - 27; Dix Jonathan 24; Dix Rev. Morton D.D. 5 - 27; Dix Ralph 5 - 27; Dix [illegible] 23 - 47; Donnnor Henry 3 - 11; Dodeson Thomas 311; Dolliver Rebecca 2; Dolliver Samuel 3, Downell [illegible] 338, Downell Mr. 334, Downel Mrs. Rose h 334; Dorchester County 2; Dorchester, Eng. 8 - 10; Dorchester Mass. 6 - 29 - 30 - 32; Dorset County History 271, Doughty [illegible] 313; Doughty Lydia Turner 343; Drake Sir Francis 3, Drake Samuel G. 179; Draper Mrs. Ann 381; Drew Jos. 381; Drew Silvia Prince 381; Drew Stephen Wye 381; Drew Thankful Prince 381; Drysdale, Sir Henry 340; Dudley Thomas, the Gov. 17; Dudley Joseph 319 - 328 - 340 - 397 to 382; Dupee Capt. 335; Durfee Abigail 314; Durfee Mary Waitnine 314; Durfee Mr. 314;

Dutch church at Leyden Holland 291 - 297; Dymoke Elizabeth 286; Dymoke family 286;

E

Easton Nicholas 119; Eastbrittaigh Devon England 4 - 20; East Thetford, England 324 - 328 - 330; Eccles; county of Lancaster, England 310 312 - 321; Edmonds, The Princess, later Queen of Bohemia Preface Eliot John Rev. 318 - 363; Eliot John Sir 2,3; Ellison George 173; Elsdon, N.Y. 101; Ely family 361; Elyjacquette 367; Ely Sir John Kaia 367; Endicott John, The Gov. 17 - 19 20 - 24 - 28 - 33 - 423 - 474; Evens family 316 - 361; Episcopal Church at Exeter, Eng. 24 - 28 - 130 - 310 [illegible] - 361 - 10 316, Episcopal Church at Workington Eng. 310 - 321 to 325; Essex county court, Mass. 32; Estes Ann 197. Eaton Theophilus 100 - 321; Exeter Devk 182 - [illegible]; Exeter Stocks 187 - [illegible]; Exeter Tavern 143 197 - 198, Exeter Town 187 - [illegible]; Exeter Duchess 321; Exeter Thomas 197; Everson Abigail 232 - 233 - 280; Everson Ephraim 280, Everson second generation 284 - 294; Abigail, Ebenezer, Ephraim, Richard & Robert Everson.

FAILES, Jenks & Company, Pawtucket, R. I. 194; Falmouth, Maine 32 - Farnum, John 193; Farnum, Susannah Arnold 193; Farrell Kerry 309; Farrell Mr. 305; Farnce Joan 174; Farnce Thomas 173 - 174; Fayerweather Sarah Hubbard 280 ; Fayerweather Thomas 280; Fenner Wm. 197; Fenwick, Gov. Geo. 342 - 361; Fitts Abraham 57; Fitts Mary 59; Fitts Meh. 57; Fitts Sarah 57; First church at Plymouth 179; First Comers at Plymouth 343 - 349 [illegible]; Fish photographer at Plymouth 230; Fitch Joseph

Valentine 314 - 317; Vitts Allen family 370; Vitts
Wardsman family 370; Voote Sarah 370; Voote Thomas Sir
370 - 371; Vye James Tolson 181; Vort Griswold 87;
Vorth family 179; Vortman, the exile 242 - 243 - 268 -288;
Voster Thomas 290; Voster family 368; Voster Eunice
281; Voster Mary Morton 286, Voster Polly 166; Voster
Thomas 290; Vox Foster 203; Voxcroft Rev. Thos. 336;
Vyssell Thomas Mrs 86 337; Vrankingham England 108;
Vranklands, Visits of Amer. 72; - 74 - 79, Vranklands
Vowles Henry Margaret 210 - 214 - 216; Vranklands Vowells o
of 210; Vranklin Benjamin 340 to 341; Vranklin Elizabeth
Veach Gibbard 388; Vranklin John 2nd - 108 - 181; Vreeman
Visits of Amer 261, Vrench and Indian Vars 87 - 91 263 -
321 - 325; Vrink Sarah 88; Vroope the Visitorian 170;
Vulham Library London 79; Vuller family of Cassett England
194; Vuller family of Plymouth 317; Vuller Doctor Dan'l.
24 - 25 - 28; 317 ; Vulthorpe John 370; Vlows or
Vlowers De Visitor family 138; Vynne Lady Joyce 8 - 93
132;

Gaffield Lyon 220, Gaging Earl John 34 - 38; Gardner
Widow 218; Gardner George 191; Gardner Joseph 180;
Gardner widow 180; Gardner Lyon; 32 - 38; Gardner
Nathaniel Lyon Willard 338; Garfield Abigail 196; Gar-
fields Edward 180, Garfield family 188; Garfield Pres.
of U. S. 186; Geer Sarah 88; George 2nd the King 117;
Georgiana Anne Manning 382; Gould James 256; Gibbs Mary
Ann P orton 208; Glascock family 330; 343; Glascock
Margaret Gooch 33; Glascock Thomas 343, Gloucester,

England 3; Gloucester, Mass. 4- 5 - 8 - 82; Glover, Chas. 57; Glover Rachel 57; Glover Colonel 69; Goddard Hope 307; Goodell Lydia 81; Goodrich family 294; Goodrich Rev. Gussenu, History of Pawtucket 184; Gorges family 331 - 344; Gorges, Sir Ferdinando 21 - 132 - 331 344; Gorges John 21 - 33; Gorges Robert 8 - 21 - 25; Gorton Colony 216; Gould Elias 329; Goud Robert 169; Gravesend N.Y. 89; Gray Anne 369; Gray Reynold 369; Great Hornings Heath England 379; Great Swamp Fight 65 - 132 - 184; Green Agnes 67 ; Green Annie 318; Green P. The Printer 39; Green Capt. John 60; Green Warner Mass. 82 - 268; Greenleaf sister 332; Greenough Thomas 374; Griffin family 366; Griffin Katharine 368; Griffin Thomas 370; Griffin Nicholas 354; Griswold family 361; Griswold Rev. George 355; Griswold Hannah Lynde 366; Groton Ct. 82; Gotch ancestry spelled Gooch Gouge Gouche in America 324 - 329 - 333 - 336 - 338 - 340 to 342 345 - 382; Gooch name of 330 - 344; First generation of Gooch John 328 - 334 - 336 - 341; Gooch Ruth Thomson d 333 - 334 - 338; second generation of Gooch James 332 - to 338; Gooch Mrs. James 336 - 337; Gooch John 284 - 335 Gooch Mrs. Lydia 334; Third generation of Gooch James 334 - to 340 - 38?; Gooch Hannah 316 - 334; Gooch Elizabeth Peck 334 - 336; Gooch Sarah Tuttle 314 - 333 - 337 John Gooch 338; Fourth generation of Gooch James 314 - 316 - 334 - 335 - 337 - 339; Gooch Elizabeth Bobby 316 - 322 - 313 - 336 - 338; Gooch Elizabeth 333 - 336 - 339; Gooch John 314 - 318 - 335 - 337;

Gooch Colonel Joseph 311 - 312 - 326 - 335 - 338 - 341;
Gooch Elizabeth Valentine 305 - 307 - 314 - 316 - 339
340; Fifth generation of Gooch Elizabeth 338 - 339;
Gooch James 311 - 321 - 330; Gooch Hester 312 - 335 - 338;
Gooch Elizabeth 313; Gooch Joseph Jr. 325; Gooch Mary
326; Gooch Sarah 339; Gooch Capt. John The Hero of
Ft. Washington, see Forth Memoirs; Sixth generation of
Gooch, John 339; Gooch Martha 338; Gooch Joseph
306; Gooch Wm. 304 - 305 - 330; Seventh generation of
Gooch, Gooch James, 321; Samuel 326; Thomas 326;
William 339; Eighth generation of
Gooch Thomas 1/ 326; Gooch Family of Virginia 342;
Gooch Geffrey 341 - 343; Gooch William 344, Goochland
343; Gooch Family in England county of Suffolk 339 to
342; Gooch John the Lawyer 326; John the younger 338;
Gooch Louisa 329; Gooch Richard of London 326; Gooch
Mary E. Wynne 316; Gooch Margaret Hitchcock 338; Gooch
Robert 321; Gooch Wm. the elder 329; William the younger
329; Gooch Sir Wm. The Governor of Virginia and
Barnard 17 - 21 to 1767, 337 - 341, The wife of Rebecca
Vaughan Gooch 316 - 340; Gooch Sir Thomas Westrick Fore-
cast 340 - 341; Gooch Co. of Norwich England 341; Gooch
Ann relative of John 342; Gooch John 342 - 291; Gooch Thomas
342 - 341; Gooch Frances Lane 340; Gorham ancestry 265
270 - 291 302; Gorham's of Barnstable 292; Gorham
first generation of John Sr. 262 - 269 - 291 - 300; Second
generation of Gorham John Capt. 133 - 289 - 295 - 302 to
265 - 289 - 291; Gorham Desire Howland 291 - 292; Third

generation of Gorham James 291 - 292; Gorham John Capt. 263 - 291 to 293; Gorham Jabez 291 - 292; Gorham Shubael 263 - 291; Gorham Desire 291; Gorham Eliz. 291; Gorham Hannah 291; Gorham Lydia 259 - 264 - 291 - 300; Gorham Mary 291; Gorham Temperance 291; Fourth gen. of Gorham Col. John 263 - 292 - 293; Gorham Col. Shubael 263; Fifth generation of Gorham Col. Shubael 292 - 293; Col. John 292; Gorham Major Gen. Joseph 292 - 293; Gorham Widow of John 6th 293; Colonel Sam Shubael 294; Gorham,Maine 294;

Hale George 264; Hale Matthew Mr 279; Hale Capt. Nathan 69; Hall Rev. Dr. 39 - Hall Rebecca 314; Hallo Robert 311; Hamilton, [illegible] 94; Hammersmith England 102; Hammond family 333 - to 341; First generation of Hammond William 333 - 334 - 341; Hammond Seth 333 - 334 - 335 - 341; Second generation of Hammond Joseph 334; Jonathan 334; Hammond, Charles third generation 334; Hampden John 39; Hancock John 301; Handsaiden The Ship 184; Hannays History of Acadia 87; Harcourt Alice De La Vouche 367; Harcourt Cabella 368; Harcourt Wm. Earnham 361 - 367; Harmyn James 333; Harrendeen Roger 90; Harrison Wm. 304; Harvard Heights [illegible] 96 - 97; Harlow Martha Malone 265; Harrington Lord Francis; Harris Henry 374; Harris Mrs. Henry 374; Harris, The Minister 403; Harvard College 94 - 144 - 330; Hawkeliffe 5; Hawtayne Shechiliua, Earl of Huntington 375; Hathorn, Mr. 4-5; Capt. Wm. Hathorn 334 - to 337; Haven family 318 - 355; Haven Sarah 318; Hawes Nathaniel 390;

Hawes Susannah 390, Hawes, Elizabeth 370; Hazeltine Mary 232; Hazeltine Robert 232; Head Mary 153; Hearsey Mrs. Mary 352 - 353; Hempstead, [illegible] England Prefaces; Herie Ann 356; Hewett and Needham Partners, county of Suffolk, England 293; - 294 to 297 - 379 to 384, Hewett families allied to Plymouth Mass. 216 - 291 - 297 - 379 - 380, Hetherington Alex Governor, Capt. 71; Hetherington Ann Miss 71; Hetherington Charlotte Joann 71; [illegible] Hicks Ephraim 140, Higginson Rev. Francis 27 - 34 - 36 - 47; Higginson Rev. John 2 - 22 - 47 - 48 - 52 - 53 - 173; Higginson Memorial 228; Hill General 247 - 250; Hinckley Gov. Thomas 237; Hingham, Mass. History of 168; Hitchcock Charlotte 149 - 151 - 152; Hitchcock Mary C. of New York 141 - 145 - 151 - 152; Hobart Church Record Vol1 153; Hobart Rev. Peter 168; Holgate John 78, Holmes Christopher 115, Holmes Obadiah 311, Holmes Samuel 218 - 279; Holmes Family 273, Holmes Mr. Edgecombville 375 - 376; Holmes Gervais 376 - Holmes Lady 378, Holtzman Reverend 118 - 196 - 316; Holmes & al. Genealogy 53 - 54; Holmes Family of Rev. Obadiah, Generation 1 - 115 - 118 - 136 - 137 - 139 - 202; Holmes Obadiah 115 203 204 205 - 206 - 216 - 217; Holmes Obadiah Jr. second generation 138; Horton 204; Howe 203 - 206; Hubbards 204, Holmes Oliver Trowbridge 316, Hull Anne of Boston England 307; Hull Martha 307; Hull Michael 307 - 308; Hull Thomas 308, Hull Zebediah 67; Hul-

grave John 84; Holgrave Martha 84; Honor Mrs. Alice 225 230 - 237; Hoo or Howe arms of 383 - 386; Family of Hossett England 294 - 295 - 300 to 306; Hoo or Howe [illegible] 233 - 234, Hopkins Gr. 125; Hopkins Tat. Hawkins, 108; Hopkinton, Mass. 75 - 303 - 304 - 314 - [illegible] town, [illegible] 119; [illegible] county of Sussex 1; Horning's Heath Grant England 379; Hoult Anna [illegible] 324; Hoult John [illegible]; Humfrey Ann 83 - 84 - 132 - 134 - 324; Humfrey, Col. John 8 - 80 - 30 - 31 - 88 - 89 134 - 137 - 322 - Humfrey Lady Susan Fynes De Clinton 8 88 - 93 - 94 - 324; Howard family Eng. 386; Hudson family of Lynn Mass. 73 - 80 - 107; Hudson Thomas 73 - 80 - 107; Hudson Rebecca 73 ; Hudson Henry The discoverer 73 - 107; Hudson's River 73; Hull Mass. 169 - 224 - 226 - 229; Hunt Anne widow 281 ; Hunt Dorothy Valentine 311; Hunt Isabella 224; [illegible] Richard 311; Huntingdon Elizabeth countess of 379; Hutchinson family 121 - 122 - 213; Hutchinson Mrs. Anne 101 - 102 - 22 213; Hutchinson Wm. 123 - 124; Hutchinson Capt. Edward 124; John 123 ; Thomas Chief Justice and Colonial Governor 74 - 124 - 178 - 280 - 349 - 358 - 363 - 391 - 392; Hyde Sarah 61; Hyde Wm. 362; Hawkins Ancestry of Rhode Island 140 - 143; First generation of Hawkins Wm. 140 - 189 - 190 - 191 - 194; Hawkins Lydia Hallow 140 - 189, second generation of Hawkins Edward 140; Margaret 190; Sarah 189 - 191; Wm. 190 - 191, third generation of Hawkins Elijah 143; Hawkins Jemima Eaton 143; Hawkins Sarah 140 - 143 - 145 - 191; Stephen 191 - John 191; Wm. 191; Forth generation of

Hawkins Elijah 176 - 177 - 178, Joseph 168; Elizabeth Arnold 168; Ruth 168, Deborah 168; Fifth generation of Hawkins Wm. 182 - Sarah 192; Hubbard family 368 -to 392 Zaccheriah 386; - 389; Mary Webby 386 - 389; Second generation of Hubbard Elizabeth 388 - 389, Mary 391 -392; Charles Webby 388 to 390; Zaccheriah Jr., 388 - 390; Thomas 388 to 390; Mary Tuthill 389; Capt. John 386 - 388; [illegible]; Joseph Green 388 to 392; Fifth generation of Hubbard James 388 - 389; Joseph 388 - 390; Sarah 388 -390; Susannah 388 - 390; Elizabeth 388 - 390; Tuthill 386 - 391; Anna Deane 390; Mary Archinson 390; Elizabeth Pierce 390; Judith Ray 390; Hubbard's narrative 19; Howland ancestry 188 -217c - 264 - 287 - 290 - 300, First generation of Howland Arthur 264 - 287 - 288; Henry 264 - 287 - 288, Geoffrey 287, Anice 287, Penance John 37 - 138 - 189 - 168 - 169 - 176 - 268 - 284 to 288 - 275 288 - 287 - to 289 - 298 - 299 - 341 - 386; Howland Elizabeth Pilver 188 - 189 - 284 - 288 -189 - 188 - to 291; 341; Second generation of Howland Deane 188 - 188 - 264 282 - 291 - 299; John Jr. 288 - 289; Jabez 289 - 290; Isaac 291, Zenas 290; Isaacs 189 - 19 - 290; Pope 290; Lydia 290 ; Ruth 290; Nathaniel 289 - 290; Howland John of Hewsett 341 - 386; Elizabeth 341;

HOWLAND, HOWLY, HOWLEY, ancestry, 213 - 218 - 290 - 325 327 - 328 - 144 - 386; Abby family to England 341 - 344; in London 351 - 352 in New England first generation of HOWLY Wm. 315 - 322 - 330 - 332 - 333 - 318; Ann 327; Second generation of HOWLY, Sir C harles 381 - to 382 -

318 - 330 - 327to 331 - 335 - 344; Hobby John 327 - 328 344 - 33[illegible]; Wm. Jr. 327; Ann 327; Mercy 327; Judith 327; Elizabeth 327 - 344 - 289; third generation of Hobby Mary 327 - 344 - 335 - 344; Ann 327; Elizabeth 327 - 344 - 344 - 345; Charles 327 - 328; Hannah 327 344 - 335; fourth generation of Hobby Edward 327 - 328 Wm. 327 and Wm. eighth generation 326; [illegible]

Congregational Church or Congregational 18 - 24 - 28 [illegible] - 31 - 340to 342 , Ipswich Mass. 3 - 26 - 27 - 55 - 56 - 58 - 61 - 78 to 80 - 81 - 89 - 110 - 234 - 235 - 260 - 327 - 328; Ireland Elizabeth 328; Ireland John 328; Ives of Brown and Ives 306; Ives Hope Brown 306; Ives Wm. Lucy 1.142 - 143 - 145 - 151 - 164 - 326 - 327; Ivory family of Lynn Mass. 74 - 88; Thomas 74 - 88; Ann 74; Deborah 74 - 75; John 74; Lois 74 - 75; Ruth 74; Sarah 74; Thomas Jr. 74;

Jenks, Jenkes, Jenckes, ancestry of 84 - 105 - 116 121 - 128 - 133 - 136 - 137 - 160 - 218 - to 282 - 226 290; First generation of Jenks at Lynn Mass. Jenks 102 to 104 - 218 - 135 - 150 - 210; Second generation of Jenks or Jenckes Elizabeth 105 -128, George 106, Daniel 128; John 106; Joseph of Pawtucket R. I. 73 104 - 105 - to 115 - 129 to 131 - 137 to 150-150-147 - 179 190 - 215 - 217 - 218; Sarah 106; Samuel 106; Esther 107; Jenks Esther Willard 109 - 111 - 112 - 150; Third generation of [illegible] Joseph The Colonial Gov. of R. I. 113; to 115 - 130 - 142 - 150 - 157 - 180 - 190 - 201 - 206

207 - 208 - 227 to 230; Jenks Major Nathaniel 167 to 170 114 - 119 - 127 - 129 - 140 - 150 - 157 - 159 - 210 to 220; Jenks Rev. Ebenezer 113 - 120 - 121 - 130 - 151 159 - 142 - 150 - 157 - 290; Jenks Judge Wm. 113 - 127 128 - 130 - 137 - 139 - 198 - 207 - 209 - 217 to 220, Jenks [illegible] 113 - 150, Alice 116; Elizabeth 116, Sarah 116; Jemmah 116 to 120; Abigail 127; Mary 128; Fourth generation of [illegible] 118 - 146 - 210, Joseph 117, [illegible] 118; Katharine 118; Martha 119 - 142 - 151; Lydia 118; Mary 118; Esther 118 - 139; Jonathan 119 - 120 - 126; 221; Capt. Nathaniel Jr. 4 - 119 - 140 - 141 - 143 - to 148 150 - 159 - 217; Dr. John 117 - 219; Hannah 119 -130; Elizabeth 119 - 120; Sarah 120 - 198; Ebenezer Jr. Capt. 120 - 198; Daniel The Judge 120 - 141 - 150 - 151 - 208 - 209; Phoebe 120; Rufus 120; Martha - 142 - 143 ; Nathael 150 - 198 221; Nathan 149; Mary - 120 - 128; Joseph 120; Mercy 120 - 121, Benjamin 120; Prudence 130; - 131; Noah 130; Josiah 130 - 142 - 143 - 151 - 161 - 164 208; Jemmah 121 - 221; Mary 126; Fifth generation of Jenks Capt. Stephen 128 - 260 - 141 142 to 148 - 151 150 to 157 - 159 - 189 to 192 - 197 to 198; Jonathan 130; Thomas 131 - 29; [illegible] 130; [illegible] 144; [illegible] 144; [illegible] 144; Jemmah Capt. 61 - 62 - 142; [illegible] arine widow of Nathaniel Fourth 141; Bridget widow of [illegible] Jr. 221; Experience widow of Ebenezer Jr. 211; Joanna 209; Lydia Arnold 144; Bridget Wicks 144; [illegible] 144; Hannah Bosworth 140; all the fore-going widows.

Jenks Ichabod 141 - 144 - 144; Jenks Margaret widow 141; sixth generation of Jenks, COLONIAL DIVISION OF THE REVOLUTION 9 - 84 - 141 to 147 - 151- 154 -163 - 169 - 200 - 228, Jenks Eleanor Howe 141 - 151 to 153 - 171 to 164 Jenks Jenks 141 - 150 - 164; Nathaniel 140, Jenks Stephen 142 - 144 to 147; Benjamin Berg Arnold 143; Patience 142, [illegible] generation of Jenks Col. Stephen 141 - 146 - 151 -152 - 154 - 164; Jenks pioneer Jr. 141 - 151 - 228; George 144 - 154 - 159; Sarah 152 - 165; Arnold 154; David 154, Talma 154; Nathan 155; Lydia 156; Alvin 156; Nathaniel 154; Sally or Sarah 141 - 146 - 147 - 151 - 155; Henriette 141 - 149 - 154; [illegible] generation of Jenks Stephen Jr. or the younger 141 - 146 - 156 - 164; Jenks James Prince 146 - 149 - 152; Jenks Sarah 140 ; Rana 149; Mary Virtue 149; Annie T. 150; Prince 150; Sarah 150; Edward 150, Alvin 154; Austin 154, Franklin 154, Alvin T. 154; Hon. Joseph 155, Gov. Harvey 157; Stephen Jenks & Sons, 158; an inventor of lawnmower 161 of Jenks Bros. 161; Jenks history of the baptists 182 - 208.

Jackson Abraham 170; Agnew 371 - 372, Ambrose Angelo 372 - 382; Oliver 373 - 381, Jonathan 382; Lewis 388; Jacobs, Alice Wallace 389 - 390; Joseph John 393; Jones Ann 394; John 394; [illegible] 396, Jenkins Lady Charles Valentine 398; Jamison Wm. Dennison 399; Jones or Jones Capt. [illegible] of the Englewoods - 474; Johnson, the Lady Arbella Young de Clinton 94, Johnson J.P. Jones 96, Johnson Francis - 31 to 36; Johnson John 378; Johnson Isabella Lewis Randolph 178; Jones

Anthony 321; Jones family of Hopkinton, Mass. 320 - 321; Jones Elizabeth 321; Jones Col. John 317 to 332; Jones Mar Mellen 324; Jones Vaughan 307; Jones History of New York Royalists of the Revolution 29; Joslyn Abraham 170; Joslyn Beatrice 170; Joslyn Lyman 9, 71 - 97; Juxon family of London Eng. 321 - 343; Juxon Alban 332; Juxon Bishop of London 333; Kiles 321 - 332; Elizabeth Ireland 331 - 336, Lucy 331 - 332; Thomas 331 - 332 - 343 Joyliffe Ann Cromwell Knight 349; Joyliffe Hannah 345 John 345 - 347;

Kempton [illegible] Susannah 183; Kieft Gov. 89; Killingly Ct. 59 - 66; Kimball ancestry [illegible]; First generation of Kimball Richard 132 - 328 - 329 - 331 - 334; Kimball Hannah Scott 312 - 331 - 334; Kimball second generation of Henry 331 - 332; Richard 325; Mary [illegible]; John 332; [illegible] Martha 331; Thomas 332 - 333; Benjamin 328; Elizabeth 328; Caleb 329; Sarah 331; William 332; Christopher [illegible] 331 & 334; Mary Caroline 332; Wm. Hannah 332; Third generation of [illegible] Kimball A nn 331; Kimball Abigail; 330 - 326 - 328 - 329 - 334 - 335; Caleb 328 Elizabeth 329; Mary 330; Robert 328; Benjamin 329, Ebenezer 329; Ephriam 330, [illegible] 332; Joseph 328; Priscilla 334; Kings Advocate in Admiralty in New England 326 - 327; King's Chapel Records of in Boston 139 - 208 313 to 315 - 312 to 321 - 324 to 327; Kings of England by name of reign and not by Alphabet King Henry first 271 277 - 311; King Edward third 340 - 343; Richard II 343; Henry IV 343; Richard III 132; Henry VIII, 343;

James I 175 - 176; Charles I - 174 - 271 - 272 - 279; Charles II 27 - 170 - 211 - 267 - 280; Wm. & Mary 113; 279; King Geo. II, 117; King Phil.'s War by Hoyt 19 134 - 134 - 168 - 190-277 - 334 - 336 - 367 - King Sarah 336; Kingsbury Kingsbury Capt. 63; Kingston Mass. 246 - 326 - 330 - 381 - 386; Knight ancestry 346; Knight Anna Cromwell 340; Knight Edward 346; Martha 346; Robert 340 - 347; Samuel 345; Knowlton Col. 66 - 67 - 68; Knowlton Rangers 64; Knyvett family 268 - 286; Edmund 286; Sir Edward 286; Elizabeth 192;

Lake family 341 - 363; Lake Thomas Capt. 363; Langley Sir Peter t 311; Langton Nicholas 311; Larned Miss The historian 40 - 46 - 96; Larned Col. 89; Latham Jesse Harvard 77; Lathrop Susanna 98; Laverick John 338; Leach Elijah 325 - 330; Leach Ruth Prince; 326 - 330; Leach John 310; Leake Mary Lewis Countess of Scarsdale 375; Leake Robert Earl of Scarsdale 375; Leffingwell Uriah 48; Thomas 98; Letemate Schoolmaster England History 370; Letton Major of Virginia 66 Lenox Library New York 166 - 186 ; Lewis family of England 375 - 383; Capt. Edward 375 - 376; Elizabeth Countess of Darlington 376; Francis - Lewis 377; Isaac Liberty 375; John 376; Sir John 376 Lord's Lucy 376; Richard 376; Robert 376; Sarah Viole 376; Lexow Holland 21 91 - 172 - 173 - 174 - 185 - 190 to 192 - 197 to 202 276 334 to 336 ; Liberty Boys of New York in Revolution 58; Lincoln Earl and Countess of Elizabeth Clinton 6 - 32 - 93 - 94 - 128 - 268; Lippett family 194;

Little Jonas, The ship 4 - 342 - 398; Lobdell John 169
Lbdell Joseph 346; Locke Thomas 311; London [illegible] ?
19 - [illegible]; Lone Francis 340; Lord Thomas 340; Long-
[illegible] Henry Isaworth Poet 165; Longworth Thomas 311;
Lockwille, N. Y. 144; Loomer Samuel 95; Lord family of
261; Lord Benjamin 365; Lord Mrs. Lynde 365; Lord Richard
21 - 265; William 365; Loring Elizabeth Prince 325;
Lorring Loring 366; Loveland Jeremy 352; Low Countries
10 - 289; Low Miss Louisa 293; Low Margaret 76; Lowanna
77; Thomas 75 - 79; Lucas Ann 69; Ludlow Roger of Mass.
Ct. and Va. 342; Ludlow Gen. of Virginia 343; Lunsomb
Eleanor 3; Lyford Rev. John 4 - 7 - 8 - 14 - 19 - 28 - 31;
Lynde , LYND OF WAYNEFLEET, ancestry of, in England
Holland and New England 82 313 - 319 - 338 - 345 - 361
363 - 366; Lynde or Lind Enoch of London 313 - 323 - 349
to 356 - 357 - 362 to 365; Lynde Mrs. Elizabeth Digby of
London 313 - 349 - 350 - 356; First generation in New Eng.
Lynd, Simon of Boston Mass. 84 - 325 to 326 - 348 to 359
360 - to 369 - 372 - 375 - 322; Lynd Mr. Simon in King
Philip's War Wedge 84 - 357 to 366; Lynde Hannah Newdigate
or Newgate 313 - 349 - 350 43 67 to 360 - 362; Lynde
Matthew of London a brother of Simon, 351 - 366 - 369
363; Lynde - Newdigate Arms of 346 - 349 - 364; Lynde -
Digby Arms of 347 - 348 - 369 to 373; Lynde arms of
348 - 350; Lynde Bible 301 - 314 - 317 - 320 - 322 - 326
345 - 349; Lynde chart of Family 311 - 321 - 348; Lynde
Street Boston 313 -324; Lyndon or Vander Lynden arms of
366; Lynde [illegible] 347 - 348; Lynde Family of [illegible]

Lynn Mass. 72 to 75 88 to 91 - 107 - 139 - 145 - 204;
Lynn History of 105 - 107; Lynn Iron Works 105 - 107
xxv; Lynde second generation of Mass. & Ct. Lynde
Benjamin Chief Justice of Mass. 301 - 324 - 336 - 348
to 350 - 355 to 364 - 375, Lynde Nathaniel Judge of Ct.
348 - 349 - 361 - 365 - 382; Lynde Susanna Willoughby
363 - 364, Lynde Samuel 305 - 313 to 314 - 326 - 361 -
363 to 369 - 370 - 381; Lynde Mary Willard 313 - 314 -
325 - 345 - 348 to 371 - 370; Lynde Elizabeth 350 - 382;
Simon Jr. 361; John 361; Joseph 382; Thomas 406; Sarah
365; Third generation of Lynde Samuel of Ct. 364; Mary
Palmer 364; Elizabeth 365; Hannah 369; Susanna 385;
Sarah 365; Ann 373; Benjamin Jr. Chief Justice of Mass.
348 - 350 - 362 to 364; - 371, William 371 - 373;
Joseph 383; Mary daughter of Samuel of the second gen-
eration 301 - 303 - 305 - 313 - 314 -317 - 326 346 - 345
360 - 361 ; Fourth generation of Lynde, Lynde Ms. 383
Mary 384; Samuel 384; Lydia 384; The Lynde or Lind family
of Charlestown, Mass. a separate family from the foregoing.
Lynde Joseph, who married Sarah Davison of Lynde - Davison
family of Charleston, Mass. 62 - 77 - 78; Lynde Joseph
Lieut. Col. 76 - 77 - 78; Second generation of this family
of Lynde, Lynde Thomas 77 -; Sarah 77; Mary 77;
Hannah 77 - 78; Elizabeth 78; Dorothy Stanton Lynde 78;

Mackemie or Mac Davis 76; Mahieu Marie 466 - 494;
Mahieu Pontus 466 - 494; Main Elizabeth Hopkins 192;
Manchester, Dr. C.P. 137 - 214; Manchester Mrs. Margaret
324;

Mansfield Gen'l. 79; Marblehead Mass. 94; Marbury Anne 121 - 124; Marbury Katharine 121 - 122; Marbury Rev. Francis, Rev. Sr. 2.3. 122; Marlboro Duke of 330 - 336; Marlboro Mass. 52, Martin, Denton 197, Martin John 197 Maroschell 351; Mary & John the Ship 29; Masham Mrs. 336 - 340; Mason Major John of the Narragan 140 - 144 - 84 The Mason, the claim of 140; 144 - 141; Mass Gen'l. John of Pequot War 38 - 39 - 47 - 48 - 55, Mass. Bay Colony 10 - 13 - 20 - 22 - 23 - 30 - 31 - 55 - 106 - 147 - 242 244 - 252 - to 255 - 256 - 260 to 261 - 274, Mass. Fourth Reg. Provision 64; Mayhill the Widow 178; Mayo Dorothy 177, Mayflower the ship 9 - 11 - 12 - 127 - 272 - 278 279 - 283 - 288 - 289 - 296 - 299 - 319; Mac Curdy family 361 - 364; Memorial History of Boston, 335 340 Merica Sarah 104 - A Methodist church 31 Middletown 49 - 251 - 316; Middleboro Mass. 65 - 171 - 335; Miles Block Miles Brewster Mass. 132 to 138; John Miles or Myles Rev. of Swansea, Mass. 82 - 132 - 133 - 135 - 137 - to 139 - 214 - 217 - 334, Miles Mrs. Ann Pelham Humfrey wife of Rev. John Miles 83 - 137 ; Miles Rev. Sam'l. Rector of King's Chapel 139 - 324 - 326 - 328; Miller family No. 1 Sam'l. 114 - 120 -; Esther 114 - 120; John 114, Elizabeth 114, Alice 114, Margaret 114, Miller family No. 2 of the Province Kittanset Plantation; Mrs. M. 146 - 152; Charlotte Mistamoock 172 - 153 - 161; Louisa 152 - 153 - 161; Henry 161; George 166; Miller Miss Em. of Boston 161; Third line of Miller Mss. Miss Dyke - niece of Mr. M. Miller 115 - 142 - 144 - 146 - 148 153 - 161 - 165 -xxx2x to 167 - 262.

Lady Mt. Joy 362; Montague Duchess 44; - 47; Book
The Betrothal 326; Montague Elaine Digby 362; Montague
Sir Edward Lord Chief Justice of England 328; Montague
Ward of Manchester 31 - 268; Moody Lady 89 - 93 - 134;
[illegible] 83; Moosilauke or
Provincetown 9, 1, 114; Morgan ancestry 28 - 87 - 301
304; First generation of Morgan Lieut. James of Groton
Ct. 61 - 64 - 70 - 82 - 83 - 86; Second generation
Morgan Joseph 61 - 64 - 79 - 82 - 83 85; Morgan Dorothy
[illegible] 79 - 82 - 85, [illegible] - [illegible]
82; Morgan James Jr. 82; Morgan Mary Mine 82; John
82; Rachel Lyman 82; third generation of ch children
of Joseph Morgan and Dorothy Parke his wife, Dorothy
-Witter 83; Ann - Peter Denison 61 - 76 - 79 - 83;
Martha - Joseph Perkins of Norwich 83; Hannah - Samuel
Lothrop 83; Joseph Morgan Jr. only son and brother of
the above sisters 83; Morton family of Plymouth 115 - 398
First generation of Morton George 116 - 130 - 171 -180
398; Morton George author of"Mourts relation " 115 - 167
180; second generation of Morton Nathaniel secy. of Plymouth
Colony 114 - 115 - 168 - 169 to 174 - 178 - 378 - 209;
[illegible] 169 to 174, [illegible] 171; Ann [illegible]
172; Hannah 169 - 173; Jemima 173 - 398; Lydia
Cooper 177 - 182; [illegible] 178; [illegible] 179 - Patience
173 - 178; John 171; Ann Cooper 178 - 180; Priscilla
Cooper 172 - 180; Anthony 182; Thomas 181; Waterbie
Lucas Morton 190; Mary 403; Morton of Kerr, Mount
21;

[illegible] - Dayton, Ida Dalton Dechon 346; Dunbon Dorothy 311; Dulbon Ralph 311; Dullins or Dullinge ancestry of 267; Dullins Wm. of the Mayflower 267 to 274 [illegible]; Dalton, Ida 1878 267 to 274 - 290, Dullins Joseph 271 to 27[illegible], Priscilla Dullins 268 - 267 to 274 - 296; Dullins Sarah 273, Wm. Jr. 271 to 274; Dunford Isabella Dandigate 275, Dunford Thomas 283, Dystic or Distic Ct. 83 - 84;

Eahant Mass. 22 - 109; Eantasket Mass. 4 - 8 - 21 24; [illegible] - 28 - 29; [illegible] 59; [illegible] 59; Eaton 59 - 60 - 96; Samuel 59; Sarah 59; Thomas 59; Nash Martha 286 - 276; Samuel 275 - 278; Thomas 276 - 278 Nason Rev. Elias 314; National History of Biography England 343; Nawshawk Mass. 8 - 9 - 18 - 20; Nelson [illegible] 339; New Amsterdam 59; Newdigate or Dandigate ancestry in England 358 - 377 - 379 to 386; Newdigate of Great Merrings Heath Suffolk Co. England 358 to 384; Newdigate Philippe 380 to 386; Newdigate Joanna Nee or Howe 380 to 386; First generation of Newdigate in New England, Newdigate John of Boston called the Elder 273 to 280; Newdigate John the younger of England 277 284 -; Newdigate baby or [illegible] or Airlemma 311, Newdigate Mrs. Frank First wife died 1880 of John of Boston the Elder 281; Newdigate Mrs. Frank[illegible] Lyons second Mrs wife died 1888 - 281; Newdigate Ann or Anne - Died 277 wife 272 - 273 to 285, Newgate Sarah 277, Robert 277 to 280;

William Newdigate 372 to 382; Ann 377 to 380; Edmund 377; Sir John 380; Mrs. Jemima Dwenland 380; The Duties 380; The Lieut Gen'l. 380; Francis Wm. Lieut. Col. 382 Stream Guards 380 - 381; Newdigate of Harwich Suffolk county 380; Newdigate Robert Jr. 380; Catherine 380; all the foregoing of magnanimous English records of the family. Newdigate John the elder son of Philip 1st generation in Boston, Mass. 334 - 343 - 345 - 349 - 350; to 358 - 371 to 374; second generation of Newdigate Sarah 334 - 370 - 371 - 381; Catherine 381 - 391 - 372 to 373, Gabriel Lewis 371 - 372, Susannah Tillinghby 364; Elizabeth 372 - 375; Hannah 378 - 375;; Third generation of Tyndale 371 - 374 - 380 - to 384; Mrs. Susannah 374 to 376, Fourth generation, Tyndale John Lewis 383; New England genealogical register 36 293 294 - 301 - 302 - 345 - 346; New Hampshire Lamps 121; New England History of Boston from 1-9, New England memorial 115 - 172 - 176, New York History of Dyer 74 - 83 - 103 - 104 - 137; New Haven, Ct. 86 - 87; New London, Ct. 4 - 35 - 32 - 33 - 37; -134 - 137 234 - 254; Newman Rev. Antipas 213; Newman Rev. Noah 135; Newman Rev. Ind'l. 131 - 135 - 137; Newman Rev. S. C. 210 - 212 - 213, Newport R. I. 37 - 71 - 115 139 - 193 - 196 - 204 - 207 - 220;; New York First English Mayor of 35, New York Island 91 - 96; Niantic Tribe of Indians 44 - 47 - 49; Nicholas Phenomner 65; Nicholson Col. 330; Nipmuck Tribe of Indians 30; Norfolk Duke of 133 - 291;

North Bridgewater, Mass. 38 - 37; North Providence, R.I. 142 - to 146 - 150 - 156 to 161 - 166 - 280 - 309 Norwich Ct. 37; Nottinghamshire, England 29;

"Old Families of Salisbury and Amesbury" 363; Oldham Company 4 - 7; Oldham Capt. Japhet John 6 - 7 - 19 - 21 32 - 40; Oldham Lucretia 363; Old Planters 5 - 6 - 8; Old South Church 232; Old Town Folks 316; Olney family 194; Olney Jonathon 219; Olney Patience Jenks 219; Onslow Arthur 276 to 279, Onslow Family 276; Onslow Sir Richard 276; Onslow Mrs. Sarah Parke Lewis 276; Ormsby Matthew 109; Osborne John 364; Osgood Maine 207; Wm. 347; Osgood Lucas Penbery 351; Otis the patriot 361; Pabodie ancestry 360 to 369, - 382 - 390; Pabodie Elizabeth Alden 360 to 369 389; Pabodie Wm. 360 to 369 - 383 - 390; Pabodie Leroy 166 - 360 - 390, Paddock Katherine 367, Palfrey Peter 8 - 21- 36; Palmer family 87; Palmer's River 136; Palmer family 134 to 137; Palmer Ann Pumfrey 334; Palmer Lucy 364; Palmer Major 134; Palmer Wm. 134 - 137 - 334; Palmer Ancestors - Avery 135 to 137 - 364, Park or Parke ancestry 33 to 87, Parke first generation, Parke Daniel 81 - 84 - 84 - 87; Richard 254 - 256; Martha 84; Alice Thompson 33 to 87, Second generation Parke Wm. 84, Third Generation Parke 84, Daniel 84, Parke Thomas 81 - 83 - 83 to 87 Parke Dorothy Thompson 83 - 86; Ann - Payson 84; Third Generation of Parke Thomas Jr. 365; Martha 84 - 85; Nathaniel 85; Wm. 85, John 85; Dorothy - Joseph Bolman 85;

Parke Robert 65; Parke Alice 65; The foregoing are those of the name in Roxbury, Mass. Weathersfield, New London County and Preston, Ct. This last named in honor of their home town in England Preston North Northamptonshire. Parker Miss; 347 - 356; Parker Mary Turner 243; Parker Wm. 243; Parkhurst Family 180 - ; Creage 180, John 180 Phoebe 181; Sarah 180; Susanna 180; Parliament of Eng. 39; Partridge Richard 116; Partington Dr. 307 - 316; Partington Mary Crompton 307; Patents Comm'r. of U.S. 139; Patson Dr. 188; Pattaquet, R. I. 61 - 71 - 106 - 111 113 - 120 - 129 - 130 - 144 - 145 - 152 - 154 - 166 to 191 - 196 - 197 - 214 to 216; Peak Sir Wm. Lord Mayor of London 271, Peck Elizabeth 184; John 284; Peckham family 134, Pelham of Newport 30 - 302; Elizabeth 30 - 302; God Gift Arnold 302; Herbert 90 - 91 - 302; Humfrey 134 -; Penelope 90 - 91 - 302; Pelham Street, Newport 30; Pelliet Thomas 71; Penn, Wm 14; Penn. Colonial Penn. Hal; Penn 274; Pennyman Robert 270; Pennsbrook Maine 37; Pepperill Sir Wm. 293; Pequot Indians 9 - 39 - 42 to 44 - 49 - 50 - 57 - 123; Pequot War 38 - 51 - 123; 217; Perrine Matthew 274; Perrier Penn 183; Perwick Wm. 264; Peter or Peters Rev. Hugh Chaplain to the Army in the Civil Wars in England 2 - 29 - 30 - 45 - 93 - 94 - 95 101 - 134 - 135 - 193 - 215 - 217 - 222 - 247, Peters Wm. Elizabeth- Cooke - Rosse 94; Petersen ancestry of Plymouth 291 - 299, Petersen Pepperill 280 - 289 - 292 300; Jonathan 288 - 289 - 292 - 299 - 300; Jonathan Jr. 287;

...ohn 369; Joseph [illegible] - 200; Peterson Lydia Thacher [illegible]; Robert 330; Philip King of Wampanoag Tribe war of 53 - 280 - 196 - 176 - 188 to 190 - 361; Phippany Rebecca 245; Pickering family 74 - 361; Edward 181; Timothy 74; Pickett family 284; John 284; Ruth Brewster [illegible]; Pierson family of Salem 312; [illegible]; Pollington 38 - 39 to 56 - [illegible] - 41; Pomham Tribe Chief 57; Pierce [illegible]; Pierce Elizabeth 350; Pierce E.W. 30 - 305; [illegible]; Pierce Rev. [illegible]; Pine Tree Colony 104 - 110; [illegible]; Pitt Elizabeth Goodwin 361; Pitt Hon. James 361; Pitt Rebecca Jason 332; Pitt Wm. Iron Master London 332 - 374; Plant family 368; Plantagenet Kings of England 132; Planters Plea 10; Plum Island 60; Plymouth Mass. 3 to 7 - 8 - 10 20 23 - to 31 - 37 - 64 - 65 - 82 - 91 - 114 - 118 - 124 - 126 - 1378 - 193 - 215 - 216 - 223 - 237 - 238 - 246 - 247 254 - 255 - 258 - 259 - 262 - 265 - 266 - 66- - 272 - 276 - to 279 - 284 - 296 ; Plymouth Church 19 - 44 - 48; Pond Charles 71 -; Ponton Mary 266; Wm. 266; Poole County of Dorset England 25; Pordage Mrs. Elizabeth Lynde 350 - 359 - 361; Pordage family - 346 - 360; George 360 361; Mrs. Hannah Godewin 361; Portland Maine 32 - 55 Porter John 48; Potter [illegible] 194; Shel 111 - 196 Sachust 111 - 193; Prentice Capt. Thomas 53 ; Presbyterian Covenant 29 ; Prescott Mrs. Ann Lynde 365 ; Gov. John 365 Preston Queen Perthshire Scotland 22 - 24; Preston Conn. 70 to 78 - 87; Pridgwick Mrs. Elizabeth Valentine 311;

Price Andrew 321; Elizabeth 346; Elizabeth Cromwell 346; Mary Ann 321; Richard 343; Roger Consistency 310 321 - 322 - 345, Major William 321; Prince Ancestry 147 - 148 - 150 - 167 - 170 - 241 - 339 - 342 - 354 - 393; Prince John of England 234; Alice 2.4, [illegible], first generation of the Saginaw, Prince John 234 - [illegible] to 330 336, Prince Mrs. Alice [illegible] 331 - 340, [illegible] generation of Prince Joseph 170 - 173 - [illegible] - 231, [illegible] 233 Martha 339; Job 223 - 235 - 237; John 217, Samuel [illegible] - 234 - 237, [illegible]; [illegible] 336; Rebecca Phippen 336, Prince [illegible] - 338 - 337 344; Thomas 232 - 233 - 230 - 240 - 244; Prince Mrs. Ruth Turner 228 - 230 - 242 - 244; Benjamin 245 - 237; Joanna Morton 336; Prince Mrs. [illegible] Turner [illegible] - [illegible], [illegible] generation of Prince James 234 - 240; Mrs. Deborah Robinson 228; Benjamin 228 - 244; Prince Ruth [illegible] - 230 - 240; Thomas 234 - 240; Judith Fox 234; Prince Rev. Thomas 30 40 - 102 - 171 - 334 - 338 - 336 - [illegible] to 341 - 341 - 340; Joseph 230; Rob 228 - 228 - 228 to 230 - 234 - [illegible] - 237; Caleb 229; Abigail Kimball 225 - 226 - 228; Alice 229 Isaac 229 - 244; Elisha 229; Mary 229; David 229; Miles Gould 229; Jacob 229; James 229; Ruth 229; Isaac 170, [illegible] to 233, Fourth generation of Prince Prince Thomas 229 - 234 - 230 - 231 - 299; Mrs. Lydia Delano 226 - 230 - 250 - 301 - 309; Job 226 - 230; Mrs. Elizabeth Tiler 120 ; Finnel 116 - 120, Deborah Tiller 116 - 241; Prince James 230 - 230, Christopher 230 - 230 - 233, Prince Mrs. Mary Foster 236; Ruth 226 230;

Fifth generation of Prince Abigail 281; Thankful 281; Thomas Jr. 280 - 281; Prince James 71 - 91 - 146 - 152 155 - 166 - 233 - 280 - 281, Mrs. Elmira Foster 226 - 281; Fifth Generation of Prince Prince Polly 281 - ; Thomas 281; Lydia 281; Phebee Ann Prince 71 - 72 - 91 - 146 - to 152; 166 - 233 - 281, Prince Frances 146 - 166 - 281, Prince James 146 - 147 - 166 - 281; Sarah Jenks Prince 147 - 152 - 166 - 233 - 281; Mrs. Mary Townsend 228, Prince Sylvia 281; Mrs. Isabella Lent 284; Mrs. Margaret Doncaster 284; Mrs. Phillis Bradley 285; Prince Col. Prud'n 224 - 225; Prince John Tucker 228 - 229; Prince Capt. George 229 ; Prince - Delano Genealogies 226 246; Prince Abial Nelson 245; Second Family of Prince or Prence of Plymouth 170 - 225 - 233; Prospect Park B'klyn, N.Y. 81; Providence R. I. 48 - 63 - 71 - 72 - 181 - 191; Providence Journal 165, Province Town Cape Cod 24 - 178 - 272 - 288 - 294, Putnam's Division Revolution 84, Putnam Gujot Hen'l. Israel 61 - 68 - 80 - 81; Pynchon Family 291;

Quakers 80 - 121 - 122 - 125 - 156 - 184 - 222 - 269 [illegible]; Queen Anne 140 - 227; Queen Mary 117, Queen Mary of Scotland 170, Quincy Colonel John 266; Quo- Warranto Revocation of Charters of N. E. 287;

Raleigh, Sir Walter 3, Ralat Abigail 267 - Ralph Edward 224, Ratcliffe Rev. Supt. 244 - 243, Rattlesden Suffolk County, England 231; Rawson Edwards Secy. of New England 266 - 269, Ray Family of Block Island 260;

Ray Judith 390; Raymond Joshua 369; Raymond Sarah Lyons 369; Rawlins 66 67; Reade Edward 94; Read General 67, Remington Junction 362; Rehoboth, Mass. 131 - 136 - 137 138 - 143 - 152 - 200 - 210 - 213 to 215 Revell Mr. 377; Revolutionary War 20 - 35 - 39 - 141 - 155 - 275 313 - 330 - 336, Rhode Island 416; Richard III King of England 153; Richards Mrs. Cornelia Walter 349 - 350; Mrs. L. 356, Ring family 277 - 303; Cornelius 277 - 303; Thomas Mary 277 - 300, Ripley Elizabeth 311; John 311; Robbins Mrs. 156; Robbins Mrs. Elizabeth Hubbard 390; Deborah 390; Robinson Elijah 361; Deborah 326; Rev. John 180 - 346 - 390 - 391; Robinson L. 318; Robinson Mrs. Sarah Wallace 414; Rogers Elizabeth 48; Rolfe Sir Francis 378 - 379; Rolfe Lady Jane 378 - 379; Roper Helen 348; John 348; Roswell Henry 34; Rowse Anthony 348; Rowbery Miss. 43; Rock Mr. 407 - Randall Ann - 373 - 378, Revere 174; Russell Col. Giles 64 - 69 Rev. John 424; Lord Russell 348 Belle Page 98; Rose Mr. 31; Rugg Col. 33; Rulison Seven Pig. 341; Salem Mass. 5 - 8 - 10 - 20 - 23 - 26 - 28 - 29 - 32 - 35 - 48 - 55 57 - 78 - 81 - 90 - 94 - 98; 139 - 192 to 196 213 - 247; Salisbury ancestor of 152; Salisbury genealogies 348 349 - 372 - 386; Saltern Company 6, Salton Stall Richard 19 - 21; Saltonstall & Wolf Families 367; Sampson family 350; Sandy 197; Sandys Sir Edwin Treas. 179; Sandys Archbishop 344 - 345; Sangus River 75 - 107; Sarum, Engl 1 - 20; Savage genealogical dictionary 4 - 72 - 192 to 201 - 222 to 230 - 111 - 174; Saybrook Ct. 3 - 44 - 52 Saye and Sele Lord Of 8 - 93; Sayles Bellchamber 150; Scott Thomas 126;

Taylor George 5; Taylor Joseph 30; Tettuate Lake, 242 - 243 - 264 - 267; Scotchwood Samuel 309; Scotland 27 - 76 ; Sorooby Manor England 24 - 28 - 30 - 176 - 244 [illegible] - 282; Scott ancestry of Nathaniel Suffolk Co. England Scott Thomas of England 111 - 261 - 266; Scott [illegible] Elizabeth Truett - 231; Henry 228 - 231; Scott Mr. [illegible] Tuttleton 111 - 230 - 231; Scott Dennis - Fidhill 167 - 182 - 221 - 224 - 231; Scott Thomas of Lester 125 - 126 - 146; First generation of Scott in Providence from Bloomfield county of Suffolk England Scott Richard 121 - 122 - 125 - 126 - 196 - 218; Scott Mrs. Catherine Archery 171 - 172 - 180; Second generation of Providence; Jonah Scott, Patten 99 [illegible] - 125; John 122 - 125; Ursula 122 - 126 - 299; Mary 125 ; Hannah 125; Rebecca 125 - Father 136; Sarah 126; Third generation of Scott Major Sylvanus 203; Scott Mrs. Joannah Jenks 121 - 125 - 126 - 224 140 - 142 - 208; Abrhama 143 - 151; Scott family of Hessett England 386; Thomas of Hessett 304; Scott family of Jeanie Scott Dike 138; Scott family of Providence and Bloomfield county of Suffolk England 138; Scott family of [illegible] Co. 230; John Forrester of Holland 180; Scott Mrs. Maria Ewan [illegible] Ewan; [illegible] Richard 202 - 230 - 232, Mrs. Martha Tuttleton Scott 232 - 236; Third generation Seven Thorne 233; Thos. Scott, Miles 236; Deborah 236; Alice-Smith Lydia 236; Deborah Williams 239; Dr. Moses 240; Rev. Edward 280 ; Rev. Dr. Barnabas Prest. of Brown Univ. 282 - 286;

Sedgwick Deacon; 353, Sedgwick family 352; Sedgwick Robert The general 353, Sedgwick Wm. 353; Sewall Sam'l. 302 - 307; Sewall Stephen 319 - 337 - 361 - 355; Sewall Jr. 336; Shackelford Gov. Frances Prince 146; Shaw ancestry 162 - 163; Ann 199; Rev. Benediel 199; John 199 200; Rev. John 199; Hon. Samuel 199; Rev. Oliver 199; Oliver 199; Pel Willis 199; Robert Gould Shaw the 2 ol. 200; Shaw Vilence 9 - 141 - 149 - 147 - 1448 - 150 - 200; Shaw Wm. S. 200; Sheafe Edmund 341 to 343; Sheafe Jacob 338 - 342; Sheldable 343; Sherman ; Sherman family 343; Rev. John 343; Sheppard Col. Wm. 61 - Sherborne Castle of 301; Shirley Gov. 337; Short Jr. 39; Shrimpton Col. 374; Shurtleff Noah 9; Sibley Mary 365; John 57; Samuel 57; Wm. 57; Simmons ancestry 197; Simmons or Symmons first generation Moses 317 - 321 - 327; Second generation of Simmons Moses - 327 - 328 - 300; Thomas 317; Sarah 327; Third generation Simmons Aaron 357 ; Moses 357 ; John 357 - 366 - 389 - 300; Mary 357 ; Elizabeth 357; Sarah 357; Mercy Peabodie 366; Sarah generation Simmons Wm. 350 ; Isaac 364; Martha Delano 367 - 346 - 399; Experience Picknett 366; Simpson Savile 320 - 341 - 369; Simson Joseph 154; Skelton Rev. Mr. 33 - 34 Sleigh John 311; Sleigh Margaret 311; Smith Mr. Chief 37; Simmons 199 Elizabeth 199, Hannah 398; Smith John the Lamon 199 - 194; Smith 113; Solomon 69; Thomas 113; Wm. 69; Smith Viola M. I. 153 - 156; Snybert the artist, 302 - 343; Sparhawk Col. 99; Sparhawk Rev. John 302 - 303, Spencer family 364;

Spooner Col. 49; Spottis Wood Gov. of Virginia 340; Sprague Jonathan 127 - 217; Whitable Walbrook 157; Patience 127, Southworth Alice 115 - 171 - 464 - 468; Somerset 340; Spurrel 171 - 177 - 184; Squire or Squib George 269 - 270 - 283 - 296 - 324 - 300; Mary Bucket Squib 288 - 290, Stafford Somerby 197 - 198, Amy 134 - 137, Mary Starlingame 134 - 144; Mary 132 - 135; Standish Alexander 169; Miles 269 - 287 - 371, Stanton family of Nonsett England 356; Stanton family of Ct. 87; Dorothy 77 - 78; Thomas Jr. 66 - 67; John 86 - 87 Robert of England 340; [illegible] - [illegible] 340, Staunton of Virginia 342, Thomas Capt. England 111, [illegible] Mary [illegible] Family England 84, [illegible] [illegible] Jerusa 1 150, Stevens Gov. Joseph 97; [illegible] [illegible] Prince 111; Theophilus 241; St. Germains treaty of 37; Stiles Rev. 180 287; Stang St. Ledger John 363, St. John Oliver Chief Justice 120; Stockbridge, Ancestry of Stockbridge De Vanderveluff 336 Arms of 372; Katharine 360; Theodora de Veukirk 356; Stonington, Ct. 85 87 - 194; Stonington [illegible] 87; Stone Cornelia 114; St. Olav Parish London 381 - 382; Stow Harriet Beecher 210; Stowers John 108; Mary 181; Strafford countess of 154 - 378; Strutt Christopher 238; Strickland 121; Stuyvesant Peter the governor 89; Sudbury River 74 ; Suffolk county [illegible] [illegible] 141; [illegible] Agnes 111; Sutton Sect. History 27 - 66 - 97 to 99; Swampscott, Mass. 86 - 89 - 94; Swanland, Joanna, 300; Swanland, Wm. De; 300; [illegible], [illegible] 114 - 187, 151 - 153, 155, 159, 167, 186, 214, 279, 280; [illegible], Peter, 132, Sylvester Israel 242

[illegible] Mrs. Martha-Peach Page - 318, daughter of Edmund Peach, step-grandson of Rev. Hugh Peter and sister of Mrs. Margaret Lake and Mrs. John Winthrop Jr.; Symonds Samuel Lieut. Gov. of Mass. 333 - 336; This family of Symonds [illegible] family, heirs of no kin to the Plymouth family of PlymouthTHEY!

Pafft 118, Paft Samuel 119; Page of Mass 172; Pengie family of Boston 301; Pengie Elizabeth Perkins Bowdoin 302; Pengie Sir Thomas M.; Thacher ancestry of Yarmouth and Barnstable 134 generation; Thatcher Antony 130 - 131 to 133 - 134 - 137; Thatcherts are Ten Inland 201, Second generation of Thatcher Rev. Thomas, Pastor old South church 175 - 237 - 260 - 261 - 287 - 332; Thatcher widow of Jacob Sheafe, wife of foregoing 330; Thatcher John of W Yarmouth the ancestor 253 - 301 - 366 391 - 399; Thatcher Peter 217 - 264 - 287; Thatcher Ralph 287; Thatcher Dorothy - Sears 282 - 286; Thatcher Rebecca Third [illegible] Second generation Thatcher Lydia - Peterson 280 - 289; ancestral line Thatcher history of Plymouth colony 173 - 274 - 277; Thomas ann of Norman 198; Thomas General John of Revolution 69; Thompson ancestry; Thompson John of Preston Co. on North Hampton shire England gent. 36 - 37; first generation in American Thompson Alice [illegible] of foregoing 33 - 36 - 37; Second generation Thompson Anthony of [illegible]; John 286; William 286; Mary-Elizabeth 286; Bridget-Denison 286; Dorothy -Pack 286;

Third generation Thompson Bridget of New Haven 78; Hannah 56; Simon 56 - 102; Edmund 102; Thompson Ct. 56 - 59 61 - 66 - 72 - 73 - 76 - 81 - 98 - 314 - 319; Throgmortons Neck Lon York 134; Thurlow John Secy. 60; Tibbetts Walter 2 - 3 -; Tiffin or Tilley ancestry of Tassett Count's of Suffolk England and Plymouth Mass. 365 - 366 371 - 373 - 391 - 395; The first generation in Taunton Tilley Edward 111 - 173 - 296 - 367; John 39 - 40 - 288 365 - 373 - 385 - 396; - 399; Second generation of Tilley Elizabeth [illegible] 288 - 294 - 391 - 394 - 396 - 399 398; Tilley John of Taunton, wrote A Tragedy Indians 1637 399; Tillinghast Lew. Portsd 309; Tillinghast Pope 307. Tilton Church of Holy Cross, in England 308 to 309; Tingle Lois 145; Tolderbury Rev. Dr. of England 224 - 236; [illegible] 144 - 145; Tower Count 281 Towers Julia Dorman 53 - 71; Townsend Amelia 97; Townsend Family of Lynn and Sea Cliff 144 to 147; Townsend Family of Yarmouth England 279 - 294 - 297; Townsend Family of Long Island 279; Townsend Mary 280; Townsend Chas. Henry author of Townsend genealogy of Lynn and Sea Cliff [illegible] 279 - 14 147; Treat Rev. Samuel 73; Treadwell Wm. 103; Trerice Mrs. Dorothy Stanton Lynde 77; Hannah Lynde 77; Nat Capt. John 77 - 78; [illegible] 178; Capt. Nicholas 77; [illegible] 77; Trill Solomon 5; Tucker Richard 33; Turner and entry 335 - 339 - 345 first [illegible] in Plymouth colony Turner Geoffrey 139 - 141 343; Turner Jonathan Turner John the elder 335 - 342 - 343 343 - 344; Mrs. Mary Brewster 143 - 144; Turner John the

younger 239 - 243; Thomas 243; Daniel 243; Nathaniel 243; Joseph 243; Lydia 243; Third generation of Turner Joseph 244; Ezekiel 244, John 244; Elisha 244; Benjamin 244; Jonathan 244; Anna 244; Lydia 244; Turner Ruth-Prince 235 - 242 - 244 - 289; Grace 244, Mary 235 244; David 244; Miriam 244; Isaac 244; Ann 244, Sarah 244, Jethel 244; Israel 244; Jacob 244; Philip 244; Turpin family 219; Katharine 116; Mrs. Katharine Jones 116; William 116; Tus-pa-quin or the Black Pocham 66 - 77; Tuthill family of Boston 388; John 389; Mrs. Mary Holyoke 388; Mary 388; Sarah 387 - 389; Lieut. Zaccariah 388; Hubbard 388 - 389; Tuthill Capt. John 47 - 48 - 49 215, University of Brown Providence, R. I. 181 - 301 - 306 307; Valentine ancestry in England from records at Eccles county of Lancaster 308 to 310; Valentine John of Bencliffe Hall 311 - 312, Elizabeth Bixley 311; Richard 311 312, Margaret 311; Dorothy 311, Margaret Christophe 311; Elizabeth 311; Thomas 311 - 317; Frances 312 ; Valentine family of Bungay Beccles county of Suffolk England 313 - 341; Benjamin 313 - 373; Valentine of county of Lancaster England 312 - 373; Valentine Rev. Thomas of Civil War 312; Valentine Dorothy Nathan 311; Valentine Ann Hopwood 310; Valentine Rev. Thomas of Brown England brother of John of New England 309 - 309 - 312 - 336; Valentine Rev. Thomas of Parish of Frankfort Ireland and owner of Bencliffe Hall Eccles, county of Lancaster Eng. which he left to Samuel Valentine of will of New England 301 - 303 - to 310 - 368; Valentine Frances 305 - 306;

Richard 310 - 311 - 312; Thomas 310 - 311 - 312; Valentine ancestry in New England of Boston 79 - 300 to 312 315 - 320 - 364 - 391 - 401; Valentine John record of 1675 - 301 - 305 - 306 - 313 - 314 - 326; second generation of Valentine John the notary and King's or Queen's advocate general of the court of admiralty for New England 301 - 307 - 312 to 314 - 319 - 323 to 326 - 346 360 - 362 to 364; Valentine Mrs. Mary Lynde 301 - 314 to 317; Third generation of Valentine Thomas 64 - 75 301 to 317 - 321 - 322 - 335 - 336 - 391 ; Valentine Mrs. Elizabeth Lynde 71 - 75 - 301 to 314 - 335 - 338 391; Valentine Samuel 306 - 307 - Mrs Lynde- 336; fourth generation Boston, Neal River Tennessee pass. Valentine Thomas 317; James 317; Mrs. Elizabeth Bowers 314 to 320; John 314 to 320; Joseph 317 to 321; Walter 317 to 321; Samuel 317 to 322; Mary 317 - 321; Hannah 317 - 321; William 317 - 321; Mrs. Rebecca Ingraham 314; Edward 314; Fifth generation of Valentine Joseph 317 - 321; Thomas 314; Unknown 317; James 317; Mrs. Elizabeth Jones 321; Mrs. Phoebe Thomas 321, Mrs. Mary Ann Price 321 - 323, Mrs. Jane Clark 323; Mrs. Mary Claflin 323; Mrs. Child 301; Sixth generation Valentine, Lawson Price 321 - 323, A. P. 323; W. T. 314 - 322 - 323; Ann Maria 322; Seventh and eighth generations W.P. 314 to 323; John Tyng 322; Valentine Mrs. Frances Irving 323 ; Valentine Lawson 323; Valentine Thomas Boston 301 -306 313, Joseph 317; Valentine family of L.I. and New York State 323; Valentine family of Westchester county 323;

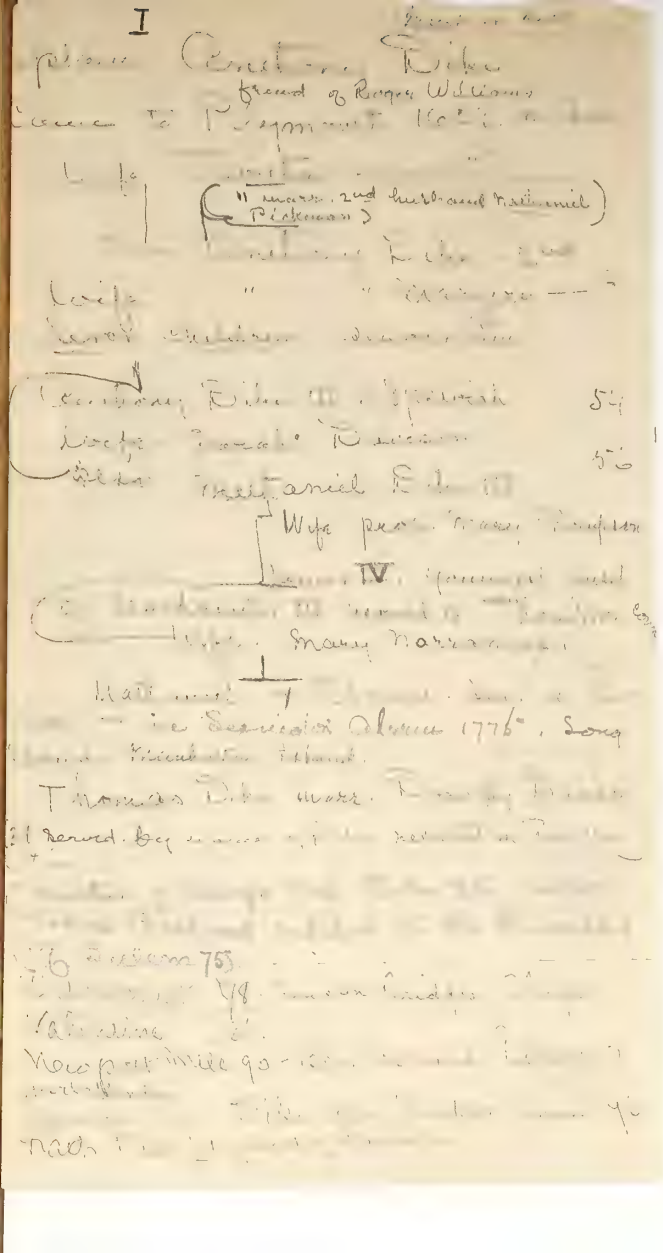
Vanderlinden 353 - 354; Vandervelde P.A. 353; Vandervelde Mrs. Bidget Tillie 355; Vane Gov. Henry of Vane. Fay 32 - 30 - 42 - 49 -96 - 217 - 247 - 276; Vanepement Philip Lateral count of 286; Van Epmont Marie 286; VanVelthen Timothy 352 - 353; Vaughan Wm. 191; Velingin Claes 351; Velingin Jean 351; Veren Hilliard 25 - 26; Vern Vernon Rev. Mary Conant 25 - 26; Vernon Admiral 340 ; Vickers Geo. Elizabeth Cromwell - Price 34, Vicars or Vicary Isaac 346; Vigor Abigail 307; Allen 307 -3 08 ; Vorsh 307, Vine Mary 32; Virginia Colony of 10 - 21 - 40 - 53 - 80 - 93 - 106 - 175 - 176 - 245 - 276; 282 292; Wadsworth Brigham 60 - 66 - 69 - 78; Wait Deborah Hawkins 183; Waite 102; Wake family 307; Waldron Thomas 90 - ; Walker John 183; Stephen 31; Wallen Amie 231, Wallson Church at Leyden Holland 65, Walter family 313 - 331, Lydia Upsal 304; Rev. Wm. 304, Wanton Elizabeth 139; Ward Rev. Nathaniel 95; Warwick R.I. 7 - 111 - 135 to 194 - 216; Washburn's History of the Judiciary of Mass. 301 - 317 - 303; Washington General George 70; Watson genealogical Clearings in England 270 - 271 - 272 - 279 -340 - 348 - 351 to 373 - 375 -3 78; Watertown Mass. 21 - 144 - 355; Weare Lt. 334 Rev. Nathan 304 ; Webb 188; Webb Samuel 31; Webster Daniel 302, Welch Colony of Rev. Richard Winsor 28 - 65; Weide Rev. Thomas 247; Wendell family 191, Wequash 49 to 51; Wesley family of Methodists 11, Wescott ancestry of R.I. 197 to 198; first generation of Wescott Stukely of Salem and Providence 197 - to 197 - 201 - 216;

Second generation of Wescott Amos 197; Katharine 197; Amaris-Arnold 196; Mercy 196 - 197, Robert 197; ; Westminster Assembly of Divines 39 - 41 - 147 to 149; [illegible] 39 - 43 - 45; Weston Rev. Francis Irving of Boston Lighters 118 - 119 - 325, Samuel Martin 325, Thomas 3 - 181; Wetherell Jan [illegible]; Bruce Brewster 194; Paul 284, Whallock Martha 325; Wheaton Christopher 325; Hon. Henry L.L.D. 75 Thomas 169; Martha Prince 325; Wheeler Isaac 95, Wheeler James genealogist 37 ; Wheeler Mary Junior 321, Philip 321; Whipple family of R.I. 194; Charles 333; John 115; Mary Harris 147; Sarah 115; Thomas 177, Wife Edmund 272, Edward 174, Rev. John 4 - 5 - 6 - 10 - 12 - 91 - 93 Newsive 288; William 272, Whiting Rev. [illegible] 116; Whittier The Poet 194 - 197; Widow Society of Mass. England 14 Wiggin Jean Mitchell 206; Wiley Charlotte-Alice 154, Wilkins Doctor 275; Willard Rev. Joseph 365; Mrs. Susannah Lyon 274; Gen. Josiah 120; Pvt. Josiah 249; Willett Thomas 135 -138; Williams family, first generation in Roxbury Mass. Williams Robert 84 - 85 - 183; Williams Nilsworth 84 - 85 - 183, Samuel genealogies of Williams Capt. Isaac 84 - 85 - 183; Samuel 84; Abigail 86; Roger 83 - 46 - 49 - 51 - 52 - 94 - 135 - 193 - 201 - 205 - 214 - 249 - 344; Williams family of Newark Eng. 273 - 300, Richard 37, Williams Walworth genealogies 84 - 137; Dr. George T. C. 84 - 137; Mrs. Jessie Dike 84 - 85 - 116 - 137 - 214, Woodbridge 314 - 316, Williamson 303, Willoughby Ann 154, Family of 284 - 300, Deputy Governor Francis 364, Susannah-Lynde 364 - 365;

Wilson Rev. John 373 - 374; Winsor John 93 - 245; Windham County Ct. History 60 - 96 to 63 - 96; Winsor Samuel 230; Wood Deanna 230; Winthrop family of New England 313 - 377 - 381; Papers in Mass. Historical collection 49 - 84 - 379; Gov. John Hist. of N.H. 84 - 240; Gov. John of Mass. 19 - 26 - 41 - 48 - 49 - 83 - 77 - 93 - [illegible] - 134 - [illegible]; Second generation Winthrop John Gov. of Ct. 22 - 77 - 82 - 95 - 105 - 108 - 134 - [illegible]; Third generation Winthrop Gov. Fitzjohn 75 to 80; Mrs. Elizabeth Tongo 75 to 80; Judge Wattstill 303; Thomas Lindall 362; Hon. Robert C. 361 - 363; Winslow Edward 177 - 381 - 383 [illegible]; Josiah 361 - 362; [illegible]; Rebecca 261; Wiswell Thomas 3; Witt Mary 67; Witter Mrs. Dorothy Davidon 83; Wolcott family 365; Woods Cochman [illegible]; Woodstown [illegible]; Woodbury [illegible]; Worthington [illegible]; Wright Priscilla 182; William 187 - 369;

Yale College 261; Young Rev. Alexander D.D. Hist; 9 - 26 - 32 - 178; Young Sir John 44;

The system of this index is that followed by Savage in his genealogical dictionary of New England and of Davis in his Landmark's of Plymouth, and gives opportunity, not only to mention the names, but occasionally to add something without interfering with the style of the two cited, given.



Howland. p. 138.

146.

146. Sarah. marr.

Prince

Prince family 146.

Index different in brief 149. 150 – 160.

"Spiritual Falls" Named by Sheldon Jackson – 155.

Question — Co[nversation] about Joseph [illegible]

[illegible] 21K [illegible]

[illegible] 2nd [illegible]

Question [illegible]

Moses Dimmons[illegible]

Skeen

[illegible] Brother [illegible]

[illegible] Sister [illegible]

[illegible] Parents [illegible]

[illegible] "Jerusalem 1021

[illegible] 298

[illegible] 299

[illegible] 8

BOSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY
3 9999 08558 298 7